

THE  
RATIONAL  
MALE

---

RELIGION

---

ROLLO TOMASSI

# THE RATIONAL MALE

---

VOLUME IV - RELIGION

# ROLLO TOMASSI

The Rational Male • Volume IV – Religion  
First edition copyright © 2020 by Rollo Tomassi.

ISBN: 979-8587102644

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system or transmitted in any form or any means, digital, mechanical, photocopying, recording or otherwise or conveyed via the internet or website without prior permission from the publisher and author.

Thank you for purchasing an authorized edition of this book. You are supporting authors, creativity and free speech when you support copyrights.

The Rational Male® is a registered trademark.  
[therationalmale.com](http://therationalmale.com)

Published by Counterflow Media® LLC, Reno, Nevada Design and layout by Rollo Tomassi.

*Dedicated to Dalrock*

*June 2010 - January 2020*



# CONTENTS

Foreword

Introduction

Book I

Rise of a New Order

The Old Order

The New Enlightenment

Analog Thinking vs. Digital Thinking

Barriers to Entry

Content is King

The Red Pill

Believers

Believers & Empiricists

Objectivity vs. Ideology

Heirs of a Blank Slate

The Human System

Moralism for Rationalists

Rise Above

But We're Better Than That, Right?

Old Order Machines

Hypergamy

Gynocentrism

The Lie of Equality

Individual Exceptionalism

The Inequality of Equality

Crisis Masculinity

Female Independence

Big Head Babies

Women Like Men

Men Like Women

The Lost Boys

Man Up in the Hustle Economy  
Neopatriarchs and the Utility of 'Real Men'

### The Romantic Ideal

A Religion Called Chivalry  
Classic Chivalry  
Courtly Love  
Chivalry Game  
Feminism 1.0  
Hail to the V

### The Kosher Principle

The Gospel of Stryper  
The Romantic Ideal vs. Christian Kosher  
The Bad Business of Good Women  
Religion in the Hustle Economy  
But where *were* the men?  
The God Gift

### Book II

#### Gods Like Men

The Evolution of Belief  
Men Like Gods

#### The Goddess Movement

Chick Crack  
Feminine Mythology  
Awakening the Goddesses  
Modern Witchcraft  
The Sisterhood Über Alles  
Goddesses Like Women  
Assimilation

#### Marriage

Marriage sells, but who's buying?  
Covenant vs. Contractual Marriage  
Off the Books Marriage  
Imperfect Men Vet Imperfect Women for Imperfect Marriages  
Covenant Marriage vs. The Romantic Ideal Marriage  
Modern Choices for Religious Men



[Strong Independent Women](#)  
[Respect My Authority](#)  
[Responsibility vs. Authority](#)  
[Complementarity vs. Equal Partnerships](#)  
[Threat Point](#)  
[New Order Marriage](#)

## [Sex](#)

[Dueling Mating Strategies](#)  
[You're All Obsessed!](#)  
[Monogamy is Beta](#)  
[Validational vs. Transactional Sex](#)  
[Validational Sex](#)  
[Transactional Sex](#)  
[Unnegotiated Desire](#)  
[Intra-sexual Combat](#)  
[Pornographiti](#)  
[Sex Sells What?](#)  
[Alpha Widows and Premarital Sex](#)

## [Love is God](#)

[Love is God](#)  
[Love is Sacrifice](#)  
[Love Stories](#)  
[Sacrifice and Service](#)  
[Gender Differences](#)  
[Rationalism vs. The Rational Process](#)

## [A One-World Religion](#)

[Happy wife, Happy God](#)  
[Who Cares About Religion Anyway?](#)  
[The Gospel of Saint Peterson](#)  
[A Want to Believe](#)  
[The Sisterhood of Suffering](#)  
[Where do we go from here?](#)

## [Afterword](#)

## [Resources](#)

## [Acknowledgments](#)

## [About the Author](#)

Also by Rollo Tomassi



## FOREWORD

**I**t's no secret that I've been a regular follower of *Christian-Manosphere* blogger *Dalrock's* work for over ten years now.

Along with *Dal* I also consider bloggers like *Donalgraeme* and a few others in what used to be called the '*Christo-Manosphere*' as *Red Pill* colleagues, if not virtual friends. I've always held *Dalrock* as a sort of *Red Pill* brother since both our blogs came up around the same time. I've quoted and credited him in all three of my prior books.

I did so because there was a time I considered pursuing a path in my writing that would follow the same *Red Pill* critique of religion, (Christianity for *Dal*) at least occasionally. After reading *Dalrock's* early posts I decided against it. *Dal* has earned the respect of the *Manosphere* for his *Red Pill* lens on contemporary Christianity for good reason – he was a consummate statistician and researcher. The bonus was he's what I'd call "embedded" within modern (mostly Evangelical) church culture. He was thorough in a way I couldn't hope to do justice to in that part of the *Manosphere*.

On my own blog I never go into detail about my own faith for a couple of reasons. First is, it's only peripherally relevant in my writing. Secondly, it's always been my position that the *Red Pill* needed to remain fundamentally areligious and apolitical. That said, I am familiar enough with '*Churchian*' culture and the social side of mainstream religion to understand it through my own *Red Pill* lens. When I analyze *Red Pill* principles within social contexts I always have a hard time with religion. It grates on me because I'm of the opinion that one's religious beliefs, one's interaction with existence and life, one's consideration of the spiritual, ought to be something personal and private if it's in anyway sincere. For some, it can be a source of vulnerability and exploitation which is nothing new to anyone. It's one thing to be agnostic and trapped in a Blue Pill world, but it's quite another to have been raised to adulthood in a religious context then coming to terms with having deep ego-investments shattered by a new *Red Pill* awareness.

**Creating Religion in the Image of the Feminine Imperative**

For the past five generations, there's been a concerted re-engineering of religion to better suit the ends of a Feminine Imperative. This is not just about the plummeting membership statistics of Christian denominations. Rather, this assimilation of religion applies to *all* religions in various stages. Today, men are sold the romantic feminine-correct idealism of an old social contract while living in a social context that confounds that very idealism. To effect this, religion must be coopted by the feminine. The *old books* religions are replaced wholesale by a feminine-interpreted, feminine-directed religion – that places women's imperatives as its highest authority – or they're restructured and rewritten to serve the same feminine-primary objectives. For over ten years *Dalrock* masterfully documented, and rightly criticized, these shifts in Christianity. Although I'll be focusing on western Christianity, this re-engineering of modern religion is not limited in any way to *Abrahamic* faiths. A *Red Pill* perspective reveals many uncomfortable truths about religion. One of these is how well a **Gynocentric** social order has succeeded in supplanting masculine influence in religion with feminine *correctness*.

I expect there will be female critics who'll parrot that in most of church culture it's still '*predominantly men*' who control churches and religious organizations, but in the era of feminine social primacy, it's not who executes the control, but whose beliefs control the executors. Pair this with the commercial commodification of religion and we can see the spheres of feminine influence and feminine-primary purpose. After decades of following the religious aspects of the *Red Pill*, I think it's time men acknowledge that modern religious cultures simply do not have men's best interests as part of its doctrines anymore. Even the religions we perceive as rigidly patriarchal are subject to this *New Order* of deference to the feminine. Christianity, in particular, is by women, for women – if not directly executed by women – though even that is changing. Church culture is now openly hostile towards any expression of conventional masculinity that doesn't directly benefit women and actively conditions men to be serviceable, effeminate, gender-loathing Beta males. Men who, generationally, have no concept of conventional masculinity. The feminist narrative of "*toxic masculinity*" has entirely replaced any semblance of what traditional masculinity or manhood once was to the church. Any hint

of a masculinity not entirely beholden to a now feminine-primary purpose is not only feared but shamed with feminine-defined aspersions of faith.

Our current generation is the least religious in history. In one of the largest studies ever conducted on shifts in American religious involvement, researchers at *San Diego State University (2015)* found that *Millennials* are the least religious generation in the last six decades. This study showed that this lower religious involvement is due to cultural change, not to millennials being young and unsettled. As far as men are concerned, much of that disdain for religion is attributable to a church culture that persistently and openly ridicules and debases any male-specific endeavors. It ridicules any characteristic of conventional masculinity not useful to female utility, and withholds *Manhood* from a generation of men preconditioned to loathe their own gender. It's no secret in today's church *franchises* that reaching out to and retaining the interests of men is at its most difficult. This is attributable to generations of feminized men being raised into religious cultures, and eventual church leadership, that has been taught to prioritize and identify with the feminine and reinforced with new articles of faith redefined by the Feminine Imperative. The modern church has trouble reaching men because the church no longer has a grasp of what it means to be '*men*'.

To be clear, this is not an indictment of sincere faith itself, but rather, it's a measured observation of the way feminine-primary religious cultures have shaped these faiths. In the future, any man with a marginal capacity for critical thought will avoid the *old order* church and other more orthodox religions for the obvious misandry they espouse. The only religious men to be found will be those raised into a life of religiously motivated male servitude – or those dragged to the feminine-influenced church by wives and mothers who hold authoritative 'headship' in their relationships, while their husbands endlessly seek more ways to qualify for their wives approval to received *God's* approval.

Even in what some consider to be pro-masculine, or re-masculinized "macho" churches, we still find the *Paper Alpha* leaders who preach from a mindset that defers wholesale to the feminine. "Godly perfection" is the status symbol they jockey for with other male members, each prompted to greater displays of devotion in qualifying for, and identifying with, the feminine influence that pervades their churches. Religious men became synonymous with a Beta male, Blue Pill mindset. They measure *Manhood*

by degrees of responsibility a man assumes while never realizing (or simply ignoring) that a cultural shift has gelded them though a lack of any real authority over wives, families and churches. It's gotten to a point where it's become better to look after your self-interests and repent of the sin later than commit to any institution that openly seeks to indenture men. I realize that might seem cynical to the more religiously convicted man, but understand that this is the pragmatic, deductive future that the contemporary, western-feminized religions are now lamely presenting to men. The social contract of marriage from a religious perspective has shifted into the ultimate leap of faith for men. They literally risk **everything** in marriage – child custody, sexual access, any expectation of true, male authority or genuine respect, long-term financial prospects, etc. – but this leap of faith now comes with a metaphysical price tag. Men declining to participate in faith-based marriage decline an aspect of their faith that's been reset to serve women; women who are held as a higher order of sinless *being* than men by this new religion of *Emotionalism*.

For the agnostic or areligious man, discarding a lifelong Blue Pill social conditioning for *Red Pill* awareness of intersexual dynamics is a difficult task. However, for men raised to believe that their only doctrinally approved path to sex with a woman is abstinence until marriage, that man's only hope is to accept his *God*-ordained fate and stay the Beta male a feminized religion has conditioned him to be. Resisting the *worldly* influence of a data-driven *Red Pill* awareness, and clinging to both Blue Pill and religious conviction, becomes a test of faith rather than an objective assessment for him. The real-world risks that modern marriage presents to men today are dispelled by religious idealism. Marriage becomes a literal *leap of faith*.

Once he gets to marriage, and his approved expression of sexuality, the religious man finds that the feminized church, even the male elders, expect endless qualifications and deference to his wife's unceasing appeasement in exchange for that approved sex. It's a tail-chasing that holds men to the *old order* expectations while absolving women of accountability and expecting him to also make concessions for a new (feminized) social order that's saturated church cultures. Christian marriage divorce rates are only a few paltry percentage points lower than the secular world. Male religious leaders blame men for not leading, not being '*holy*' enough, not ***bold n' biblical*** enough, not going to bed exhausted every night, not getting up early enough

and a pile of other excuses for why she “*had no choice*” but to end the marriage. In response we see a whole cottage industry of ‘**Christian counseling**’ and self-help books developed, usually written for and by women. We see the rise of *Women’s Ministry* grifts in the new Hustle Economy. We have conferences, TV channels, broadcast networks, podcasts, radio stations, outreach groups, a glut of *McChurches* in this country...and the Internet. We have scads of resources, and books: every pastor great and small today is “working on” or has written a book.

How on earth did early churches survive under the penalty of death, persecution, seclusion, and outright shunning? How did it grow? How did it survive? We’re told over and over by pastors that “God has an amazing plan for your life!” and then sell men in the world this ‘*churchian*’ ploy that you are somehow not as holy, balanced, ready, equipped, or mature to handle this amazing plan. Ah! But your *Godly* wife, or wife to be is! The unspoken consolation prize is, “*But hey, you get to have sex...and that’s the only thing men need or think about or want.*” And that transactional reward of sex seems to be *given* only begrudgingly, bereft of genuine desire. In men’s groups, the married guys complain that their wives never want sex — or they commiserate about their addictions to pornography. How did the early church turn the world upside down? All God did was send a few men, and they made it happen. We have so many tools today, yet we’re portrayed as ridiculous and “*helpless*”. Perhaps a new “building program” will help everything and if we **allow** men to fix things on the property they will feel “useful”. For five generations now, the modern church has become an experiment in farming Beta men. It now exists only to produce the same masculinity-confused men that the secular world has perfected. In our idealism too many men believe that faith, religion, and the church are some metaphysical insulation against the worst of the Feminine Imperative when they are in fact the institutions that produces the men the *Red Pill* hopes to free from the *Matrix*.

Despite of what you hear in the media about how terrible and retrograde fundamentalists are, those movements, even on the “conservative” ends are thoroughly feminized. The central Christian teaching that *all* people are sinners gets glossed over. Instead, the notion that men are somehow worse by nature than women is everywhere, sometimes stated overtly, but more often in the subtext and sub-communications. At the same time, women are



elevated to a position of moral and spiritual superiority. Women's sin is often excused in light of men's failings — failings we endlessly harp on because it's expected. I remember hearing a well-known Evangelical leader tell a story about how during a *spat* his wife freaked out and started smashing dishes. What was his point? That she did this because *he* had been neglecting her. She is not an adult beholden to self-control, or any real insight, but rather an innocent victim driven to violent behavior by *his* shortcomings. Her displeasure at his *shortcomings* was an indicator of *God's* displeasure with him.

***“Toxic masculinity”***: Any aspect of conventional masculinity inconvenient to a feminine-correct purpose — is now a sin both actively and retroactively in what's left of our decaying religious cultures.

With every successive generation of Beta male pastors that are produced by this farm you get more men whose only experience of that religion is one of servile deference to a faith that's been fundamentally altered to serve the utility of feminine social primacy. Women love to complain that it's largely men who do the preaching and decision making in church, but what they ignore is that these men are the curated implements of the Feminine Imperative. I'd wager that in the next decade most *old order* religions will be largely unrecognizable from their prior tenets of well-defined conventional masculinity and those faiths will expressly, openly, be centered on deference to the feminine.

## **Culture Informs Faith**

I've had critics tell me that the problem with the modern church is really one of its culture and should be considered apart from the 'genuine' faith — the cosmic universal *truth* that defines their belief. However, it is an all too human religious culture that ultimately informs and restructures doctrine and articles of faith. When that culture is informed by the Feminine Imperative, openly religious feminism, and a feminine influence posing as doctrinally sound egalitarianism, it fundamentally recreates an *old order*

religion in the image of a new order, female-primary, imperative. This and endless variations of the feminization of religion across every culture and sect is why contemporary religion is openly hostile to any semblance of conventional masculinity.

Church is no place for a single man, and church is just a formality for the man married to a religious woman at this point in time. All considerations of faith aside, I cannot fathom any self-respecting adult man finding anything attractive about the modern church. Either there is nothing for him there or he is despised and denigrated, openly or subversively in a faith altering way – or discreetly in resentment, or in pandering ridicule of his juvenilized maleness. Men tell me that seeking *God* is what men ought to find attractive about religion. While there's merit to this, feminized cultural influences make that *seeking* a prospect of filtering out the noise that modern spirituality bases its doctrines and faiths on. Most men lack the interest or patience for this today. I don't type this out here without a sincere sense of what's been lost; particularly for men genuinely seeking existential answers for themselves. My *Red Pill* observations herein will undoubtedly be thought of as some attack on a genuine faith, but my issue in this book isn't with religion per se, but rather the thoroughness with which the Feminine Imperative has either subverted wholesale, or covertly influenced, all contemporary religions. Yes, I realize that faith is something personal that should be set apart from churchy social influence, but a culture is a manifestation of the doctrine and collective belief system that created it. That culture ultimately modifies and informs the faith itself, thus with every successive generation that social influence becomes an article of the faith for the next.

It's better to laugh with the sinners than cry with the saints, especially when today's '*saints*' are the new order priestesses of the Feminine Imperative.

The *Red Pill* lens in today's church is a scary prospect. What makes it so dangerous for a Blue Pill man is that it is ground-zero for girls entering what I've termed their *Epiphany Phase*. The single men who remain in the church are the ones will be pressured to fulfill their role in that strategy and will be treated with hostility if challenge it. I anticipate a renewed church "Man Up" campaign somewhere in the near future as the next wave of twenty-somethings near 30 and beyond. As we see women leave unerasable

digital footprints of their sexual pasts it will become a new article of faith that men's God-breathed *masculine* responsibility should include forgiving them of their past indiscretions. For the religious man the only appeal church consistently has is to meet cute, *God-approved*, single young women and that's *if* the church actually has them and its theology isn't wholly intolerable.

Men with a well-defined *Red Pill* lens, having the sensitivity to understand the sub-communications of what's going on around them in church, should be rightly horrified. This is why men like *Dalrock* have been vilified by religious men and women alike who understand the *Manosphere* is wise to what's transpiring in the church. The Feminine Imperative has taken the *Lord's* name in vain by presuming to promote its agenda, while socially engineering generations of men to support it by claiming it's *God's will*. Read the heroic female empowerment narratives of any *Women's Ministry* speaker. They will regularly defend and aggrandize the *Sisterhood* above any tenets of faith. They'll tolerate blasphemy of the faith, but never blasphemy of the Feminine Imperative. They'll rationalize abortion as a man's sin, but never accept women's ultimate accountability for it, and any man to attempt to rebuke them (for anything really) is shamed for the heresy of male chauvinist *Judgementalism*. And being judgmental of any woman is the most grievous of sins a man can commit in the new order church.

In the feminine-primary church, the Feminine Imperative is now the *Holy Spirit*; what *She* says is an article of faith. Men who become aware of this via the *Red Pill* are a threat to *Her*.



## INTRODUCTION

Whenever I begin a book I'm faced with the dilemma of explaining ideas people might consider *fringe* concepts. Over time things change, and the language changes too. The term, *intersexual dynamics*, is a tough, catchall phrase for people to process. I use it a lot. To me it describes the hows and whys men and women relate to one another in a way that is influenced by their reproductive processes and the innate mating strategies that define so much of what men and women are to themselves and each other. That's just the basics. From there we have to add in elements of biology, psychology, sociology, anthropology and a few other '-ologies' to get a working understanding of the *dynamics* that exist between men and women. This throws off a lot of readers when they first encounter the *Red Pill*; it's complex and there's no simple 'elevator pitch' that really sums it up accurately. I always struggle with the balance of being comprehensive with being concise.

The field of evolutionary psychology has a lot of these terms that put a name to some complex interactions between human beings. *Intersexual dynamics* encompasses more than just 'insert tab *a* into slot *b*'. There's more connected to our incentives and motivations to reproduce than most of us are comfortable in admitting. Even that discomfort is part of intersexual dynamism. At the risk of sounding overly Freudian, all *energy* is sexual. How that motive energy is channeled is up to the individual. And then *energy* becomes another one of those easily distortable words that far too many people in men's 'online communities' have latched onto.

*"Does he mean 'energy' as in, the metaphysical, supernatural force I believe in? Or does he mean energy as in, motivation, incentive or the physical impetus that drives us to do productive things that are extensions of our will?"*

That latter part is what I mean, but do you see the ease with which we get sidetracked when we apply our own interpretations to ideas we want to find simple significance in? In some ways this is unavoidable, but as with all

the books I've written in the *Rational Male* series I'm now going to ask you to suspend your *belief* (rather than *disbelief*) for this one and do your best to think in terms of objectivity. Yes, I know, no one can be entirely objective. Our ego-investments (including my own) will always influence our learning. However, this doesn't mean we shouldn't start all this from the perspective of us reminding ourselves to stay objective. Objectivity has always been a prerequisite of my work; or at least it's been a guiding premise for me. Up until a few years ago I was unaware that there even was a *belief* system called *objectivism*. I had a friend ask me if I'd ever read *Ayn Rand*, then told me how he thought my work was in the same vein as her objectivism. I've honestly never been a fan of *Rand*, so perhaps that's why I never made the connection. I get why rational-minded people like her, but I've only ever striven to look at things from a pragmatic perspective and connect the dots I didn't think people wanted to look at. Fundamentally, I consider myself a pragmatist of sorts. From my earliest debates on the *SoSuave* online forums (2002-2015) I tried to untangle intersexual dynamics without the emotional investments I saw some rational-minded men get upset over.

So, please try to stay objective in this reading. I start all my books with this request, but in a book about how intersexual dynamics and evolutionary principles correlate with religions and people's spiritual beliefs it's easy to get lost in the emotional weeds. People's spiritual beliefs can be a minefield to say the least. As you'll read in a moment, I'm not trying to convince you to abandon your faith (or convince you to have one) – I'm only asking that while you read this book you reconsider the mundane, matter-of-fact presumptions you have about what your belief-set has taught you about the natures of men and women.

That will be the toughest part of reading this book.

For generations we've intermixed our *faith* into the experience of 'love'. We align how love should ideally be expressed between men and women with what our faith in God or a metaphysical spirituality should ideally mean to us and to others. A *Blue Pill* conditioned outlook on intersexual dynamics is often complicated by religious beliefs that reconfirm romantic idealism. That's where many problems start for men and women with any

kind of personal convictions today. For generations now religion has embedded the romantic ideals of a particular era into articles of faith. These articles then translate into gender-based duties and expectations which are applied to the opposite sex. *Believers* tend to invest a lot of their egos into what *should* be true for men and women because their belief structure affirms it for them. So, when the ideas I'll put forth in this volume challenge those beliefs the effect will be a challenge to what you've invested in the hope that your faith is accurate, as well as what a *Blue Pill* social order has convinced you is accurate. Don't assume this is an insult. You're not an idiot and I'm not saying you're going about life all wrong. It's merely meant as a reminder that we ego-invest ourselves in our belief-sets.

The intent of this book is to give you something to think about – some dots to connect – not to mock your religious beliefs, or call you stupid or to show you how you're living life *wrong*. Neither am I writing a 'takedown' of religion here. This book is an exercise in objectively understanding why it is you came to the beliefs and convictions you have about intersexual dynamics within a religious (or spiritual) framework. Most of the beliefs we hold are not the result of our poring over numerous, peer-reviewed research studies. Our belief-set primarily comes from external influences and our lived experiences. What I intend in this work is to understand how we come to the beliefs we have about our intersexual *Game* and how it coincides with our religious convictions.

## **What is the Red Pill?**

The *Red Pill* in its original sense is the praxeological study of the intersexual dynamics of human beings.

Intersexual dynamics is a more accurate way to define what was *originally* called the *Red Pill*. Online subcultures get a lot of bad press today and the jingoisms generated by these internet collectives can sometimes be off-putting. The *Red Pill* is one of those terms that sounds a bit juvenile to people unfamiliar with the ideas those communities discuss. “*Normies don't get it*” is an easier way to think about this, but whatever you've heard about what is or isn't *Red Pill* in the press, online or from your friends, I'm also going to ask you to put all those preconceptions away for the reading of

this book. In this, the fourth installment of *The Rational Male* series, I'm going to assume you don't have any prior experience with online collectives like what is loosely known as the *Manosphere* or even knowing what being *Red Pill aware* is beyond, hopefully, you having watched *The Matrix* movie at some point. I'm going to assume you're new to all this and maybe you picked up a book about religion that also included the word *rational* in its title because you were looking for answers to your socio-sexual spiritual confusion. This book is fundamentally about intersexual dynamics, but more importantly it's about how these real world dynamics influence our spiritual lives and vice versa.

The *Red Pill* is the praxeology. A **Praxeology** is the study of those aspects of human action that can be grasped *a priori*; in other words, it is concerned with the conceptual analysis and logical implications of preference, choice, means-end schemes, and so forth. In a praxeological context, the *Red Pill* is a 'loose', but comprehensive, science concerned with understanding the underlying motivators of why we do what we do as men and women. Does it get *everything* right? No, but it does ask the right questions. It's these questions that make *believers* uncomfortable. The beauty of *The Red Pill* as a praxeology is that we get to write those questions and tentative conclusions down in pencil, not ink, to be erased and edited as new information changes them.

The *Red Pill* is not an ideology. Despite what many moralist critics would like to redefine it as, a *Red Pill* awareness is about an obligation to understanding the truth about men and women's natures.

But why is it important to understand men and women's innate natures and mating strategies in a religious context? Because so much of what forms our ideals about family, faith, values, culture and our *tribal* ancestry hinges on how men and women come together, reproduce and develop families. How we understand the nature of God is intimately linked with how we understand ourselves. Even the process of how we conceive a supernatural, omniscient *Will* that exists beyond our understanding is rooted in how we developed the faculties to even think that thought. Reproduction is a **problem** that humans must solve to ensure the survival of the species – and we're exceedingly good at it. But for humans there are myriad customs, observations, formalities, social conventions and moralities that complicate not just solving that reproductive problem, but also optimizing the solution.



Reproduction and family formation is also a key element in human's innate tribalism. For most of history, solving that problem has been steeped in the supernatural. '*Finding love*' becomes a spiritual quest. Reproducing is so important to the perpetuation of our species that it necessarily takes on something of cosmic significance. It becomes something about 'getting *lucky*' or fortune, or maybe God's divine plan for your life that you've found one man or a woman amongst billions of people with which to reproduce and start a new tribal unit (called a family).

In this respect, religion has **everything** to do with a *Red Pill* understanding of intersexual dynamics.

## Why Write a Book on Religion?

In 2011 I was finally convinced by the guys on the *SoSuave* online seduction forums to collect the best of my forum posts and start a blog. That blog became *The Rational Male*, which later became this series of books. On that forum I'd already built a reputation for having some insight on men and women's innate natures and how best to leverage that knowledge into building a better life for men. In many cases I would have formerly *Blue Pill* men explain how reading my work was a 'life-saving' experience for them. In some ways this was comparable to a religious epiphany for them. "*You're doing God's work Rollo.*" They had transitioned from a state of conditioned ignorance about women, themselves, and the intersexual game they were involved in, to a new pragmatic understanding of how they could use this information to benefit their lives. All this was two years before I published my first book. Becoming *Red Pill Aware* is a transformative experience for men. However, that transformation isn't without its price. The truth will set you free, but that doesn't mean the truth is pretty; and the freedom it does bring also includes many responsibilities. The truth is rarely ever easy. Regrets can come from never having understood the truth that was right in front of you in the first place. Most men struggle with processing this new awareness. Being cut away from an old *Blue Pill* paradigm that used to give them direction in their life can be jarring, especially when they never had much success when they were following the *old order* way of thinking. Transitioning from being a '*loser*' in a *Blue Pill* life to being an *aware loser*

in a *Red Pill* context is a tough proposition. Add to this crisis the fact that much of what they invested their egos in, with respect to women and directing their life, is also entwined with their spiritual beliefs.

People have very deep ego-investments in sex. Getting to the act of copulation is just a part of how sex influences our lives. Sex is almost a formality when you consider the social and psychological frameworks that are built around it. We build lives, families, religions, politics and worlds around the personal and emotional investments we hold with respect to sex. Ultimately sex is about how we facilitate our own reproduction; getting to that point is where intersexual dynamics come into play. Most of us have no clue as to how to go about optimizing our *Game – The beliefs and methodologies a person employs to go from sexless and single to getting intimate, getting after it, and starting a family*. Fewer still want to appear conceited or pretentious about “figuring out” the opposite sex. God forbid a man ever presume, much less say, he knows a thing or two about women in this era. Our ideas about how best to initiate an intimate relationship with another person are molded by our socialization and acculturation. In the past it began with our upbringing, trial and error, guesswork and a lot of *faith*.

Even if you’re not religious, by the end of this book you’ll understand how *faith* likely still plays a role in your beliefs about finding an idealized mate. We call it “getting lucky” when we find someone willing to have sex with us. Most *Blue Pill* men reflexively self-deprecate when they talk about a spouse, and that deprecation usually centers on how *fortunate* he just knows he is to undeservedly receive the love of his wife. Fortune, luck, or preordained by God; at the end of his quest to solve his reproductive problem the fact remains, he really had no idea what he was doing. Most men’s intimate lives are usually happy (or unhappy) accidents, not preplanned designs. He was just following what his deductive reasoning indicated and the cues he *could* understand that confirmed what a global *Village’s* influence convinced him that women wanted. His entire *Game* was founded on a hope that things would just work out for him the way he learned it from *Disney*, or his parents, or his faith. Stay faithful. Pray hard, and despite a social order determined to drag you into its intersexual machine you’ll eventually meet the perfect *soulmate* God reserved for you before you were born. Religion has always had an active hand in developing

every generation's directives for solving their reproductive problem. When you're encouraged not to ask questions about how mating strategies work – when you're encouraged to invest your ego into the faith required to satisfy your sexual imperatives – it makes the prospect of knowing the *Red Pill* truth (or even the questions it asks) a crisis of faith. Questioning what one believes about the *right* way of engaging with the opposite sex becomes a questioning of faith.

A common request I've received from men over the years is for a set of rules to live by in the context of what *Red Pill* awareness presents to men. My answer is always the same – I don't do prescriptions. The closest I get is the **9 Iron Rules of Tomassi** from in my first book. When a man, young or old, is cut away from that old understanding of the nature of the game they're involved in, the first desire is a want for direction. This present generation of men (and women) are possibly the most directionless of any to come before it. If any demographic of men lacks for *purpose*, this generation is it. Many a pop-psychologist grifter, or self-anointed *life coach*, has been quick to give them a formulaic plan. There will never be a *12 Rules for Life* book forthcoming from me because we disempower ourselves when we follow someone else's path and not our own.

When I began developing concepts about intersexual dynamics on the *SoSuave* forums the most common responses I received from (usually young) men was:

*“Rollo, I get what you're saying. I understand how Game is a necessity in dealing with women, but I'm a Christian, a Jew, a Muslim, Hindu, etc. How can I apply all this in the framework of my convictions?”*

*This* is why I'm writing a book on the *Red Pill* and religion. To give men a framework in which they can apply this new awareness that, hopefully, they can align with their convictions. My goal with this book is to give you the tools and information, cautions and awareness, to allow you to build a life in a *Red Pill* paradigm that is inclusive of your faith – even if you don't have one to begin with. I realize how ambitious that last statement reads. I simply cannot tell you how to go about aligning your spiritual convictions

with the *Red Pill*. Ultimately, **you** are the one who must parse this awareness out and reconcile it with your faith and convictions.

I usually run into two kinds of opposition when I'm considering how the *Red Pill* might gel or conflict with religious/spiritual convictions. The first is: when most religious men first encounter what the *Red Pill* describes about intersexual dynamics their response is usually a hard turn back to what their (often feminized) faith had originally set for them. The easiest response is to deny and denigrate what the revelations of a *Red Pill* praxeology presents to them. It's sounds like a challenge to their faith, and as they were taught, they simply reject the dots being connected and never unplug themselves. Furthermore, they often venture to demonize *Red Pill* "thinking" as heretical to their binary beliefs. The second response from is the religious men who will acknowledge the merits and truths that the *Red Pill* addresses, but only so much of it that aligns with, and affirms, their particular interpretation of what their faith would accept. These are the 'pick and pull' believers. The aspects of the *Red Pill* that is affirming to their faith is usually accepted as something their faith had learned and spoke of long ago. These *believers* tend to see *Red Pill* communities of men as "ministry" opportunities and their *Purple Pill* grift is justified as an outreach effort.

### **You're the "Rational Male!" Isn't religion inherently *irrational*?**

This is the second, and usually most common, opposition response I get when I consider the *Red Pill* in religious frameworks. Why even bother with religion?

*"Who cares what a bunch of pre-agricultural goat herders in the Middle East had to say about anything?" and "Do you **actually** believe in God?"*

These are what I get asked in a kind of feigned bewilderment. From a writer's perspective, I do understand why even considering religion might seem like a waste of mental effort to my readers. I get a similar reaction whenever I consider the topic of long term relationships or marriage from

*Men Going Their Own Way* (MGTOW). They just don't see the point in hashing out what they think is pointless and ought to be irrelevant to anyone with a brain. The blog and book is called *The Rational Male* and the operative statement of my work is to remain objective in my assessments. I feel that I have an obligation to objective truth, and because of this most people presume I'm an atheist. *I'm not*. I do have a faith, but even if I were a confirmed atheist I would still maintain that understanding how a belief in a supernatural power, and how we organize our social conventions around that belief, is part of the human experience – for better or worse – and certainly worthy of study.

The study of belief *is* a rational prospect. We do ourselves no favors by sticking our heads in the sand, whether that sand is an unquestioned religious conviction or a certainty that there is no God. People with questions don't scare me, it's people with no question who often do. In this book I'll dig into the evolution of *belief* and how we get to religion from that belief, but the operative point is that the wonderment of existence and the certainty of death has prompted in human beings a common curiosity about what lies beyond the *beyond*. The human experience has included a curiosity for something outside ourselves since we were hunting and gathering in tribes on the African savanna. It is entirely *rational* to **want** to understand the metaphysical.

## Evolution and Religion

The flip side to the '*religion is irrational*' argument is the '*evolution is antithetical to religion*' conundrum. It's always entertaining for me when I make the case for something that's belief-affirming for a *believer*. Their inference is that I **must** necessarily be aligned with their binary belief set. Guys trying to force-fit the *Red Pill* into their ideology love it when they come across a former *Red Pill* 'guru' who's renounced his libertine past, publicly apologizes for his womanizing, and claims to have found religion now that he's older and his lifestyle has shifted by necessity. I can't speak to the genuineness of their religious conversions, but I do know that the story of the *Prodigal Son* is a belief-affirming archetype for *believers*. Even so, just for a guy like *Rollo Tomassi* to claim to have a faith is enough to

reinforce a hope that uncomfortable *Red Pill* truths might also align with their humble faith – thus, proving they were right all along.

All of that optimism grinds to a halt when I insert the prefix of “*evo-*” (evolutionary) in front of a particular term. Just to refer to evolution, just to type out or speak the word “evolution”, is enough to halt *believers* in their tracks. Remember the first type of religious rejection of the *Red Pill* that I mentioned above? The kind where men resist the dots being connected out of hand? Usually that rejection comes directly after I make reference to *Evolutionary Psychology (evo-psych)*, *Evolutionary Biology (evo-bio)* or when I use a term like *Evolved Mental Firmware* or *Evolved Gender Roles*. For a majority of *believers* to presume evolution in an explanation is to presume God is absent in the argument. This is usually the result of a long-held religious conditioning that, for over two centuries now, has taught that evolution and a belief in the *divine* are incompatible ideas. The default belief is that evolution and God are binary enemies and trying to make one fit with the other is a fool’s errand. This is where a lot of religiously minded men (not all Christians) lose the narrative of the *Red Pill*. Women’s nature is “*just the way God made women*”. Men’s nature is *fallen* and usually that’s enough to square the *Red Pill* circle for them. But use any type of evolutionary reasoning that explains an intersexual dynamic and it becomes some variation of men “*relying on their own understanding and not God’s wisdom*”. This conditioning goes hand in hand with another over-played religious ideal; the belief that every predictive framework must necessarily be a *belief* itself. Thus, we get the *believer’s* presumption that evolution is a belief-set or a substitute for God. People who *believe* in evolution are labeled Evolutionists. It’s much easier to dismiss the dots that evolutionary theory connects when you reduce it to a *faith in science*. Then, relying on your own wisdom seems like rebelling against God.

So let’s get this out right here; I’m going to infer, refer to and presume evolution a lot in this book. *Evo-Psych* and *Evo-Bio* have always been principle frameworks for the *Red Pill* praxeology, and until something better comes along, that’s what we have to work with. If you’re a religious reader, if you have a binary outlook on things like sex and human nature, feel free to listen to that ‘*still small voice*’ in the back of your head and insert the word “*created*” into the sentences that you couldn’t process because *evolution* was typed out or implied, and then keep reading. Personally, I

don't have a problem synching evolutionary theory with my own faith, but I know others do not. I should also point out that there are binary thinkers on the ***God is dead*** side of the ideological fence too. The spiritually-minded often characterize *Evolutionists* as *believers in evolution*, thus casting them in a more easily understandable role as their ideological opposition. Baseless as that assumption is, many atheists are all too happy to play that role – often with a measure of smug sarcasm. Just my considering religion in a *Red Pill* context might be enough to switch these readers off as well. Likewise, my referring to evolutionary principles might also seem like religionless ideological affirmation for them.

This then brings me to another maxim of this book; the goal is to stay as objective in scope as possible while wrapping our heads around the dots being connected. **It is *not* about proving a right or a wrong.** When you finish reading the last page of the glossary and close this book, **then** you may make your inevitable judgement calls. I'll elaborate later about the disconnect between *believers* and *empiricists*, but for now just know that the scope of this book is understanding intersexual dynamics in a religious framework. It is not about what you think are the moral implications of those dynamics. Not here in the beginning anyway. There will be aspects of this book that will be faith-affirming and aspects that will contradict your faith. There will be parts of this book that seem like I'm *bashing religion* and other parts that seem like a fervent belief in God is what I'm driving at. For both the faithful and the faithless I'll promise to have you angry at me at some point during this read. That's a good thing. It means you're processing the ideas and I'm conveying them accurately.

### **Hey man, are you trying to Convert me or Dissuade me?**

Neither. If you picked up this book with the idea that it would '***Destroy!***' the arguments of the faithful, you're likely to be disappointed. If this book interested you because you thought I'd make the case for how your religion has **always** been correct in a *Red Pill* context, you'll probably be disappointed too. I don't want to convert you to my faith, any faith, or even my thought process, nor do I want to discourage your own convictions. As often as I've been accused of being a "cult leader" or being possessed of a

“messiah complex”, my purpose in this book is not to start a new *Rollo Religion*. Hell, I want you to challenge me. It’s how we develop the praxeological framework of what the *Red Pill* is. I’ll leave the interpretations up to you. Connecting dots, objectivity, all of that is up to you in this read. I hope that at the end of this you can see, as I have, that what almost 20 years of *Red Pill* information gathering shows is that both religion, and a resistance to it, play a new part in the gender power dynamics that we take for granted, but tacitly influence our lives.

## **Dalrock and the Christo-Manosphere**

Finally, this introduction, this very book, would be incomplete if I didn’t acknowledge the seminal contributions of one of the most influential bloggers and thinkers in this new order *Red Pill* frontier. That blogger is a man who goes by the name of ***Dalrock***. I’ve included *Dalrock* in the acknowledgements of all three of my previous books and he’ll be mentioned again in this one’s acknowledgements, but for this book, *Dal* belongs prominently in the introduction.

When I began *The Rational Male* blog in August of 2011 I had given serious consideration to including a religious component to my essay topics and categories. I had so many Christian men in my personal commentariat, as well as the *SoSuave* forums, asking me how to *spin plates* or use *Game* in their marriages, or otherwise find applications for *Red Pill* ideas they could use in their lives. They just needed a Christian way of making those ideas line up with their conviction. More so, I had Christian men in sexless marriages who were desperate to tell me how their wives’ religious beliefs had been used as leverage to justify their sexual disinterest in their husbands. I had men who wanted to relate their experiences of how their churches (and particularly their male pastors) had been assimilated by a feminine-primary **imperative**, and how men were abandoning their churches – and often the faith entirely – *en masse* as a result of there being nothing left for them in the churches they grew up in. This demographic of readers were so common that I gave serious thought to starting a sub-blog to address their issues when I began *The Rational Male*.



I gave up on that idea when I discovered *Dalrock's* blog. What *Dal* was doing was everything I thought needed to be addressed for this cross-section of guys, and far better than I could have done justice to. No one in what would later be called the *Manosphere* was doing what *Dalrock* was in addressing the issues of intersexual dynamics that Evangelical Christians and Catholics alike were asking of us at that time. Remarkably, *Dalrock's* analyses were efficiently *Red Pill* focused. To this day I cannot think of another writer who has a more thorough knowledge of *Red Pill / Game* foundations and how they interrelate to a contemporary Christian perspective of marriage, parenting, feminism in the church, the crisis of conventional masculinity, divorce and sex.

Since the mid 2000s I've been called one of the 3 '**R's**' of the *Manosphere*; **Roosh**, **Roissy** and **Rollo**. We've been called the 'thought leaders' of the *Red Pill* and intersexual dynamics, but honestly, *Dalrock's* name should be added to this roll – his work is *that* important. As such, Dalrock repeatedly drew fire from both traditional conservative and mainstream Christian critics. He did for a modern feminized perspective of Christian culture what I was doing for secular perspectives of intersexual dynamics. Comforting the afflicted and afflicting the comfortable will make you enemies, but it's part of the job when you have an obligation to connect dots and a commitment to objective truths. For 10 years *Dal's* free-ware *WordPress* blog was the go-to site for the *Christo-Manosphere*. He's never monetized it and he never shifted his message or mission of being a marketplace of ideas – and a good amount of criticism – about how this new understanding of intersexual dynamics was playing out in a Christian context. Unfortunately, as of February 2020, *Dalrock* has decided to retire his blog indefinitely. For reasons that are his own, he's taken a step away from his 10 year 'project' of holding Christian culture's feet to the proverbial fire. This has left a hole in the 'sphere that will not be easily filled.

When I considered writing a book on *The Red Pill & Religion* my first thought was to co-author the book with *Dalrock*. I began by emailing *Dal* with the proposition. *Dalrock* turned me down in the nicest way possible, twice. He and I have been blogging *friends* for 10 years as of this writing, and in that time I've bounced ideas off him, shared links and discussed the *secular* side of *Red Pill* thought on his blog's comments. *Dal* has always

been a guy who values his privacy. His writing has always been a genuine labor of love for him. He's had many opportunities to take his influence on the *Manosphere* to some greater degree, but that's just not *Dal*. No books, no ads, no podcast (I've tried to get him to come on mine several times). For him it's just the ideas and the discussion.

This book would be incomplete without those ideas, discussions and references that have been a product of *Dalrock's* particular genius and our relationship. Many of the concepts I explore in this book, particularly the ones about the state of modern Christian church culture, marriages and parenting, find their beginnings in *Dalrock's* work. I am hardly a Biblical scholar, but *Dalrock's* unique understanding of scripture has filled in the spaces where I needed help. It is because of his friendship and commitment to his craft that I dedicate this book to him.

## **How to Read this Book**

What you hold in your hands now is the collected knowledge of almost 20 years of men discussing, debating and refining their experiences in understanding the nature of women. Furthermore, it is an aggregate knowledge of men's nature and the social and psychological interplay that goes on between men and women. Where this work goes on from that basis is an exploration of the religious implications that arise from that knowledge base. When men of faith encounter the *Red Pill* for the first time it often forces them to confront all of the presumptions they were taught about intersexual dynamics by their personal faith. This can sometimes trigger a crisis of faith or force a man into denial because so much of his hope for future happiness with wife and family rides on that understanding.

*Prepare yourself for this.*

All of my books center on the desire to learn about the gears that work 'under the hood' of intersexual dynamics. It has never been enough for me to simply turn on the television set and be happy that it works. I've always wanted to break the television down and understand how and why it works. I've applied this same desire to determining the inner workings of women,

sex, family, love, and all the reasons why we do what we do – often in spite of a world that would rather I didn't ask these questions. Curiosity has always been the guiding principle of my writing, but I've ventured to do something more ambitious with this volume. My target readership for this book is, of course, men (and women) who already have some experience with *Red Pill* ideas, however, it is also directed to the religious reader who might be totally unfamiliar with my work, or even unfamiliar with ideas of the *Red Pill* sphere entirely. *The Rational Male* is now a series of books, but all of them, and all the essays on my blog, center on a knowledge base laid out in the first book, *The Rational Male*. In the first section of this book I'll do my best to give you a primer of these ideas, and along the way I'll explain some of these concepts and how they relate in a religious context. That said, I'm going to stress that you still read the first book to get a more thorough understanding of what these concepts are and how I, and other writers in this *sphere*, came to them. It helps to think of my first book as a set of core 'rules' and the subsequent books as supplements based on that core.

### **A note about *Jargon***

Much of what we discuss in the *Manosphere* can seem cryptic to a new reader. Even 'manosphere' is one of these jargon words that most people don't really understand, or think is juvenile (I agree) or 'cultish', when they first read it. Since its origins in the early 2000s' online seduction communities (PUAs, *pickup artists*) the '*sphere* and *Red Pill* praxeology has had need for terms and acronyms of convenience. When I use terms, like *Alpha* or *Beta*, or *Hypergammy* bear in mind that these are abstractions. They are necessary placeholder words for concepts so we can move on to consider and debate larger dynamics. However, I do recognize that *Red Pill* specific jargon can confuse or alienate new readers. I will venture to simplify these terms along the way, or write out the meaning of an acronym before I continue to use it. Hopefully this will allay confusion and help you continue on with bigger ideas.

### **Why are you reading this book?**

If you're a first time reader it's likely you were curious about how this book might help you better understand intersexual relations in the framework of your religious convictions. Regardless of what men's beliefs are or how they came to them, our innate, evolved, biological impulses and conditions don't change. People want to have sex, and religion has always been there to tell them how to do it — or give them a reason to feel good or bad about ignoring it. This book is the result of religiously-minded men (of many faiths) looking for *Red Pill* answers:

- Maybe you picked this book up, or had it given to you by a friend, because you're at a point in life where the answers you sought about how to “*get a girlfriend*” weren't forthcoming from the people you listened to in church. Perhaps the root of your problems were listening to them in the first place.
- You don't believe in premarital sex, but you've read some *Red Pill* ideas that articulated what you never had words for. You hope that there's a way you can make those ideas work within the framework of your personal convictions.
- You may wonder why you can't find a wholesome “*quality woman*” who shares your convictions, or why all the women in your faith seem preoccupied with their social media accounts more than “seeking after God” or finding a husband. You might feel dejected, hesitant or frustrated by the women professing your faith, but never really living it.
- You may have abandoned your faith altogether because there's just nothing for men in the church anymore. Or perhaps you've noticed your faith being overrun by a secularized feminine influence and female primacy is the focus of a ‘new church’ you no longer feel welcome in.
- You might be a married man who's become *awakened* to the reality of his Blue Pill understanding of women and want to know how to apply *Red Pill* awareness to your ‘holy’-but-sexless marriage. You might believe you're “addicted” to pornography and the *Red Pill* has some insights your faith hasn't addressed about it.

- Maybe you think the world has taken a turn towards “*moral degeneracy*” and you want to know how to ‘save the West’, starting with “*destroying feminism!*”

Whatever your reasons are for picking up this volume I’m going to ask you to set those expectations aside for the duration of this read. In due course I’ll address all of these concerns, but it’s important that you start this book from a neutral position. You may have never heard of this guy *Rollo Tomassi* before this book, or you may have been reading me since 2002, but this book will make you rethink what you think you *know* about religion and how it’s used to appeal to your core faith. That’s a separation you’ll need to be able to make; religion is the application of faith.

## **Faith vs. Religion**

Faith is something very personal. We can be proud of it, we can be in awe of it, we can question it and we can turn to it when we’re utterly, fearfully, alone in our last minutes of life. It’s likely that there is no greater aspect of the human experience that we can invest our egos in than the faith we depend on to keep us sane. I would never presume to attack anyone’s faith; but I’ve been accused of exactly this on many occasions when I ask questions about how religion operates on that ego-invested faith. While faith is intimate and important, religion should never be above reproach – and it is always in religion’s best interests that a *believer* conflates the purpose of his faith with the practices that his religions teach him.

While the book you’re holding now was the result of 20 years of *Red Pill* debate and intelligence gathering, its writing and research began about 4 years ago (2016). When I announced I was going to be writing a book about the *Red Pill & Religion* I was overwhelmed by readers asking me if I would be including a mention of their particular religion. Over the course of this data collection, more and more people added their religion to that list *I just had to cover* if I wanted to be complete in my assessments. It became apparent to me that were I to attempt including *every* religion in this treatise I’d be looking at a very thick book! So, let me apologize now for not directly addressing your very specific version of orthodox Shiite Hasidic Coptic

Krishnaism right now. Although I do get into some specific sects, the main thrust of my *Red Pill* dissection of religion focuses on the larger, organized, mainstream faiths. For simplicity's sake this was necessary, but also, the fundamentals of most religions don't change all that much with respect to intersexual dynamics.

## **The Orthodox Paradox**

I can hear the groans now, “He didn't confirm my *true belief* in [insert religion here], how can *this* be “*Red Pill*”?” This brings us to what I call the ***Orthodox Paradox*** – unless you believe in some unitarian, syncretic faith, it's likely you believe your way of doing God is *the* way of doing God. There are no other *real* religions like yours, and anyone associated with your religion that's shining a bad light on it, well, they're not *real* [religion] anyway. In logical fallacy terms this is the religious version of the *No True Scotsman* line of argumentation.

The *Orthodox Paradox* distills down to “***You can't argue with God***”. So let's also get this out of the way now; I'm probably going to get *your* religion all wrong, because no true believer would do what I'm observing them do. The good news is I figured this out from the very beginning of this writing, and I've been as careful as I can in keeping this orthodoxy presumption in mind while writing **every single chapter** of this book. The bad news is that most people who cling to the *Orthodox Paradox* tend to be the most binary literalists you'll ever know. As I mentioned, when you invest your ego in a belief, any attack on that belief is interpreted as an attack on the person. There's not much I can really do about that except ask you, dear literalist reader, to bear with me while I get to the larger points inferred about a religion, and know that I've done my best to consider the orthodox interpretation of that criticism in every instance.

## **On scripture**

Before you continue, if you picked up this book thinking I must a Biblical scholar or an expert in ancient translations of the Quran or the Bhagavad Gita, you're also going to be very disappointed. My academic

background is limited to behavioral psychology and a very keen interest in evolutionary psychology. If you want to talk about the history of fine art, I'm academically qualified in that respect too. I am not a religious scholar beyond what I've researched for this book, and personal interests, and I don't hold a doctorate degree in anything. Honestly, I think the *laity* approach helps a lot more with respect to this book's topics, but I know that others will get upset that I quoted something from a holy text and my interpretation of it doesn't pass the *Orthodox Paradox* test. When some scripture doesn't mean what you think it means, it's usually because it doesn't align with what a *true believer* would *know* it means. Sometimes scripture is inconvenient with a secularized interpretation of it as well.

With the exception of my referencing *Dalrock* or a handful of other men I asked for guidance in this writing, any interpretation of scripture in this book is my own take. Likewise, I will probably *get it all wrong* according an orthodox standard, but quote it I shall. I in no way think that my take is the only take, or even the correct take, of that scriptural passage. However, bear in mind that my interpretation is that of a *Red Pill* aware layperson who's come across these verses in my debates many times. In most instances these quotes are not my using them to legitimize anything, but rather their common use by *believers* to legitimize something themselves.

## **On structure**

This book is broken down into two main parts. The first is dedicated to *Red Pill* principles and how they align (or don't) with commonly held religious beliefs. In these chapters This section is a necessary primer to really grasp the later sections of the book. I'll delve into the latent purposes of doctrine, traditions and practices of most religions and how these relate to *Red Pill* aware intersexual dynamics. In the second section I expand on larger social issues and how a secularized influence in religion is fundamentally altering *old order* understanding of faith in a globalized society. Religious outlook on marriage, divorce, sex, parenting, feminism and the Feminine Imperative are some of the topics considered. More importantly, how we're coming into these new *faiths* and where we can expect them to go is a key feature of this section.

Finally, I've decided to do something a bit different in my presentation of this book. One of the first things I'm usually asked in interviews is how I came to *my way of thinking* about women, men, sex, etc. Usually this groundwork isn't motivated from a desire to genuinely get to know me; rather it's meant to establish some Freudian/Jungian/Oprah-approved character flaw they presume I must have. Interviewers on the outside of the *Red Pill* always start with the presumption that I *must* have some past trauma ("Who hurt you?") that made me *bitter* in the long term about intersexual dynamics. In the context of religion this same tactic is equally useful to critics who don't like thinking about the observations I bring up. So, at the risk of making myself vulnerable to being dismissed by the same disingenuousness, I've decide to give my readers an insight into my own past and personal experiences with faith and religion. At various stages in this read I'll give you some personal stories about what I think might be relatable to a particular topic. Anyone who's familiar with my work knows I'm reluctant to use my life (and my marriage) as anecdotal '*proof*' of concept for anything. I'm not you. My past success (or failure) is in no way indicative of your future success. I'm including these short personal vignettes along the way to give readers some contrast about where we are now with respect to these ideas, and where they came from. My intent is to make this book a bit more personal than my previous three. Hopefully you can understand where I'm coming from.

— Rollo Tomassi, 2020

### **Moral to the Manosphere • *The Rational Male*, March 23rd, 2012**

Putting angel's or devil's wings on observations hinders real understanding.

I don't say that because I think morality isn't important in the human experience, but because our interpretations of morality and justice are substantially influenced by the animalistic sides of our natures – often more than we're willing to admit to ourselves. Disassociating from an emotional reaction is difficult enough, but adding layers of moralism to an issue only confuses our understanding it and breaking it down into its constituent



parts. Emotion and, by degree, a sense of moralism, is also characteristic of the human experience, so there needs to be an accounting of this in the interpretations of issues that are as complex as the ones debated in what we today call the *Manosphere*.

I'm aware that observing a process will change that process, but it's been my practice not to draw moral conclusions in any analysis I make because it adds bias where none is necessary. The problem is that what I (and others in this sphere) propose is so raw it offends ego-invested sensibilities in people. Offense isn't my intent, but it's often the result of dissecting cherished beliefs that seem to contribute to the wellbeing of an individual.

Critics of the *Red Pill* would have you believe that what I propose seems nihilistic, cynical and conspiratorial because I'm analytical without the varnish of morality. For example, when I wrote my essay *War Brides* (in my first book), it was in response to men's common complaint about how deftly, and relatively unemotionally, women can transition into a new relationship after they'd been dumped by a girlfriend or a wife. I wanted to explore the reasons why and how this functioned, but from a moralistic perspective it is pretty cruel. Hypergamy selected-for women with an innate ability to feel little regret about divesting themselves emotionally from one man and fluidly move on to another. There are a lot of ugly aspects of our evolved natures, but if I approach the topic in a fashion that starts with, "*isn't it very unjust and / or immoral that women can move on more easily than men?*" not only is my premise biased, but I'd be analyzing the moral implications of the dynamic and not the dynamic itself.

I always run the risk of coming off as insensitive because in analyzing things it's always my practice to strip away that moral veneer. It challenges ego-investments, and when that happens people interpret it as a personal attack because those ego-investments are uniquely attached to our personalities – and often our own wellbeing. Although there are many critics on 'team woman' shooting venom from the hip as to what my emphasis on the feminine is "really about", don't think that iconoclasm is limited to the female side of the field. I catch as much or more hate from the *Manosphere* when I post something about how **Looks** do count for men or how the importance women place on a man's physique is more stringent and static than any beauty standards men have for women.

If you choose to derive your personal worth from some sense of what sex '*should*' mean, more power to you. But I find it's a much healthier position to accept a balance between our carnal natures and our higher aspirations. It's not one or the other as far as I'm concerned. It's okay to want to have sex just for the sake of pleasure – sex doesn't have to be some source of existential meaning. If you think it means something more, then, that's your own subjective take – even in marriage there's '*duty sex*' and there's memorable, significant, *meaningful* sex – but it's a mistake to think that the totality of the physical act must be of some cosmic significance as a part of one's moral, existential, understanding.

It is equally unhealthy to convince oneself that self-repressions are virtues as it is to think that unfettered indulgences are freedoms.

**There is a balance.**

*Why do my eyes hurt?*

*You've never used them before.*



# BOOK I

## THE NEW ENLIGHTENMENT



## RISE OF A NEW ORDER

Around 1440 a new invention was developed that would revolutionize the way that human beings would communicate and process information. By 1500 movable type and the printing press would be responsible for more than 20 million volumes throughout Western Europe and usher in an age of communication unprecedented in human history. For the first time human beings had access to information that, until then, had only been passed down via manuscripts or oral histories. The *Gutenberg Press* was an invention that *literally* changed the world.

For the first time in history men had increasingly more access to information, of all kinds, that had either been denied to them, or simply never had existed in prior eras. In the 16th century printing spread further; its output has been estimated at about 150 - 200 million volumes. In Renaissance era Europe the age of *mass communication* had begun and was largely responsible for what would be called the ***Age of Enlightenment***. As this new medium spread, along with it came the relatively unrestricted spread of new ideas and access to information that led to social upheaval which could never have been instigated without it. Literacy increased, thus breaking a monopoly the *elites* held on education, information and religion. By the 19th century steam powered presses would produce media at an industrial scale, and with it began a new age of mass information.

You'll have to forgive this history lesson right from the start, but it's necessary to illustrate a perspective that will be the primary theme of this book. At various stages in human development there are revolutionary inventions that alter the course of history. The most significant of those world-changing inventions are the ones that open the human experience up to a better understanding of the true natures of those experiences. They are the inventions that unplug us from the *Matrix* of what until then we were conditioned to believe was 'true' about the world, true about our natures, true about the expectations we could have for our lives, and gives us a new *awareness*. They are the inventions that grant us, as a species, access to information that help us live differently. If there is a figurative definition of the *Red Pill* it is the means of transitioning from oblivious ignorance into a more complete, verifiable, understanding of the realities of our existence.



We wake up. Call that *enlightenment* if you like, but at various stages of human evolution we come across another apple in the ***Garden of Eden*** – another piece of fruit from the Tree of Knowledge in the center of the garden.

However, that awakening to what we've been ignorant of is not without its cost.

*Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the Lord God had made. He said to the woman, “Did God really say, ‘You must not eat from any tree in the garden’?”*

*The woman said to the serpent, “We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden, but God did say, ‘You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.’”*

*“You will not certainly die,” the serpent said to the woman. “For God knows that when you eat from it **your eyes will be opened**, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil.”*

*When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it. Then **the eyes of both of them were opened**, and they realized they were naked; so they sewed fig leaves together and made coverings for themselves.*

*[...] And the Lord God said, “The man has now become like one of us, knowing good and evil. He must not be allowed to reach out his hand and take also from the tree of life and eat, and live forever.” So the Lord God banished him from the Garden of Eden to work the ground from which he had been taken. After he drove the man out, he placed on the east side of the Garden of Eden cherubim and a flaming sword flashing back and forth to guard the way to the tree of life.*

– Genesis 3:1-6 & 22-24

In my first book, *The Rational Male*, I made this observation in an essay titled *The Bitter Taste of the Red Pill*:

*The truth will set you free, but it doesn't make truth hurt any less, nor does it make truth any prettier, and it certainly doesn't absolve you of the responsibilities that truth requires. One of the biggest obstacles guys face in unplugging is accepting the hard truths that Game forces upon them. Among these is bearing the burden of realizing what you've been conditioned to believe for so long were comfortable ideals and loving expectations are really liabilities. Call them lies if you want, but there's a certain hopeless nihilism that accompanies describing what really amounts to a system that you are now cut away from. It is not that you're hopeless, it's that you lack the insight at this point to see that you can create hope in a new system – one in which you have more direct control over.*

A difficult aspect of learning about what we call the *Red Pill* – understanding ‘new’ truths about men and women’s nature, and intersexual dynamics – is men accepting that what they had been conditioned to believe about women for most of their lives was largely inaccurate. Men simply reject this new data, or sometimes avoid the questions that lead to that data. It upsets their invested beliefs about what they can expect from women, and themselves, and often it conflicts with how they’ve molded their lives around the presumption of the old *Blue Pill* data being accurate. This is a high price to pay for *enlightenment*. Realizing that the hopes and ambitions you had for life, and maybe the decisions you already made, were founded on ***old order*** data. The idealism men put their faith in is confounded by this new data. *Their eyes are opened* and it’s uncomfortable.

I begin all my books with a quote from the first *Matrix* movie. After Neo is unplugged and his atrophied body is being rebuilt by Morpheus. Neo he asks, “*Why do my eyes hurt?*” to which Morpheus replies “***Because you’ve never used them before.***” This used to be my profile signature when I was a moderator on the *SoSuave* seduction forums in the early 2000s. I thought it

was profound then because it encapsulated what men go through when they come into this new awareness. It hurts to use their new eyes. They've never used them, and now they can't unsee what's revealed to them.

In Genesis the price of (forbidden) knowledge was world-changing consequences. This is a common theme in mankind's legends and mythology. The Allegory of the Cave, the legend of the Phoenix, Adam and Eve partaking of the fruit. Change, for better or worse, is the price of knowing something more than what was thought to be truth before. With that knowledge comes liabilities. The truth hurts because it forces us to change accordingly. Whether it's banishment from the Garden or the despondency that comes from realizing what you thought you knew was in error – or was part of a system designed to keep you ignorant – the price is usually an uncomfortable change. After the Covid Pandemic in 2020-21 much has changed, most of it very uncomfortable. An old order system is passing away. Human progress has been punctuated by moments in history that changed everything. In almost every instance that change was prompted by an invention, a circumstance or an idea that led to new ways of *knowing* things. Some good, some not so good. In the most significant instances that new access to knowledge helped us to see what we truly were, and how we came to be it, before we made that change. A common criticism of the *Red Pill* is that it provokes men to anger. Critics mistakenly believe this anger is singularly directed at women, but the truth is that most men get angry with themselves simply for believing what they did for so long. They're angry at not having realized the error of this prior information sooner. The lament comes from a loss of personal potential they might have realized had they known then what they do now. From a *Red Pill* perspective this anger is a necessary stage in coming to terms with cutting oneself away from an *old order* thinking about women, sex, family formation and their role in a *Blue Pill* social order.

## The Old Order

I can remember a time back in the 1980s when I would visit my mother for a weekend, and she'd insist my brother and I go to her church on Sundays. At this point in her life she was very much an Evangelical Christian (later a confirmed Catholic). I would go with her because my mom's side of the family had always been the religious side, and that was just part of who my mom was. I did have a basic faith in God and Christianity at the time, but my father was a card carrying Atheist (and nominal Unitarian) for his whole life, so I had a pretty eclectic religious education when I was a teenager.

My father was a skeptic and much of my own *inquisitive* nature was indirectly influenced by him. I can remember going to my mom's church and suffering through the worship music to get to the sermon. I enjoyed the sermons because they gave me something to chew on intellectually. Not that the 15 year old *Rollo* was much of a thinker at that time, but I always had basic questions for these guys after the sermon. When I got a bit older, in my early 20s, I started wondering who these '*pastors*' really were as people and what made them qualified to deliver sermons and presume to speak for God. I really wanted to talk with these guys, but doing so meant I had to sit through their hard-sell about how *Jesus* had saved them from themselves. I thought this was kind of silly considering most of these guys weren't that much older than me. How hard a life could these guys really have lived by 26?

These pastors weren't used to having to engage with their congregations beyond what was required of them to maintain appearances. I don't mean they were inaccessible; most of them had something outside of church that kept them involved with people. Prior to the internet the way a pastor, or a church, did business usually centered on a man delivering a message (presumably inspired by God) and then shaking hands with the faithful after the sermon was over as they filed out the door. End of sermon. End of discussion. If you wanted to talk about the particulars of a sermon, or, heaven forbid, critique the interpretation or message in some way, that was a conversation relegated to the faithful in your family or perhaps a *home group* discussion. Assuming you were in a home group or had a few peers

you could discuss it with, you always risked running afoul of someone whose ego-investments in his/her faith would put them on edge by you questioning it. The *old order* of religion, and not just Christianity, used to be based on respecting the man delivering that message as God's ordained spokesman, or reading whatever book he might've published, processing it yourself, or with a handful of other believers, sussing things out and waiting for the next message on Sunday. For the average believer there was very little *engagement* about articles of faith or doctrine unless you were a guy on the inside. You had to be interested enough to go to seminary, something like *Liberty University*, or have the dedication to major in philosophy against all sane reason to try to make a living with a degree from either. Even in the 1990s mainstream religion had a definite barrier to entry for the laity.

All of this changed with the advent of the internet and the globalization of mass media and communication. Today, there's hardly a pastor (mainstream or amateur) who doesn't have a blog or a ***YouTube*** channel on which he (or she) contemplates his last/next sermon. Most have aspirations of being religious-pundits. In the 80s-90s even the most introspective religious leader would have only a handful of people to bounce ideas off, but today a sermon is basically focus-grouped before most pastors walk up to the pulpit on a Sunday. In fact, the business of religion has become so commercialized that there are online apps to help a budding pastor with pre-written sermons to deliver. Meanwhile, that same pastor has to be concerned with his *engagement* on multiple social media accounts discussing everything from religion, to politics, to praying for his favorite NFL team to make the playoffs.

And these are just the mainstream, commercialized religions of today. Even *old order* orthodox religions have to contend with the influence of the new order of technology on the incoming generations of *Believers*. The *old order* ways of how religion was done has given way to a new, globalized process of how we do religion. Today, anyone, believer or not, has 24 hour access to that religious '***influencer***'. Didn't like the message? Thought the interpretation was inaccurate? Think your youth group leader is a misogynist? You can tell him on his church's blog comments or fire off a tweet to start a discussion about it before he can even drive home from church on Sunday. This is the age of globalized engagement – and this new

paradigm is fundamentally altering *old order* institutions. What the *Gutenberg Press* did for religion by publishing the Bible for the masses, now the internet has done for the *old order* way in which people can engage with the process of their beliefs – and not just religious belief. The *new order* access extends to politicians, public utilities, corporate interests, etc. – practically any *old order* institution that enjoyed a degree of 4<sup>th</sup> wall separation from the populace must now contend with a global discussion of the public impression of their company or leaders' character. The world is one big *Yelp* review thread now.

## The New Enlightenment

In February of 2019 I wrote an essay about the *Global Sexual Marketplace*. In that piece I described how globalization isn't just about economics or demographics – globalization also applies to intersexual dynamics. Gone are the days when a young man or young woman could expect to meet one of the handful of eligible, single people in their high school, small town or limited social circle with whom to pair off and start a family with. In the *old order* young people were stuck with the choices of a limited, *Local* sexual marketplace. Today, with our instant, robust, forms of digital communication, a worldwide sexual marketplace has now opened up the romantic prospects of virtually anyone on planet earth with a smartphone and an internet connection. Don't like your prospects in your hometown? Now there's a whole world of men and women waiting to meet you. The *old order* of intersexual dynamics – and the old social contracts that the *Blue Pill* raised you to believe were still valid – has fundamentally shifted, and all in less than 20 years.

The rapidity of this shift is what I believe is at the root of the problems that surround the new way of doing the *old order* institutions. As a global society we are still reluctant to let go of the, now apparent, falsehoods of those *old order* institutions; even in light of the new order evidences and data collected as a result of this unprecedented access. While we attempt to reconcile our old beliefs with what a global information network confronts them with, we cling evermore tightly to what we thought we knew. This is a difficult transition because it formed the foundation of who we were in the prior order. And as we try to make sense of it we are presented with both true and false narratives that pander to the fact that this information and technology is progressing at a rate that most human minds were never evolved to keep pace with.

In 2020 my good friend and author, *Aaron Clarey*, published a tour de force article on women entering into and dominating the future direction of Corporate America. *Aaron* made the case that men ought to welcome this change. For a pro-conventional masculinity guy I thought the premise was counterintuitive. After I'd finished reading it I was struck with the idea that

what *Clarey* was on to was describing an *old order* institution (Corporate America) and how we still perceived it from an old way of understanding it. On the surface it seems counterintuitive to think of women assuming authority over what was formerly the *Male Space* of Corporate Culture was a good thing. *Aaron* was being facetious for the whole essay, but his point was really this: women have coveted the reigns of Corporate America for a long time now. However, their feminist thirst for power (*Fempowerment*) is based on an *old order* understanding of what Corporate America really is, or will eventually become. Like a debutant late to the party, the status and prestige that the *Feminine Imperative* makes women believe is inherent in Corporate America is all *old order* pabulum. So, yeah, have at it ladies. The information age has stripped back the curtains on the Corporate America you assumed all that student debt to participate in.

Academia is another area in which this *old order* vs. *New Enlightenment* understanding is taking place. Prior to 2000, if you heard that a university professor had a reputation for being tough, you had to get it from a third party. In this day we have *rate-the-professor.com* or something similar. Now you can determine how well a teacher performed from students who took their classes, maybe from a decade ago. Didn't like the service at a local restaurant? *Yelp.com* gives you instant access to speak your piece in destroying their reputation. *Glassdoor.com* is an aggregate of current and ex-employees ratings over the work environment of damn near any company today. There are other sites that do similar things to a business's performance. As a result, companies hire specialized personnel to maintain their online reputations – and this is the paranoia that comes from presuming *old order* impressions of a company are in any way relevant in a new order paradigm.



## Analog Thinking vs. Digital Thinking

***“In the future, everything that can be digital will be digital.”***

I’m not sure who originated this quote, but I can remember it being tossed around in graphic design circles as early as 1993. Back then the print industry was transitioning to an all-digital workflow. *Adobe Photoshop* was in version 3.0 (when I started using it) and a program called *QuarkXpress* was revolutionizing pagination for every print publication at the time. The writing was on the wall for the old guard designers and printers – evolve or die. I was fortunate to be coming into my early career on the cusp of the *old order* traditional ways of creating ads and publications (stat cameras and pasteup galleys) and learning their digital equivalents in design software applications. I had to get real good, real quick, in a dozen different design areas, not only in terms of understanding the hardware, software and networking, but also in using it to create effective, creative, advertising. A lot of my contemporaries struggled with this transition. My mentors were old school designers. They taught me the art of effective advertising, but they couldn’t teach me the new tech that was changing every 6-8 months. Whereas in the *old order* a design agency only focused on print media and employed a full complement of professionals for each aspect of production (photography, typography, pasteup, pressmen, etc.), now *I* was responsible for all of these jobs, and more to come as the internet opened up new media to ‘*desktop publishers*’ like me. Print became only one thing I had to do well. Video, web design, animation, UX interface, audio production and creating custom apps are just some of the new order skills I had to develop.

I had to get real good, real fast, and maintain my creative edge all while expanding into new areas and methods of producing what I did. The *old order* designers either adapted or went extinct. Since the early 90s this narrative has played out across countless other professions and trades. I remember listening to *Lars Ulrich* from the band *Metallica* complain about how a new software called *Napster’s* peer-to-peer file sharing of MP3s was

going to be the death of the music industry. Although it wasn't actually *Napster* in the end, he was right. The *old order* musicians weren't ready to accept the realities of "***everything that can be digital will be digital***". The analog business models, and analog thinking, that formed the basis of who we are as a society are still in place today. In some respects we can force-fit those *old order* ideas into our new order digital reality, but eventually that old thinking shows its age. College professors, church pastors, your 9-5 corporate American cubicle supervisor, the self-help *Guru* or 'life coach' you think has some sort of relevance, and the old pop psychologist whose heyday was in the last millennium — all these personalities, and an endless number more, are all struggling to stay relevant against the currents of information that the new order of digital thinking confronts them with.

It's not that these people are luddites. They embrace the technology and new means of disseminating their craft, their ideas, their ideologies, in the digital age. It's that their thinking is still mired in the *analog age* – an age in which ideas were formed on information that was limited to what generations that came before them could gather with the means ***they*** had available then. The ideas of an analog age are what we're presently trying to force-fit into the new understanding presented to us by this digital age. We enjoy the luxuries, sensations and entertainments that the digital affords us, but we immerse ourselves in it without realizing how our *old order* thinking defines ***why*** we enjoy it. Our analog selves – the product of millennia of evolution – still defines what our digital selves are without realizing the dangers inherent in our engaging with it. As such, we get digital addictions – like ubiquitous pornography or obsessive social media 'engagement' compulsions. Moreover, we make our analog selves dependent on a digital economy. In some ways we're simply not evolved enough to handle this rapid digital future, so we look for short-cuts to keep pace with it. Never has humanity been more vulnerable to the industrial-scale pandering to our innate natures by commercial interests than today.

Today's ***YouTube*** content producers now rely on what used to be their '***side hustle***' revenue to pay their bills. How many self-published authors have quit their day jobs to write for their new employer *Amazon* (*Amazon* owns 86% of the publishing market today)? How many former cubicle workers decided it was more lucrative to start an internet business than continue slaving away at a decaying corporate gig that only made their

bosses rich? In a *gig economy* we'll readily shift to the digital world to sustain us financially – in the end we don't have much choice – but it's the *old order* thinking that pervades this new “reality” and causes problems.

The number one way that couples meet, since 2005, is online; usually via apps like *Tinder* or *Match.com* or other social media based ways. *Instagram* is actually the primary means by which we evaluate a potential paramour today – a parallel to how employers screen prospective employees. Gone are the days of boy-meets-girl, eyes fixed on each other across a crowded high school gym dance floor. Gone are the days of meeting your “*Bride*” at church camp. Those are now quaint *old order* romanticisms, and ones that we still want to force-fit into our new order reality. We dream in analog, but we date in digital – if you can even call it *dating* anymore. In no other aspect of life have new order, digital, changes affected our cultures more significantly than in how we meet, mate, fall in love and form families. Future generations, quite literally, are depending on how we manage this.

## Barriers to Entry

Another thing I did at age 15 was play a lot of guitar. My teenage, *MTV* fueled, mind really had a love for music. The heavier the better. But the barrier to becoming a “Guitar God” like my heroes was something that was very prohibitive at that time. If you wanted to get good; good enough to actually get a band going, you had to seek out a guitar instructor at the local music store who hopefully shared your taste in music. Beyond a once-a-week, 1-hour lesson, you had no other means of learning an instrument than practicing on your own, buying a book of guitar tablature from the music store, or endlessly wearing down a cassette tape by going back over the song you wanted to learn again and again. All this was the process of learning to play just a song you liked. I had to learn how to compose a song, write some lyrics, form a band, learn to promote it, and somehow figure out how to scrape up enough money to record a demo in an expensive recording studio. The barrier to entry was very steep. You had to love the art so much that you would dedicate a good portion of your life to mastering it. Getting good required sacrifice, but it was all part of a process.

Today, on *YouTube* I can find a 9 year old girl in a country I’ve never heard of before play *Eruption* by *Eddie Van Halen*, note for note, because she learned it from another *YouTube* “content provider”. Every expensive aspect of music recording, mixing and production that I had to pay a professional producer for in 1990 I can now do myself on an iMac. At no other time in history have we had more resources to learn how to become competent in, if not master, virtually anything than today. We have access to the entire world’s aggregate of information in a device that fits in our pocket. In his book, *Mastery*, author *Robert Greene* describes how the barriers to entry into previously prohibitive arenas of life are virtually gone in the digital age. Just like the music industry of the 60s through the 90s, *old order* industries and institutions have had to cope with the restructuring of their businesses and lifestyles as new generations of digital savvy (if not digital thinking) people become competent in what took previous generations decades of perseverance to master themselves. What we see in this shift is the Barons of the *old order* media, industries and institutions –

who jealously guarded access to their systems – attempt to force-fit their analog thinking into a new digital mold. The principles developed in the *old order* are simply vestiges of a way of thinking that worked well enough under the circumstances, and given the access to information, of that time.

As a result, conflicts arise between the principles of the *old order* and the practicalities of the new order. When *Über* revolutionized the idea of ride-sharing in the digital age, *old order* taxi companies enlisted every legal tool in their arsenal to fight the inevitability of their old revenue model disappearing. We see the same scenario play out in everything that can be digital becoming digital now. Even the *old order* institutions that built their mastery and prosperity on a successful pivot to the new order digital (the early dot coms) are finding that still-newer aspects of the digital economy threaten the successes of their initially successful pivot.

## Content is King

Mastery is now easier to attain than at any other time in human history. The *old order*, analog thinking, *Masters* strictly limited teaching their secrets to anyone but the most worthy of apprentices. Those apprentices had to have the most serious dedication to their arts and interests and would likely do menial tasks for much of their apprenticeships just to be in the presence of their mentors. That hard-won mastery is fading in the digital age. That's not to say that practice and dedication aren't still necessary for mastery today, but the barriers are largely removed. Due to this, we are encountering a generation of self-appointed "*masters*" in arenas wherein previously just the title of that position implied respectability. Again, *old order* thinking predisposes us to believe that if a self-declared master online grants himself a title we should presume he/she "*did the work*" necessary to earn that title. For all this easy access to "*mastery*" in information-based skills, what we find lacking is real, valuable content — true insight, acknowledged genius, masterwork art, novel ideas and innovations. It's great that we have access to the tool boxes of *old order* masters, but what do we actually build with those tools?

Thus far, not much.

Mostly these tools are used to build rehashes of *old order* ideas to be sold as something novel in the digital age. When I'm critical of the *Success Porn* hucksters of this digital age – the self-help, motivational speakers grift – what I'm really drawing attention to is the reselling of *old order*, tired ideals. Motivational speakers, New Age Gurus, the self-help "*coaches*" of today, are selling the same *old order* thinking in a more convenient, more easily disseminated, digital method. The content is old. The religion is old. The thinking is old, and it is thinking that is still firmly rooted in an *old order* understanding of how the world *ought* to be based on the limited information sets available to the people who created that thinking in their time. This ease and simplicity of the digital new order makes us lazy. For all of the access we have now, for all of the information we have, we've never

been more unmotivated, lethargic and uncreative. The process of mastery, and the process and dedication needed to attain it, used to contribute to the creative process required to use it. Today, we've never been less creative in our thinking. It's why we keep returning to *old order* stories and movie franchises – and ruin them by inserting presumptions of new order ideals into them. We just retell the same *old order* thinking in stories with more advanced and colorful ways using the technology of the digital order. But we just repeat ourselves; or we add some social justice twist to stories that were timeless because, in the *old order*, the art took precedence over any other considerations – including the fragile sensibilities of new order generations.

## The Red Pill

In the earliest days of the seduction community the forums that sprang up around men looking for access to easy sex was an extension of this *old order* vs. new order thinking. Global online conversation forums dedicated to *Game*, pickup artistry, getting to sex with women and dating were a predictable application of men attempting to solve *old order* problems (getting laid) with new order information. Men in particular have always wanted to figure this out. As expected, they coalesced and compared notes across the planet, each sharing their personal experiences with other men. Along the way they would further combine that experience with readily available data from psychology, anthropology, sociology, evolutionary theory and other related fields to provide a global aggregate of information on intersexual dynamics greater than had ever been available in any prior era.

*The body of infield evidence collected by 15 years of PUA is far more reliable and valid than anything social science has ever produced on seduction.*

— Nick Krauser

The early Pickup Artists weren't concerned with the ethical implications of what amounted to a global-scale social experiment in developing and refining *Game*. The PUAs of the early 2000s (and even their contemporaries today) took it upon themselves to use the '*field*' of modern social environments to learn about intersexual dynamics and, by association, women and men's natures in ways that no psychologist or sociologist would ethically consider. Up until 2001 men had to figure out the dynamics between themselves and what women were gradually becoming since the time of the *Sexual Revolution* (1965). And most of that "*figuring it out*" was based on limited (often socially restricted) information that assumed *old order* thinking was valid. The old challenges of understanding ourselves doesn't change, but the way we think about those challenges is always in



constant flux; and that change has become increasingly more rapid in this global age.

With that change comes conflict with the *old order* thinking. With each new *Apple* that falls from the Tree of Knowledge, conflict with the standards previously set according to the old data is the price we pay for that new knowledge. In terms of the *Red Pill*, *old order* thinking usually manifests itself as half-measures. It becomes a comforting mashup of *Purple Pill* regressiveness born of a reluctance to let go of the pretty lies. Often times the new *Red Pill* awareness conflicts with the *old order* thinking that present generations have based their entire existences on. They refuse to acknowledge the data we have access to now which we didn't when they were forming beliefs and ideals that would in turn form their personalities and ego-investments. Of course, there are certain timeless truths that don't change, but we must hold "*common sense*" to the same scrutiny we would apply to new ideas in this age. When I identify a person or a concept as *Purple Pill* this is what I mean by it. Usually, it is an *old order* comforting ideal being force-fit to conform to align with new order data.

We desperately want our belief sets, our ideals, to be confirmed by the information we have access to in the digital age. Indeed, one of the first things religious men insist upon is that their particular religion already had this *Red Pill stuff* figured out a long time ago. In some ways the ***wisdom of the ancients*** got a lot right with respect to men and women's natures, and most *believers* want to stress that contemporary societies have just turned from this *old order* wisdom to their own detriment. Sometimes this happens, and we feel validated for it, but more often we see that our efforts in building a life according to the old social contract or an *old order* way of understanding ourselves in the world is called into question, if not invalidated. This is what either builds us up anew or forces us into stagnation in our lives.

The *Red Pill* has been redefined in many ways on many occasions over the past 20 years to fit the sensibilities of people who really want to give a new validity to whatever pet ideology they think it should apply to. The *Red Pill* becomes an easy brand that no one really owns, but is made readily available to any ideologue. Most of these people have no business calling anything "*red pill*", but they're attracted to the concept as a proxy term for '**truth**'. That *truth* is subjective to their own individual belief-set, and the

new order convenience of low-entry-cost social media platforms have made it easier to broadcast *their* truth – or lambast non-believers for questioning it – than at any other time in human history. Just as it’s never been easier to access information to better our lives with, so too has it never been easier to broadcast an ideology.

From the earliest days of the seduction community, we used the *Matrix* movie analogies to describe how a guy who still believed in his *old order* understanding (his conditioning) of intersexual dynamics was stuck in his ignorance. The old way of thinking about women – that up to that point was based on limited and largely inaccurate information – was still what a *Blue Pill* guy would accept as reality. It required a guy to “unplug” himself from that old order-informed way of thinking, and transition to a new awareness of intersexual dynamics. Hopefully that guy could live a better life (even save his own life) by using the information in that new order tool box. Thus, we have the *Red Pill* analogy, but what the *Red Pill* really describes is exactly the casting off of an *old order* ignorance in favor of a new order thinking predicated on information we were limited by or restricted from in prior ages.

Since 2000 we’ve been entering a new, digital *Age of Enlightenment*. I know a lot of the *Manosphere* would tell us we’re heading for a new *Dark Ages* of social degeneracy and decay, but this has been a long time coming. Enjoy the decline, right? If this is true and we are spiraling towards more ignorance, depravity and superstition on a now globalized scale it will be the result of not changing our ways of thinking according to the **new data** we have access to today. It will also depend on our ability to critically think about that data. It’s never been easier to become what we want to become today, but with that facility comes lethargy, a lack of creativity and insight, and easy access to self-gratifying sedation. Just because we’ve been enlightened by this new, globalizing knowledge-base doesn’t mean we know how to apply it. If we do enter a *decline* it will be the result of an inability to unplug from a comforting *old order* way of thinking. This challenge applies in equal measure to both the *liberal leftist* and the *traditional conservative* mindsets. Both ideologies suffer from an unwillingness to alter or adjust their belief-sets according to new order data.

To do so would be a betrayal to their individual “religions”.



## **BELIEVERS**

*“My dear, the real truth always sounds improbable, do you know that? To make the truth sound probable you must always mix in some falsehood with it. Men have always done so.”*

*— Fyodor Dostoevsky, Demons*

## Believers & Empiricists

**F**or a long time now there's been an ideological *schism* in the Manosphere. Religious conviction combined with ego-investments in *Blue Pill* social conditioning make *Red Pill truths* difficult to consider for men who've built lives around what their religious belief has taught them about women, sex, family and where they *should* fit into all of it . You simply cannot introduce men to a worldwide consortium of data, experiences and opinions on women and intersexual dynamics without having this new information challenge their ideology. Long-held religious beliefs become intrinsic parts of people's personality – thus, a challenge to belief has the potential to become a crisis of identity for true *Believers*. By definition, faith requires tests of the *believer* and the most adamant of Blue Pill believers initially see what the *Red Pill* challenges them with as a test of that faith, not just in religion, but a test of how Blue Pill social conditioning fits into that faith.

The definitions of what constitutes a *Red Pill* awareness versus a *Blue Pill* outlook on intersexual dynamics are always going to be contentious and subjective to the individual man. The “red pill” and the “blue pill” have become so distorted over the years that as terms, as loose brands, they're becoming meaningless. The original analogy in the *Matrix* movies that the early seduction communities co-opted used to refer to the belief sets men had about intersexual dynamics (living in the *Matrix*) they were taught by a larger social order. Anyone who's read my work or has heard me opine about these terms knows what my own interpretations are. However, far too many disingenuous actors have entered the *Red Pill community* each with an interest in shifting those definitions to cater to their pet ideologies – political, social, racial, religious and psychological. The new order information that *Red Pill* awareness brings is so jarring to their ego-investments *believers* are left with only three options: complete denial, abandoning faith entirely, or finding commonalities between *Red Pill* data and what aligns with their ideology and discarding or disqualifying the parts that are inconvenient.

To do this *believers* had to convince themselves that what the *Red Pill* represents is ideological rather than praxeological. In fact, converting the *Red Pill* to be interpreted as an ***Ideology*** rather than a ***Praxeology*** (or a *heuristic* if you prefer), founded in an objective understanding of intersexual dynamics, has been their primary goal. In truth, turning the harsh realities of the *Red Pill* into an ideology is the only way most *believers* can understand it. You cannot prove a metaphysical truth with physical evidence any more than you can prove a physical truth with metaphysical ‘*evidence*’ – but that doesn’t mean the faith won’t see trying to do so as a test of faith. Ideology is often the only language they speak. It is a mistake to call the *Red Pill* an “ideology”, thus similar to feminist or any other ideology. Comparing “*the red pill*” to a male parallel to feminism has been a common dismissal tactic by critics. If it’s an ideology, then *red pill* can just be dismissed as bitter men looking for the same victimhood bone feminism has been gnawing on for over a century. The thing is, the *Red Pill* isn't an *ideology*, it's a *praxeology*. Why does that matter? Isn't that just an intellectual technicality? Actually, it makes all the difference:

***Ideologies*** are belief systems which hold up ideals, what *should* be - moral, ethical, social - as standards by which to live or guide human’s interests. Humanism, Marxism, religion, *Chivalry* and the *Boy Scout* credo are all ideologies. They establish higher meaning toward which we *should* aspire to, and celebrating unifying beliefs that, in theory, should guide our lives. Sometimes ideologies spring from practical, empirical wisdoms, but mostly they are deontological — actions are either good or bad according to a set of rules irrespective of the consequences of those actions.

***Praxeologies*** are not systems of belief, they are systems of practice. They are not concerned with whether or not something lives up to a preconceived ideal, they are concerned with whether or not something actually works. Engineering, car repair, computer science, deep sea fishing, and first aid are all *praxeologies*. The *Red Pill* is a praxeology, not an ideology. My good friend Rian Stone once said, “*It’s useful to think of the Red Pill as the Chilton (Auto) Manual of intersexual dynamics.*” For the sake of simplicity we can just go with the definition posted by Wikipedia:

***"Praxeology is the deductive study of human action based on the action axiom. An action axiom is an axiom that embodies a criterion for***

*recommending action. Action axioms are of the form "If a condition holds, then the following should be done."*

As a praxeology, the loose science of intersexual dynamics that the *Red Pill* presents provides men (and women) with a predictive framework around which we can form a set of *best practices* (i.e. *Game*). The *Red Pill* is the theory and *Game* is the experimentation and/or practice. Each is incomplete without the other. The *Red Pill* / *Game* is the deductive study of human sexuality and its relational behavior based on the action axiom – "*If a condition holds, then the following should be done.*" As a praxeology there is no conflict between the *Red Pill* and morality; it is not a hard science, nor is it a moral code to live by. Rather, it is simply using deductive reasoning to come up with action axiom's to describe the hows and whys of human intersexual dynamics and mating behaviors. If those axioms prove invalid then new axioms are developed (*Game*) to reflect a better understanding that the *Red Pill* provides.

All this ideological redefining has done (sometimes deliberately) is confuse the purpose of understanding gender interrelations by inserting ideological language into the mix. Often this is an effort at reprioritizing how interpreting intersexual dynamics *ought* to be discussed based purely on moralistic interpretations. The conflict arises over the 'correct' way of approaching the observable facts and data the praxeology of the *Red Pill* presents to us. The focus becomes less about the facts and more about how they were acquired. So, moralists believe in one goal for the interpretation while objectivists see another. The result is we talk past each another because we're focused on different goal states. Then one disavows the other, goes off to broadcast what he thinks is truth – *his truth* according to his originating premise – and then builds a brand based on that redefinition of "*the red pill*" according to him.

*Red Pill* (empiricists) and *Blue Pill* (ideologists) people end up talking past one another because they cannot agree on what they should be debating *about*. The sets of values they hold are completely incompatible because they don't start from the same basis. They can't even agree on what a "*debate*" is, and what the goals of a "*debate*" really are.

*Red Pill* praxeologists generally bring the following assumptions to a debate:

- They believe that there is exactly one reality, and that truth is what accurately describes that reality. The better a statement describes reality, the more true it is. They are **factual absolutists**.
- They believe that whether something is “*good*” or “*bad*” is a matter of interpretation and opinion. Systems of morality are things societies invented to encourage a result. It is therefore pointless to argue about whether something is “*evil*” or not, instead of about what *effect* it has. They are **moral relativists**.
- The goal of a debate is to establish *what the facts are*, and how this knowledge can be used to predict and hopefully *control outcomes*. They **argue about what is true**.
- They believe that debates are a cooperative process between two or more people who have the shared goal of achieving a more accurate picture of absolute reality. While people may stick vehemently to their positions, they can also reverse them if new information comes to light, because the only real attachment is to the truth. They believe **debates occur between theories, not people**. Thus, **questioning someone’s character is off-limits** because it’s immaterial to the goal of objective truth.

*Blue Pill* ideologists generally bring the following assumptions to a debate:

- They believe that reality is subjective, and what is “*true*” is simply a matter of who you ask. What is called “*truth*” is simply a codification of someone’s perspective, and it is therefore pointless to argue about what is “*true*”. They are **factual relativists**.
- They believe that there is exactly one set of moral rules (*deontology*), which human beings have gradually discovered in a historical climb towards ethical perfection (*or degeneration*). Certain people are ethically better or worse based not only on what they do, but also on what they believe. They believe that different ethical systems exist, but they can be ranked from



ethically worst to ethically best based on a sort of meta-ethics whereby they can be tested for degree of compliance with the one absolute set of ethics that underlies reality. They are **moral absolutists**.

- The goal of debate is to establish what is morally better, and what everyone *should* do. They **argue about what is right**.
- They believe that debates are a competitive process between two people, who each have the goal of establishing their views about right and wrong by attaining a state of *moral ascendancy* over the other person. They believe that anyone who changes their views is revealing a flaw in their moral character (because their previous views were not morally correct), and must thereafter relinquish the moral high ground and submit their actions to the moral judgement of others (usually the person who won the *debate*). They believe **debates occur between people, not ideas**, for the specific purpose of establishing who should be allowed to set standards for the behavior of others. Thus, questioning someone's character is not only relevant, *it's the whole point*.

This is why *Blue Pill* adherents think “*those Red Pill guys*” are “*misogynists*” or bad people. They cannot imagine an analysis that does not occur for the purposes of judgement, much less one that doesn't include any idea about what people “*should*” do. This is also why the *Red Pill* insists that moralists are willfully ignorant. Because to them, anyone who doesn't admit the truth must be unable or unwilling to perceive it. They cannot imagine anyone not caring what *the* truth is.

Blue Pill ideologists think that *Red Pill* empiricists are trying to restore the Dark Ages. Any argument excluding a moral imperative seems like an endorsement of returning to a state of barbarism. This is why many *Red Pill* theories are dismissed as biological determinism by ideologists even though *Red Pill* theory almost always accounts for the human element of freewill. They cannot imagine any group with shared views not having one moral agenda they wish everyone to abide by. This also grates on the ideological principle of **personal responsibility** which requires freewill to be set above biological determinism. To the moral absolutist, the sheer objectivity of the

*Red Pill* implies that biology and evolution remove humans' capacity for choice, and by extension a *soul*. We become automatons, but instead of *the devil made me do it*, it's my selfish genes made me do it.

Again, this is why *Red Pill* empiricists think that *Blue Pill* adherents must be hopelessly bad at understanding human social structures. It's not that they always are, but they cannot imagine anyone not wanting to do things in the most effective way possible. For sake of example, consider the following *debate*:

- A *Red Pill* man's objective is to propose a process for making legal judgements about sexual consent or lack of it, which he believes will best serve what the majority of people desire to see these laws do. He looks at the issue as an *engineering problem*, and he *proposes a solution*.
- A *Blue Pill* man's objective is to establish whether or not the *Red Pill* man is a bad person. If he can be led to agree to a statement which the *Blue Pill* man thinks of as a diagnostic of "evilness", then the debate can be won based on aligning with ideology. Thereafter anything the *Red Pill* man says can be dismissed as originating from an *evil person*.
- The *Blue Pill* man says, "*All this so you can justify getting laid.*" The *Blue Pill* guy thinks the *Red Pill* guy is trying to *justify* something according a set of deontological rules, because to the ideologist, every act has a moral valence, and anyone who wishes to do **anything** must at least be ready with a moral rationale for doing so.
- Meanwhile, the *Red Pill* empiricist has been arguing about which metaphors best illustrate human social and mating dynamics. The *Red Pill* does not address the issue of right or wrong at all, and presumes the *Blue Pill* ideologist is engaging with him mutually on factual level.

The *Red Pill* empiricist and the *Blue Pill* ideologist cannot agree on what the argument is about, because they don't speak the same deliberative language. The *Red Pill* thinks right and wrong are a matter of opinion; not

necessarily unimportant, but immaterial to determining objective truths. The *Blue Pill* only cares about what the facts are insofar as they confirm or conflict with his goal of determining right or wrong according to his moral framework. What I've seen in the Manosphere, in the past and present, is rooted in *factual relativists* attempting to establish what the "red pill" *ought* to mean to people, and thereby redefining it to suit their goal of couching any objective discussion in moralist terms. As the "red pill" has garnered popular appeal *factual relativists* want the *Red Pill* to be about what is right or wrong according to their ideological bent. Mix in the financial interests of making their ideological version of *red pill* their own personal brand and they will bend over backwards to reinterpret what is actually an objectivist exploration of intersexual dynamics to fit their '**interpretive headspace**'. Either that or they will simply write off the *Red Pill* wholesale and say "*Those Red Pill guys are just bitter, negative, hedonist, misogynists*"; a judgement evaluation which is exactly the moralist's goal in any *debate*.

The realities of a *Red Pill* staple like Hypergamy aren't *right* or *wrong*, they simply **are**. In any of my essays outlining Hypergamy, and for all my attempts to dispel the misconceptions about it, I've never once stated that Hypergamy was '*evil*' or that women's nature is evil because of it. It's simply a reproductive strategy that manifests per the realities of women's nature and needs. It's only *bad* or *good* depending on which end of the sharp stick a man finds himself on. The *factual relativists* respond to this in two ways:

First, is the nihilistic approach. Hypergamy conflicts with low value men's personal interests and ideological bent. Thus, Hypergamy, or women's inability (or unwillingness) to police the worst aspects of their innate mating strategy for their betterment, or humanity's betterment, makes women *evil*. Second, is the approbation approach. "*You talk about Hypergamy too much (or at all), it must be because you're fundamentally a bad, damaged, morally compromised person. Who hurt you?*" Just broaching a subject that doesn't align with their moral imperatives is viewed as an open endorsement of that subject. If you're talking about Satanism in any context other than complete approbation, no matter how objective or measured, you *are* a Satanist. This is the most increasingly common form of *factual relativism* in the age of social media where binary extremes are the basis of *Cancel Culture*. You're either for us or against us, and if you even

attempt to objectively dissect a topic we're against it means you're actually *for* that topic.

A debate never really occurs between these head-spaces because the goals of the debate are never the same. Now, add to all this that *factual relativists* are appropriating the 'red pill' as their own “***Brand of Me***” and build revenue streams around their ideological interpretation of its original intent. Any counter argument proffered by *factual absolutists* is not only a challenge to their ego-investments, today, it's also interpreted as an attack on their livelihoods.

In 2015, and again in 2018 I made these points:

*It's my opinion that red pill awareness needs to remain fundamentally apolitical, non-racial and non-religious because the moment the Red Pill is associated with any social or religious movement, you co-brand it with an ideology, and the validity of it will be written off along with any preconceptions associated with that specific ideology.*

*Furthermore, any co-branding will still be violently disowned by whatever ideology it's paired with because the Feminine Imperative has already co-opted and trumps the fundamentals of that ideology. The base truth is that the manosphere, pro-masculine thought, Red Pill awareness or its issues are an entity of its own.*

Unfortunately, **this** is exactly where we are at today in the modern 'Manosphere'. The reason I'm attacked with accusations of enforcing some *ideological purity* tests for the *Red Pill* is directly attributable to the mindset of the *factual relativists* whose livelihoods now depend upon the redefinition of whatever the Hell the “Red Pill” means to them or should mean to those who share the same ideology they broadcast it to. So, as *Rollo Tomassi*, I earn the title of 'Cult Leader' because their minds can only think in terms of ideology. Indeed, they can *only* argue against what the *Red Pill* challenges their faith-based ego-investments with if the *Red Pill* is an ideology.

This is why *believers* strive so hard to turn the praxeology of the *Red Pill* into an ideology – you cannot win a metaphysical argument with

physical evidence.

If the goal of the debate is to come to a workable, predictive, framework based on objective truth, and that truth challenges their belief in what they've based their lives on it forces them either into denial or into abandoning their belief set. This is why the factual relativist never leaves the ideological *Frame* in which they believe the debate should take place. Faced with the challenge of having empirical truths of new order data force them into adjusting their moral framework, the *factual relativist* must reduce the *Red Pill* to an ideology, a philosophy or an orthodoxy to maintain their belief set. Thus, we read accusations of the *Red Pill* being “feminism for men” (feminism being an actual ideology) or a philosophical *cult* with requisite purity tests and secret jargon for its *believers* to learn. As more *factual relativists* leverage the internet's new *Hustle Economy* to earn their livings the louder and more vehement these accusations become. Yes, I know, it is impossible to be entirely objective in anything. In fact, just the thought required in asking a particular question implies a particular subjective bias. You wouldn't be asking those kinds of questions if you didn't subscribe to some belief-set that caused you to think about them in the first place. Even a commitment to objective truth is itself perceived as a value judgement. What's worth your consideration is at least as important as why you think it's worth considering. I get it. It still doesn't mean we shouldn't try to be as objective as humanly possible, in spite of the pre-knowledge that we have underlying reasons for being curious about something.

## Objectivity vs. Ideology

What one does with the data the *Red Pill* praxeology aggregates, and how one interprets that information, is up to the individual. The prescriptions we create for ourselves with this knowledge are almost always a value call. The real question for men, new to the *Red Pill*, is are they beginning from a position of value judgement first and then seeking to find the *Red Pill* data that best aligns with that preconception? Or are they beginning from a neutral, objective position of interpreting this information and *then* forming well-thought, rational prescriptions for themselves based on that objectivity?

How we make this information useful to us is just as important as how we came to the conclusion that it should be useful to us. Having written in this ‘sphere for almost 20 years now I’ve come to see how men will use *Red Pill* awareness to either better serve (or save) their lives by changing their minds about themselves and implementing it, or they use this awareness to validate their preconceived belief-sets. Usually they do this by cherry-picking the parts that align with those beliefs and discarding or disqualifying the data that conflicts with them. This is how you get the *Purple Pill*. Accept just enough empirical *Red Pill* data to validate a belief-set rooted in their Blue Pill conditioning. And it’s made all the better if you can profit from pandering to those Blue Pill beliefs in others by calling yourself a ‘coach’ of some kind. PUAs, MGTOW, Men’s Rights Activists (MRAs), Trad-Cons, Positivity and *Success Porn* advocates, *Red Pill* Ministry Pastors, Father-Figure Fitness Coaches, Masculinity Psychologists, Female “*Relationship Experts*”, and a plethora of other sub-factions that reside in the ‘sphere are **all** founded upon belief-set **prescriptions**. Their subjective prescriptions either follow in the wake of *Red Pill* praxeology, or they find their preconceptions validated – in some part – by the data and awareness that the *Red Pill* brings to them.

When this information conflicts with these belief-prescriptions, that’s when we see *believers* attempt to redefine the *Red Pill* as an **ideology**. When a stark empirical truth challenges an ego-invested belief, most people feel attacked. That belief is often one that people have based their lives on, so challenging the belief is challenging the way that person has lived for a long

time. In terms of the *Red Pill*, it's much easier to redefine or reinterpret what that empirical data should *really* mean to a *real* man. And whenever we see words like *should* or *ought* we know we're dealing with a value judgement.

The only way a believer can protect an ego-investment challenged by *Red Pill* awareness is to reduce the *Red Pill* to an ideology. *Bring the enemy to battle on your own field and on your own terms*. So long as the *Red Pill* is just about objective observations, connecting dots and collating data, the right or the wrong of it, the value judgement of what *ought* to be, is irrelevant to discerning the truth. But if you can convince yourself and others that the *Red Pill* is in fact an ideological pursuit – not an objective pursuit – then you choose the terms of the battle. If the *Red Pill* can be redefined as a belief-set then you can lock horns with it with your own belief-set. Then the debate isn't about what *is*, it becomes about what's right or wrong, or what that data *should* mean, or how it *should* be put to proper use in a person's life. Hypergamy becomes less about women's nature, and more about how women are inherently predisposed to *evil* as a result of it. Alpha or Beta become defined by how well a man aligns with a preexisting belief-set – “*You're not a **real man** if you believe/don't believe this!*” – and the *Soulmate Myth* might become an article of faith that wins an ideological argument.

Redefine the premise of the *Red Pill* as an ideology and you can fight it as an ideology. But even if you could, the data the *Red Pill* presents still forces a lot of conflict in the *believer*. That leaves the *believer* to reconcile that data with the cognitive dissonance he/she feels about it. It is far more intrinsically satisfying to redefine, disqualify and then re-qualify information that confounds our beliefs than it is to go into outright denial of that conflicting data. Sometimes outright denial is all that's left. People resort to denial when recognizing that a truth would destroy something they hold dear; and there are few things we hold more dear than our investments in what we think are right and wrong, and especially with respect to how we solve our reproductive problem. You're more skeptical of things you don't want to believe and demand a higher level of proof. Denial is unconscious, or it wouldn't work: if you know you're closing your eyes to the truth, some part of you knows what the truth is, and denial can't perform its protective function. This is why we say, “*Once you've seen the code in the Matrix,*

*once you've taken the Red Pill, there's no going back."* One thing we all struggle to protect is a positive self-image. The more important the aspect of your self-image that's challenged by the truth, the more likely you are to go into a state of denial. If you have a strong sense of self-worth and competence your self-image can take the hits but remain largely intact. If you're beset by self-doubt, any acknowledgment of failure can be devastating and any admission of error painful to the point of being unthinkable. Self-justification and denial arise from the dissonance between believing you're competent, and making a mistake which clashes with that image.

The solution then becomes denying the mistake or *redefine the terms of the debate*. We're not playing *the* game; we're playing *my* game. It's not *the* truth, it's *my* truth.

By nature men are deductive problem solvers. This is manifest in many ways, but for a *Beta* male who still believes solving a woman's problems will lead to him solving his reproductive problem, more often than not it leads him to a worse life. Once a man unplugs and begins to internalize what a deeper, more accurate understanding of intersexual dynamics means to his life he's going to look for ways to apply it to his own circumstances. This is a natural, unavoidable progression. As I've stated in many an essay, *I'm not in the business of making better men*, I'm in the business of giving men the tools with which to build better lives for themselves. I expect men, at some stage, to use what they've learned from what I write to change their minds about themselves and become the better men they can be with a better awareness.

**Know this; at some stage of your unplugging you will necessarily have to reconcile the morals and beliefs you developed in your Blue Pill conditioning with the empirical data that the praxeology of the *Red Pill* presents to you. Resolving this is key to living in a *Red Pill* paradigm. An inability to resolve moral absolutism with factual absolutism is where most men choke on the *Red Pill*.**

I do not offer prescriptions. I do not have a one-size-fits-all formula or 12 rules that will help you live a better life. Most men want that formula,



and a lot of them will pay a small fortune to avoid the work necessary to effect a real change in their lives if some *coach* even hints that they have the cheat codes to do it. Steeping those cheat codes in *old order* moralism only sweetens the deal for *believing* men. They are sheep in search of a shepherd. I have precious few expectations of my readers, but one is that I expect you take it upon yourselves to be the artists of your own lives. If it frustrates you that I won't hold your hand and lead you to a better version of yourself just know that going through that frustration is necessary for you to **be your own man**; not an adherent of *Rollo Tomassi*, not an acolyte, but the author of your own decisions. A lifetime of Blue Pill conditioning has already attempted to remove that control from you for long enough.



## HEIRS OF A BLANK SLATE

*“Yeah, well, not all women are like that. Men do it too and they’re even worse!”*

*“People are people. Everyone is different, you can’t predict human behavior because we all have freewill.”*

*“What’s good for the goose is good for the gander.”*

*“Everyone is born equal.”*

*“If women are hypergamous, men must be too.”*

*“Double standards are so unfair.”*

**T**o understand how the *Red Pill* interprets a spiritual drive and the religions that are extensions of it, perhaps no other concept is more important to wrap your head around than the notion of the Blank Slate. The legacy of the Blank Slate has been one of the most pivotal influences on understanding intersexual dynamics for over the last century. In the time I’ve been writing I’ve covered egalitarian-equalism’s influence on *Blue Pill* conditioning on at least 5 occasions. In all of these essays I’ve made the case that what we consider the *Blue Pill*, and the perceptions it instills in us, is firmly rooted in a preconception that an egalitarian state between the sexes is not only possible, but eminently most desirable. In fact, I would argue that the presumption that an egalitarian state between men and women *should* be the ideal is the foundational premise of a *Blue Pill*-informed social order.

Since I began writing on these topics one thing I’ve experienced that underpins people’s understanding of intersexual dynamics is an endemic belief that men and women are *functional equals* – or, ideally, they *should* be – who exist in a state of disequilibrium caused by social conditions. This ***Equalism*** (my term) is akin to a religious belief, albeit one most people are unaware of. I first encountered this belief when I was in college.

Around the same time I discovered that among the most rational of my fellow students and professors in behavioral psychology, most clung to the *Soulmate Myth*: an irrational (and unscriptural) belief that there is one perfect *soul* that is a person's predestined perfect romantic match. This is the **One** that an inordinate amount of people are looking for in their mating quest. I also noticed that most of them held to the hope of an "*equal partnership*" with whomever their 'soulmate' turned out to be. Here I had some very empirical minds who would write thesis papers on human nature according to what we knew about evolutionary psychology, evo-bio, anthropology and sociology, yet they would readily revert to the Blank Slate hope that 'people are people' and we had all evolved past our innate natures when it came to finding their perfect '**One**'. The idea that humans have 'evolved beyond' our animal natures is the lynchpin in the modern belief of the Blank Slate. This is equally a conservative religious conviction as it is a spiritual-but-not-religious liberal conviction. While this notion may seem to be a uniquely religious one, I assure you, the idea of a 'higher order self' is alive and well in non-religious, scientific ideologies as well.

As a concept, what we know as the Blank Slate evolved from the Enlightenment Era idea of *Tabula Rasa*. Originally it was *Aristotle* who coined the term, then it passed through the Stoics, then other notable minds of antiquity, but the root of what it has come to mean today began in the Enlightenment Era (the first one) with *John Locke*. On paper it's a very ennobling idea. All people are born with the same intellectual (and later spiritual) potential; we're all the same, except for what society, environment and circumstance writes on the slate that is our intellect and personality. What has become the ideology of Social Constructionism is firmly rooted in the Blank Slate premise. My object here isn't to give you a history lesson, but if you're really interested in the development of how we got to our default, *equalist*, concept of the Blank Slate I'll refer you to *Steven Pinker's* great book *The Blank Slate, a Modern Denial of Human Nature*.

From the time of the Enlightenment the ideal of the Blank Slate has been embedded into our core cultural beliefs about human nature. It dovetails very nicely into the concept of freewill and it also satisfies the of hopefulness human beings needed to combat the kind of static determinism that might lead to self-destructive nihilism. It's exactly this human need for hope (all men are created equal) that makes the Blank Slate so appealing.

People hold a subconscious belief in the Blank Slate. We take it for granted to the point it becomes an ego-investment. When a belief is thoroughly internalized, it becomes the subconscious point from which people begin when it comes to understanding human nature. So challenging the validity of whether human's have an innate, somewhat static, evolved aspects to their natures – and their influences having a bearing on our decisions – borders on attacking their religion or who they are as a person. A default ego-investment in the Blank Slate is no exception to this attack.

From a *Red Pill* perspective, proposing that men and women are different, both physically and mentally, and that we're subject to evolved influences and innate proclivities as a result of these differences, is also sacrilege. The Blank Slate ideal is what defines every aspect of what Blue Pill conditioning would have men and women believe about intersexual relations and gender '*equality*'. In fact, the *Village* of contemporary Western culture forbids, and often legally prevents, even the discussion of questioning the Blank Slate. The religion of the Blank Slate is also the only true state-approved religion, and this has implications in social arenas that go well beyond intersexual dynamics.

With the rise of feminism and a feminine-primary social order (*Gynocentrism*), social adherence to the Blank Slate ideal became vital to the survival of feminism's power base. Once the modern research and understanding of human beings' evolved nature became unignorable the social institutions founded on the Blank Slate were challenged. Today, *Red Pill* awareness about intersexual dynamics in men is one of those systemic challenges. A Blue Pill, equalist, mindset doesn't coexist well with empirical evidence that shows men and women are more different than alike on fundamental levels. Today's Blank Slate is, as *Dr. Pinker* describes a '*modern denial of human nature*'. The Blank Slate belief-set is also codependent on the fallacy of **Social Constructionism** – the idea is that we are all just empty vessels that a nebulous 'society' builds solely through media, culture, school, religion, family, etc. And while all of these outside influences certainly mold us, by necessity the Blank Slate ignores the import of our evolved mental '**firmware**' – the innate proclivities that come as standard equipment in males and females.

## The Human System

I use the term “*evolved mental firmware*” a lot in my writing. I look at it like this; we have the **hardware** that is our biological reality, a **firmware** that is our in-born, evolved proclivities (and the psychological aspects of how men and women’s hardware affects it) and the **software** that accounts for the social programming we learn from our environments and circumstances. From the perspective of my theory on interpretive processes (***Instinct, Emotion & Reason***) our firmware influences all three of these processes. Blank Slate equalism (combined with Social Constructionism) would condition us to believe that our biology (*hardware*) is insignificant, our firmware is either non-existent or inconsequential, and our programming (*social learning*) is the only thing that really makes us what we are. If this sounds like progressivist boilerplate you’re not too far off. Modern concepts of social justice use exactly this Social Constructionist preconception to justify their positions on a great many issues – and especially gender issues. However, it’s a mistake to think the Blank Slate is a religion only for leftists and feminists. Equalism is also the starting point for the beliefs of many well-meaning traditional conservatives. Feminism depends on egalitarian ideals setting the intersexual ‘***Frame***’ for selling its ideology.

*“If only men would cooperate and help smash the Patriarchy we could live in an ideal state of egalitarian equalism.”*

The cover story of a ‘*push for equality*’ all depends on the Blank Slate notion that men and women are functional equals, and all this inequality is just the result of entrenched social doctrines (and plenty of *evil* men). If it’s all about Social Constructionism then all that’s needed is to change everyone’s’ software, everyone’s’ programming, and thus, an idealized gender neutral utopia ought to be possible. However, feminism, progressivism and other assorted ‘*-isms*’ all depend on a default state of victimhood and oppression to be self-perpetuating belief-sets. An idealized goal-state, a *utopia*, can never be truly realized because doing so would invalidate the belief-set.

Male feminists, Men's Rights Activists, Masculinity Apologist organizations and Neo-Patriarchy Trad-Cons all have this in common – they buy into the Blank Slate and the false ideal that gender equality is an achievable goal based on it. Most of them don't realize they're carrying feminist water in the egalitarian beliefs they were taught. Rather, they believe in the hope of an idealized “*equal partnership*” in their marriages and ignore or demonize the influence our evolved firmware exerts in themselves and their wives. So, even when they accept the most obvious of intersexual differences and the influence of our firmware, the next defense of the Blank Slate is moralism. If the Blank Slate isn't the basis of the natural order it *should* be because God or our higher-selves or our better natures should make us better than that natural state. Morally or intellectually, the idea is that we *should* strive for a Blank Slate because something makes us innately better than nature. And when we are told we *should* do something, that is a judgement call.

## Moralism for Rationalists

The Blank Slate is a lie, but it's a lie that's pregnant with hope. With the advent of new order understanding we've confirmed something we used to think of as self-evident; *Men and women are different* – and our differences are too significant to ignore. But when the Blank Slate is effectively challenged, and our evolved natures are acknowledged, the next rationale is moralism and/or intellectualism. If we're only moral enough, or intelligent enough, or "evolved" enough, we ought to be able to effect the ideals of the Blank Slate above our base natures. The appeal to rising or evolving above the influences of our evolved natures is always the path of the moralist and the intellectualist alike. Shouldn't we strive for Equality? Would not an equal state between the sexes be a good thing? If we were ever good enough, and exercising our powerful *freewill* correctly, men and women should be able to be more equitable, right?

The question isn't whether we can override our evolved natures – we do this all the time actually – but whether we *should* strive for the egalitarian ideal. In the most egalitarian societies on the planet human beings still opt for "traditional" (conventional) gender roles.<sup>1</sup> Given the freedom to believe in a Blank Slate ideal and choose their roles in an egalitarian social order (or its best approximation) men and women still prefer the roles we're supposed to believe are so constraining for us. These roles we're supposed to believe are foisted upon us by Social Constructionism. I would argue that much of the gender conflicts we experience today are the result of force-fitting men and women into an untenable egalitarian ideal with the expectation that our evolved (or designed) proclivities are '*unnatural*' results of a nebulous oppressive societal programming. We're told that gender is not binary and is really a social construct, yet we still need hormone therapy to alter the biochemistry of children to help them '*transition*' to another, *binary*, gender. Ironically, that egalitarianism as a mindset, the social force and a belief system that is ostensibly about a naturally balanced harmony in life is the most disharmonious with respect to an evolved order among men and women. The conclusion I come to is that promulgating the Blank Slate social *religion* is more about power dynamics than a real push for an



equalist ideal of harmony among men and women. In this era, after decades of new order advancements in the cognitive sciences, neurological study, anthropology, sociology, etc. we can finally lay the Blank Slate to rest. However, so much of our social and intersexual understanding of human nature (or even the denial of it) is dependent on Blank Slate equalism being an ideal to strive for.

When I make an unflattering observation of women's nature the first response from well-conditioned men and women is reflexively firing back with some equal-but opposite-reaction. Our natural, human inclination is to look for symmetry and balance in things. The default belief is to think that what's good for the goose is good for the gander – that or distract from the observation by making value judgements. A root-belief in the Blank Slate prompts us to presume there is always an '*equal, but opposite reaction*' to anything that challenges a belief:

*“ Well, men do it too, only worse.”*

*“ Deal with the plank in your own eye before you pluck the mote from mine.”*

*“If it's true for one, there's an opposite truth for another.”*

*“Own your problems before you judge me.”*

Avoiding judgement is a primary goal in our emotional social order, and the Blank Slate has fed this avoidance for decades now. The reflexive need for a symmetrical balance – even when there is none – is a human default. Human beings are very good at pattern recognition, but we also want to square the circle. We want to find order in the chaos because predicting things can lead to our better survival. '*Men and women are different*' is a radical statement in this era, not the least of which because it contradicts the Blank Slate religion that persists in spite of itself. When people ask me whether I believe men and women are equals and I answer '**no**', they look as if I pulled the wings from a butterfly. I believe men and women are complements to each other and **we're better together than apart**, but we

are not functional equals. We are different, with differing motives and strategies that are part of who we are according to our (binary) gender. We could achieve a far more harmonious social state by accepting and embracing these differences.

## Rise Above

In his famous book *Conflict of Visions*, Thomas Sowell drew a comparison that confirms today's new order thinking. In our basest respect humans are very animalistic despite their capability of rationalizing otherwise, and human nature must be constrained by laws and social processes. The other side of the spectrum says that humans are entirely capable of overcoming their Darwinian natures through intentional decision making (*freewill*) and must be unrestricted in order to flourish. Everyone lies somewhere between these two. As in countless other sciences, Nature vs. Nurture is a constant theme in the *Red Pill* praxeology. It's a constant theme throughout most natural sciences, but it's a paradox that's always going to define intersexual dynamics. That's because people's belief-sets are rooted more in one or the other. Personal responsibility versus biological determinism is an issue that defines our perspectives on many things, but the assumptions about this dilemma color our spiritual education as well. The great thinkers of antiquity and the authors of many Holy Texts also address this paradox. Somewhere in between we are '*only slightly better than worms*', but also a '*little beneath Angels*'.

I should add here that this paradox isn't just an issue of politics or even worldview. There are plenty of believers in our human capacity to rise above our personal circumstances and evolutionary dictates on both sides of the political spectrum. For every hardline Traditional Conservative (Trad-Con) espousing the virtues of the human spirit, independence, and freewill triumphing over our physical conditions, there is a left-leaning secular humanist who'll conveniently agree that humans are in no way beholden to what some inconvenient science says if it aligns with their own belief-set. In fact, most "*old order*" ideologies are struggling with relevancy in this age of new order thinking – our *New Age of Enlightenment*. This new understanding is the result of an unprecedented deluge of information we now have access to in this millennium. Not only is this new influx of data challenging the *old order* ideologies, but the accessibility to it makes *old order* thinkers struggle to keep pace. The response to this influx of information requires us to parse it out like never before. In predictable

human fashion most people's response is a hard turn towards the *old order* dictates that used to be useful in explaining harsh truths adequately enough to allow us to focus on other important things in life. Thus, we see the global *Village* return to an interest in old religions, shamanism, metaphysics and tribal superstitions today. That's not to say some of these *old order* institutions never had merit – a lot of what new order data presents to us can be confirmed by old order *wisdom*. It is to say that when we're presented with difficult challenges to our ego-invested beliefs we tend to cling tightly to those comforting beliefs. '*Gimme that Ole Time Religion*' isn't a classic hymn for nothing.

In some ways, what we used to take on faith can be confirmed by new order information. But this confirmation can also be problematic for *old order* believers. It's never comforting to be confronted with what you'd thought was a sublimely metaphysical truth actually turns out to be something that can be empirically quantified. Yes, your religion was correct about some things, but those things are no longer the magical articles of faith they once were because they can now be explained factually. The belief was a good practice according to what modern understanding makes of it, but it ceases to be *faith* when that wisdom is confirmed by science.

## But We're Better Than That, Right?

The Nature vs. Nurture debate is really the polite way of defining a conflict between two perspectives – *Determinism* vs. *Freewill*. While questions about consciousness and existential philosophies are outside the scope of this book, what is in scope is how these perspectives define the way we approach our understanding of innate mating strategies, long term relationships, forming families and raising children. As mentioned early, stolid determinism feels wrong to both kinds of *believers*. Whenever I debate the harsh realities of how Hypergamy works – not just for our species, but most of the animal kingdom – I'm invariably met with the question of whether or not Hypergamy is '***Good or Evil***'. There's always a want to qualify a natural dynamic. Is a pack of wolves *evil* for bringing down a caribou to feed the pack in the dead of winter? It all depends on who you're rooting for I guess.

Contemplating these scenarios are nothing new. Considering moral implications of the uglier aspects of Hypergamy is just one easy example among dozens of others. Naturalism vs. Moralism dilemmas abound in *Red Pill* praxeology. *Empiricists* will explain the dynamic in the hope that knowing about it, and how it works, will lead to better predicting things. Hypergamy works thusly: **X+Y+Z**; now go plan accordingly and build a better life upon that predictive model. *Believers* on the other hand will absorb this data and look for moral equivocations. They believe that the goal of a debate is to establish what is morally better, and what everyone *ought* to do. They argue about what is ***right***, not necessarily what *is*.

In a few of my *YouTube* livestreams I've debated whether the idea of Hypergamy should be used as a "*predictive framework*" for understanding intersexual relationships. The topic of discussion is the merits of Hypergamy in its expanded, robust, definition and whether it's a reliable metric to compare people's relationships (married and dating). A lot of *Red Pill* awareness centers on Hypergamy; it's why I continue to stress it even when my detractors misrepresent my interests. It's really ***that*** important. But as we we're debating the ins and outs I pose the question:

*“If Hypergamy is not a reliable predictive framework for understanding intersexual relationships, then what is a better one?”*

If not Hypergamy, in its expanded definition, (that describes women’s dualistic mating strategy) then what is a good outline by which we might judge women’s (and men’s) motives, incentives and behaviors with respect to their mating strategies? Do women even have mating strategies influenced and defined by their innate, evolved, natures? Or are their sexual, reproductive decisions purely an act of cognitive *will*, as defined by the influences of their socialization? If 100,000 years of human evolution didn’t shape women’s reproductive strategies, then what are we left with that explains the myriad commonalities we see women using (with our new order data gathering) in their mate selection and breeding (or abortion) habits? Is it entirely *freewill* and personal choice? Moral absolutists tend to think so, yet according to a mainstream Gynocentric progressivist society we’re certainly meant to believe it’s “*her body, her choice*” and the decisions are, furthermore, an extension of her cognitive freewill.

I get that it doesn’t have to be one or the other. The possibility exists that it’s both nature and nurture affecting women and men’s mating strategies – and certainly choice is involved in the outcome of those strategies. I’m more inclined to believe it’s both, or at least we want to believe our conscious decisions are what’s pulling the strings in our lives. Moreover, the ideology of *personal responsibility* – a foundational *darling* of conservative thought – is entirely dependent upon people being held responsible for the actions that their willful decision making led them to. “*The devil made me do it*” may as well be “*My evolved nature made me do it*” to people with this belief set. I’ve participated in a lot of livestream debates where we asked the question, “*Do women have agency?*” and if not then are we our *Sister’s Keeper*? The more moralistic a guy is, the more likely he is to include the interests of women’s lives to his personal definition of masculine duties and personal responsibilities. The *Personal Responsibility* belief gets mixed in with the traditional *Masculine Duty* belief in how men *ought* to deal with women. This is an interesting paradox I’ve found amongst the Trad-Con set. According to *personal responsibility*, women’s freewill gives them agency to

be held accountable to, yet it's supposedly men failing in their masculine responsibilities that absolves women of these accountabilities. Trad-Con *Patriarchs* have a habit of painting themselves into ideological corners.

The underlying assumptions in all these accounts is “*Aren't we better than this?*”

As relatively rational, self-aware creatures, with what we presume is freewill – and a liability of personal responsibility when exercising freewill – haven't we evolved (or transcended) above all our base impulses by now? If not, then shouldn't we have by now? I harp on the fallacy of the Blank Slate that most *old order* thinkers can't seem to disabuse themselves of, but if we are in fact “*above it all*” then the fallacy of the Blank Slate, as well as the notion that we might ever be influenced by our evolved natures, is all a moot point. If our consciousness is all somehow supernaturally better than our evolved natures, then the variables of evolution are rendered meaningless. All that matters is the self and developing our consciousness to rise above our conditions, right?

Our conscious minds are capable of overriding our innate natures. We can, sometimes do, kill ourselves by not eating. A fast or a hunger strike is something we can consciously perform as an act of will. A sense of righteousness and virtue can get mixed into that conscious and our *will* supersedes our innate nature (we get hungry and need to eat or we die). It doesn't change the operative physical state that our bodies need certain things. People often commit suicide as an act of will, or the conscious act of our depressive emotional state. Again, *will* overrides our physical conditions, but how much of what we believe is our willpower is influenced by the same physical conditions, environment, upbringing, socialization and personal circumstances that we hope to rise above?

Very soon, perhaps within my own lifetime, we will be able to genetically engineer humans with some reliability. In 2018 a Chinese scientist broke codes of ethics to create the first gene-edited baby. The science, if not the technology or the will to use it, is already here. The possibility exists that human beings, through sheer force of will, can custom engineer our physical states to conform to what our ideologies would tell us

(and future generations) are preferable ways to do life. If you've ever seen the movie *Gattaca* you'll understand the implications of this technology. It's this author's opinion that we are living in a time when the ideologies we subscribe to today will affect the ethics of what we engineer into the humanity of tomorrow. *Gattaca* was science fiction, but the philosophical questions it posed are very real now. From an objective, humanist perspective this raises a lot of interesting questions. Should we engineer-out of humanity "*diseases*" like Down's Syndrome? What about sickle cell anemia? If a **gay gene** is ever discovered, should we edit it out of humanity to ensure a race of "*normal*" heterosexual human beings in future generations?

The Chinese scientist who broke the rules of ethics was reprimanded for his experiments.

*"When the news broke, peers in China and abroad condemned him for manipulating life's building blocks using a relatively untested gene-editing tool."*

But why? Chinese officials (ostensibly) declared his experimentation illegal.<sup>2</sup> It's entirely possible that a new race of genetically *superior* humans could be engineered to be better adapted to live longer, be smarter<sup>3</sup>, more immune to disease, possibly eradicate some disease and make for a stronger human species. Why would it be *wrong* or unethical to strive for "perfection"? Have we not elevated our *will* above our physical and environmental limitations? Or are we using our physical conditions as an implement of our will? We'll find out soon, but our ideologies and the ideas of what's right and wrong is most certainly influenced and defined by the realities of our physical selves. The direction our species takes in the coming future will be determined by the decisions we make according to our ideologies of today.



## Old Order Machines

*“In the social media age, people have forgotten that it's not remotely normal to be able to see hundreds of millions of people's opinions & actions, let alone engage with them. We're living in the biggest experiment in human history and have little idea of the long term consequences.”*

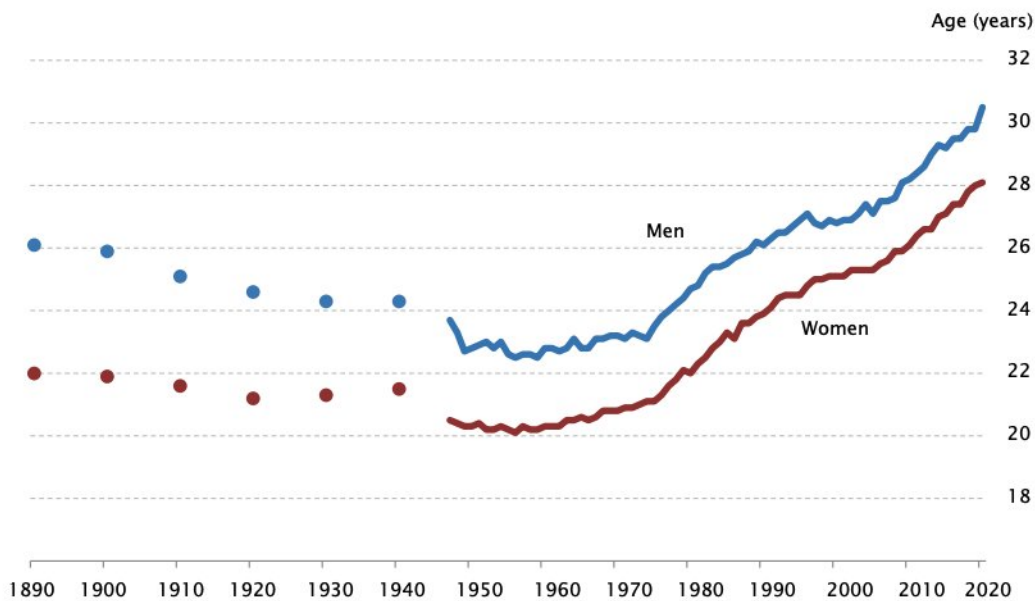
– Zubby

On my blog I've had men bemoan that the digital age has ruined us. Ruined sex, ruined women, ruined marriage. A globalizing pop-culture moves at an alarming rate today. What's trending now won't be in the next year or even next month. Society has never been this connected or moved this fast, and as a result the new way is merely a day away from being the old way. The demon is out of the ring now and there's no feasible way to deal with the modern age. If you are not born into greatness, or utilizing the vast knowledge of the internet to surpass everyone, and stay there, you get nothing – or else you believe you do.

It's now the same way with women. Previously, our worlds were smaller and the influence of women's Hypergamy wasn't as unfettered as it is now. Prior to the *Sexual Revolution* there were checks and balances, traditional social mores; God and Church being a few. Learned shame and social stigmas were buffers for keeping the worst aspects of women's innate mating strategies in check. Now, women are conditioned to believe they have unlimited access to apex Alpha men, with upwards access to all employment, and no repercussions for acting in their interests and base instincts. Women's hubris and overblown sense of self has grown since the Sexual Revolution, and has jumped exponentially since the rise of the internet age. Men with *old order* belief-sets, are finding themselves selected-out of the reproductive equation due to this new Global Sexual Marketplace. In the old order a man used to be able to find a suitable mate from his localized sexual marketplace with relative certainty. Geographical isolation and cultural limitation of local women's reproductive choices fostered a

social contract that favored socially enforced monogamy. Today those limitations are gone; replaced with the impression of unlimited access to intersexual connections from across the world. With this shift came a new sense of time and entitlements in which a woman can make her reproductive choices. In 2019 the median age of first marriage (if ever) is 28 for women and 30 for men.

**Figure MS-2**  
**Median age at first marriage: 1890 to present**



Experts note that this shift in marriage age coincides with women entering the workforce, but the real catalyst for this upswing was the advent of unilaterally female-controlled hormonal birth control (HBC) and its widespread use introduced around the mid 1960s. Much of the societal shifts we now take for granted in this New Order can be traced back to this point in history. If we look at what followed in the wake of HBC we see a definitive pattern: the *Free Love* movement, legalized and convenient abortion, no fault divorce, the rise of socially accepted militant feminism, assimilation of ‘male space’, introduction of Title IX and other special

dispensations for women in higher education, child support/custody and the rise of the divorce industry, the Duluth Model of Feminism, and the list goes on. All of these social changes are reaching their logical extremes in an age of online mass communication.

Today, *egg freezing* for women in upper management positions is becoming a normal part of the benefits package for *forward-thinking* multinational corporations. The social rationale for this necessity is that women are focusing on their careers and deserve the option of starting families later in life (as men are *believed* to be able to do). However, the real reason is a pervading belief that women have more time and more options to find the perfect man who a global consortium of women believe they are all entitled to. A Globalized Sexual Marketplace presents the perception of unprecedented intersexual/relationship options to women. In 2020 women complain of the difficulty in finding a man they consider their “equal”. According to recent polls that equal partner is a man who earns 58% more than she does and is more educated than herself.<sup>4</sup> If this sounds like the *Paradox of Choice* you’re not too far from the mark.

*“In less than 50 years we have fundamentally shifted away from a marriage-based model of childrearing to a child-support based model of childrearing.”*

– Dalrock

## Hypergamy

Hypergamy is one of those *Red Pill* terms that keeps getting redefined to suit the belief-set of people coming into a new understanding of intersexual dynamics. No author, other than myself, has helped to define the modern, updated version of the term. I've written extensively about the topic for the better part of 18 years now. Hypergamy serves as a keystone in all 3 of my prior books. I'm often criticized for over-stressing the importance of this dynamic, but as you'll see it forms the basis of so many of the gender politics and personal issues we deal with today. I won't belabor the concept as much in this book, but it's important that new readers wrap their heads around the basic idea of Hypergamy to understand the moral implications of intersexual dynamics.

Unmodified by social limitations, Hypergamy describes women's innate, evolved, mating strategy. Hypergamy is founded on a woman's evolved, existential need for the highest quality mate her sexual agency can afford to attract. In its rawest form this quality assessment can be reduced to two criteria: ***Alpha Seed*** and ***Beta Need*** – short term sexual (genetic) benefits balanced with long term security (survival) benefits in mate choice. The evolutionary demands placed on human females in reproduction, the realities of women's ovulatory cycle and their relatively short, viable-fertility potential over an average lifespan necessitated an innate mating strategy based on securing the best quality available in human males while she is reproductively viable. Those necessary attributes can be distilled to two basic facets: A man's genetic quality (Alpha Seed) and a man's capacity for protection/provisioning (Beta Need).

Understand, this is raw Darwinian *necessity*. Unfettered by social conventions, women will pursue both short term (sexual) and long term (security) mating strategies in securing her reproductive best interests, optimizing the potential of her own survival, and the survival of any offspring. This is kernel-level, hindbrain necessity. Furthermore, women will ably disregard any cognitive dissonance that arises from the consequences of her decisions to pursue her reproductive and survival interests. Hypergamy is the psychological and behavioral strategy that

manifests from this Darwinian need in women. It's important for men to understand this because it serves as the motivating basis for much of men's own dominance hierarchies and sexual strategies. Men's *Burden of Performance* is rooted in women's Hypergamous sexual selectivity.

The most common mistake people make about Hypergamy is the belief that a woman's only selective criteria is the Beta Need, long term security, side of the Hypergamous equation. It's the polite side of Hypergamy. Provisioning and protection define the criteria for family creation. The long term security drive also has the benefit of sounding like a prudent, moral interest unique to women. Under the old social contract it only made sense that a man live up to certain expectations of women and prepare himself for being a *high-quality* husband and father. Provisioning, protection, security, loyalty, durability and parental investment are all very ennobling qualities and striving for them have historically given men a sense of purpose. Developing these qualities used to be a valued as a strength of character and the most respected means a man might solve his reproductive problem.

The side of Hypergamy that most *believers* don't like to consider is the visceral, sexual, short term breeding interests of women, and the strategies, behaviors and social imperatives that stem from it. This is the "hot monkey sex" side of Hypergamy, and until we had an unfiltered global access to observe women's behaviors in real time – courtesy of our new order information age – women's short term sexual breeding imperative was something repressed, private and largely concealed. Prior to the advent of HBC (Hormonal Birth Control) and the following Sexual Revolution the Alpha Seed side of Hypergamy was something women kept under wraps or was buffered by social conventions and stigmas. The fear being that if enough men were aware of the dual nature of women's mating strategy they would withhold the resources women were dependent upon. Today, it's a much different story. Openly embraced, and encouraged by a gynocentric social order, acknowledging Hypergamy is now a point of pride for women. No longer is it necessary to hide this aspect of women's sexual nature. Because women have reached a state of empowered independence from men (with respect to their provisioning needs) the primary motivator in women's mating strategy today has become a concentrated search for the Alpha male with whom to reproduce in her prime-fertility years; that and artificially extending her attraction potential for as long as possible. The search for a

Beta male *provider* is relegated to her less fertility-viable years, and then usually by necessity rather than genuine desire. Individual men serve to optimize Hypergamy at different phases of a woman's maturity as she has need for them.

In 2018, 40% of children are born out of wedlock in the United States.<sup>5</sup> Globally this statistic is about 40% as well. In an expanding globalized social order predicated on female empowerment the Beta Needs aspect of women's mating strategy is sublimated. Women no longer need men to ensure their long term security; or at least a gynocentric society would have them believe so. Provisioning, protection, even conception and child support, are no longer something women have to directly depend upon men to accomplish. Even if this weren't the actual case worldwide, the entitlement to having a woman's security needs satisfied, directly or indirectly, is a perception women largely hold in a globalized information society. Thus, the only thing left in the Hypergamous equation is Alpha Seed. I realize that this outline of Hypergamy may seem very reductionist to new readers, but for brevity's sake it's necessary for now. There is a lot more to Hypergamy and how it is expressed in this new order. I encourage new readers to look up the topic and term in my previous work (start with my first book) and discussions for a more complete understanding. My last point is this; by evolutionary necessity (or intentional design if you like) all women are Hypergamous, how that strategy is manifested is determined by social and psychological considerations. Both the good church girl and the career stripper follow a Hypergamous mating strategy – how that strategy is expressed is the difference between them.

## Gynocentrism

According to a 35-page study titled *Rise of the SHEconomy* by investment bank *Morgan Stanley*, by 2030, 45% of prime-working-age women, between 25 and 44, in the United States will be single; the largest share in history – up from 41% in 2018. According to the study, (based on Census Bureau stats) among the total female population over the age of 15, the percentage of single women by 2030 will outpace married women, rising to 52%, from 49% in 2018.

Furthermore, the 2018 *General Social Survey*<sup>6</sup> indicates that the number of Americans between the ages of 18 and 29 who have not had sex in the last year almost tripled from 2008. The largest portion of those young adults were men. 23% of 18 to 29 year old men were celibate in 2018 – up from 8 percent from 2008; far more than the 13% of Americans in their 50s who reported they'd spent 2018 sexless. And sexless marriages are also increasing. According to the *National Survey of Sexual Health and Behavior*, on average and adjusting for age, 20% of married people had not had sex in the past year. A sexless marriage is defined as having sex less than 10 times per year.

In 2018 a new term began trending on Google: ***Incel*** (involuntary celibate) started circulating on all popular social media platforms. The categorization went mainstream in the wake of the April 23rd, 2018, killings of *Alek Minassian* in *Toronto, Canada*. The attack left 10 dead, and of the 16 people he attempted to run down in a rented van mostly women were targeted. A 26 year old *Minassian* later said he belonged to an online subculture of sexually frustrated men, saying he drew inspiration from men who used violence as a form of retribution for “***being unable to get laid***”. He would go on to relate a story from 2013 when he went to a Halloween house party:

*“I walked in and attempted to socialize with some girls, however, they all laughed and held the arms of the big guys instead. I was angry they would give their love and attention to obnoxious brutes.”*

In truth, *Incels* have been a growing subculture offline for some time. Only in this new order of instant communication and online forums do we see these groups metastasize to what they are today. Beta males – the stereotypical losers we all knew, and maybe were, in high school – have been a constant throughout human history. However, in this post-internet age a reminder of the realities of Hypergamy and intersexual dynamics these men face are only a *Twitter, Reddit, YouTube* comment or forum post away. At no other time in history has this type of man had more access to others of his kind with which to commiserate. In the old social order these young men, often bullied as they were, had to learn to cope with and overcome their personal deficits. In fact this is an archetypal story for men; the *zero to hero* rite of passage for lesser men becoming greater men. For some, this struggle leads to great success; the nerd, the outcast, the ‘loser’ who made good and became more than what people had underestimated him for. But in this new order of instant online validation and worldwide commiseration, the old order incentives to overcome their state, master their *Burden of Performance*, and become something more are replaced with a constant nihilism and resignation to their fate as *losers* in the new global sexual marketplace.

For some men *Red Pill* awareness can be too burdensome to deal with. It’s often said in the ‘sphere that once a guy becomes aware of the “*code in the Matrix*” there’s no going back. They now have the *Red Pill* Lens through which to see the realities of the game they’ve always played a part in and there’s no escaping it. Even the men who flatly reject what the new order data is showing them can only maintain the denial until they experience a *Red Pill* truth that tests their investment in their Blue Pill (*old order*) conditioning. My intent with all this is to make you aware of the trends and statistics. These are the uncomfortable results of a social experiment in *Gynocentrism* that began over 50 years ago – a personal, social and legislative order by women, for women, and enforcing women’s interests while actively disadvantaging men. These being just a few of the illustrations of the fallout of what I referred to in my last book as the *Fempowerment Era*. In the coming chapters you’ll see just how pervasive this social engineering has become across secular humanism, secular spirituality, mainstream religion and religious cultures alike. For now my focus is on how the last three generations of men have adapted (or didn’t) in



transitioning from that *old order* to the new, and how those born into it are reading it through the lens of *old order* understanding. I realize how conspiratorial all this must seem on first glance, but bear in mind this social reconstruction has been a gradual process that's taken place over the course of 4 generations. Humans always looked for simplistic answers to complex dynamics. Dismissing complexities is something we do as a way of protecting our egos and moving on to mental tasks we'd prefer to be addressing. As such, there will always be a want to lay blame on a particular race, religion or corporate interest; or imagine an elite 'over-power' responsible for what we think are injustices. As online communities become exponentially more atomized this blame becomes even more tribalistic.

This is where moralists in this sphere tend to disconnect.

They conflate what *is* with what *ought* to be. Confronted with these new data that challenge their conditioning, the *Red Pill* aware moralist looks for a fault in ethics or moral prudence rather than seeing a dynamic for what it is and how it works. Where a *Red Pill* praxeologist seeks to better understand a behavioral dynamic and its motives, the moralist sees the worst of that dynamic as *evil* and the best of it as evidence of some divine influence. As I mentioned in the introduction, putting angels or devils wings on a dynamic distorts our understanding of it. Many a misguided critic has told me, "*Those Red Pill guys think that Hypergamy is evil and they use that hopelessness as a justification for hating women.*" The *Red Pill* has never been a moral arbiter. If a guy believes he's hopeless because Hypergamy has selected him out it doesn't change the operative that Hypergamy is a well-observed fact of this new order world.

The *Red Pill* doesn't exist so men will hate women; it exists so men won't hate women for what they can never be for him.

The average Beta male of today is overwhelmed by this new order information. Understanding intersexual dynamics, much less participating in them, seems like an overly exhausting pursuit – and particularly so in an age where so many demands are placed on them in other areas of life. In my prior books I've made the case for a male *Burden of Performance*. This performance becomes a necessary metric by which that man is evaluated in

his competency and ultimately how he's ranked in male dominance hierarchies. In past generations this *Burden of Performance* was something men were raised to know in what would be expected of them in life. It was what defined that man's character and it was something most men, cross-culturally, had some basic understanding of.

In the new order, this burden is something the young men of this generation see little point in pursuing. The “*Juice is not worth the squeeze*” is a common refrain from **Men Going Their Own Way** (MGTOW). Living up to the expectations of the women of this new social order is no longer an incentive for men – even those who actually want to make something more of themselves. There are many (often conflicting) definitions of what MGTOW, as a belief-set, should mean to these men, however, the foundational basis is this: men should no longer use women's estimations of them as their metric for self-worth. Much in the same way that feminism has created the *Strong Independent Woman* meme for women to aspire to, MGTOW uniformly advocate that the rewards (if any now) of a relationship with a woman are far outstripped by the all-downside risks inherent in entertaining them. The perpetual vigilance of maintaining peak value (or even just the appearance of it) to thwart a girlfriend or a wife from exiting a relationship to pursue a more optimal mate is a reality of this new order understanding. So ultimately, why bother?

*“If Brad Pitt can't make it in today's sexual marketplace with today's women then what hope does the average guy have?”*

This is another common MGTOW question; one used to legitimize abdicating the *Burden of Performance*. I understand men's desire to just throw in the towel and accept one's sexless fate. We now live in a Global Sexual Marketplace. The old order rules for the localized sexual marketplace that the last 3 generations of men still expect to work for them today are a thing of the past. And this is only **one** symptom of the rapid expansion of technology and its effect on our cultural narratives. For all the alarms we'd raise about humans' genetically engineering future generations of humans, the effects of the meta-scale, social engineering experiment that is *Gynocentrism* are already here. Men have always adapted to the

circumstances in solving their reproductive problems, but never has a generation of men had to adapt so rapidly to so large a changing environment. It's only going to get more complex as we move forward. Today's men have few options available, and even less authority afforded to them in our present state. Most will continue to keep pace and attempt to see the signs of how best to advantage themselves to what comes at them in the global sexual marketplace – and ultimately life in general – until they can no longer keep up. Evolve or die. Keep pace with the trends and stay sharp enough to look ahead and leverage what you can based on an objective assessment of what human beings really are. Stay sharp until you no longer can. Hopefully, if you've wisely conserved and protected your resources during that time you'll have some security until you die. If not, then you can expect to fall prey to the next generation of vultures who see your nest egg as their source of revenue.

Or you can give up. You can do just what's necessary to survive in a system that passed you by and console yourself with complaining about how degenerate and unfair this new order is. You'll be right on both counts because that's where you are. *Old order* thinking is very comforting, and it will be until there are no more *old order* thinkers – all swept aside by new order thinkers.

As more people find it increasingly difficult to mentally keep pace in this new order, the more we're going to see a return to the comfort of *old order* religions, metaphysics and tribalism as these generations seek meaning and consolation. As a result we'll also see a new virtue signaling and ego-investments in the power of the self, freewill and *mindful* conscientiousness. The *Traditional Conservatives* of today are already there and the more '*spiritual-but-not-religious*' social justice adherents apply their own brand of secularized magical thinking – but all for the same reasons. The effect is the same; a retreat from competing in a globalizing system that, sooner or later, will outpace us all. And like all other aspects of this rapid advancement, even this retreating demographic will be co-opted and commercialized by the savvy '*Players*' who are still able to keep pace. Formalizing the **retreaters**, organizing them, catering to their idiosyncrasies, all will be (already is) big business for those who learn to effectively sell comfort, consolation (if not hope) or rage and commiseration to those who think they'll never keep up.



## THE LIE OF EQUALITY

*As a general principle genetic fitness is always relative to the environment. A spread of genetic traits makes a species more robust, because it will have individuals better suited for survival in a greater range of environments.*

*There's more than one breed of working dog because no one is "better." Each has its specific strengths, paid for with corresponding weaknesses. A terrier is too small to hunt wolves, but you're not going to stuff a wolfhound down a badger hole.*

I've always thought this was a great analogy. It's also one of the main reasons I believe the egalitarian-equalist narrative is a deliberate lie with the hoped-for purpose of empowering people who cannot compete, or believe they have some plenary exclusion from competing in various challenges of life. The primary selling points of egalitarian-equalism for men is the idea that they can be excluded from the male ***Burden of Performance***.

There is no such thing as 'equality' because life doesn't happen in a vacuum.

*The fundamental paradox of politics; No society can be simultaneously fair, free, and equal. If it is fair, people who work harder can accumulate more. If it is free, people will give their wealth to their children. But then it cannot be equal, for some people will inherit wealth they did not earn.*

— Dr. Stephen Pinker, *How the Mind Works* (2009)

The tests that a chaotic world throws at human beings is **never** equal or balanced in measure to our strengths to pass them. There's a Christian maxim that states God will never challenges us with things we can't handle, but the state of nature disproves this time and again. Equality, in the terms that egalitarianism is comfortable in defining it, implies that that every individual is equally matched in both value and utility within a totality of

random challenges. Aside from this being patently false, it also demerits both strengths and weaknesses when that individual succeeds or fails at a particular challenge as a result of their individual character. This is ironic in that it provides easily repeatable excuses for a person's successes or failures. If someone wins, well, we're all equal so that person's strengths which led to the success can be passed off as a result of assumed or circumstantial '*privileges*' that made them better suited to their challenges. Rarely is their hard work or innate gifts recognized. Even if they are, that success is colored by the overcoming of a presumed, pre-established unequal adversity that grants them '*privilege*'. If they fail? Again, we're all *equal*, so the failure is proof of a deficit, or a handicap, or a presumed repression of an equal person in a state of baseline equal challenge.

The lie of *equality* is the natural extension of a default belief in the *Blank Slate*. Although the idea was born from secular parents egalitarian-equalism as a goal state for humanity has always had religious significance. The interpretations vary, but the idea that all people are of equal value to *God* is a popular concept – especially in a globalizing social order that uses emotionalism and egalitarianism as a metric for self-worth.

## Individual Exceptionalism

One of the longest perpetuated cop outs that equalists cling to is the notion that ***People are People***. Everyone is a unique individual (snowflake) and as such there is really no universally predictable method of testing character or knowing how a particular sex will respond to various challenges. In fact, to presume that one individual might ever predictably behave in a gender-typical way is to sin against *Equalism* – the religion of the *Blank Slate*. It's all random chance and personal expression according to the individual's socially constructed character and their capacity to be a 'more evolved', higher-thinking being.

The ***Individuation Fallacy*** is most easily understood as:

*“People are all individually special cases; each a unique product of their environments and experiences, and are far too individually complex to understand via generalizations according to sex, etc.”*

By this definition the *individual* supersedes any commonalities attributable to biology or evolution, and usually focuses solely on social constructionism and personal circumstance as a basis for motivating behavior, developing personality and influencing others accordingly. The primacy of the *individual* is the natural extension of an underlying belief in *The Blank Slate*. When you start from a belief that we're all functional equals, then everyone is an angel or a devil according to the choices they made. “*Equality*” is the basis for the judgement call. But depending on the person's circumstances they can be forgiven or damned for the consequences of those choices according to how we interpret their character as individuals, and how magnanimity or forgiveness figures into our own belief set. This is how we get rationales like, *not all women are like that*, and “*People are too complex to categorize*”, which are used to dismiss the unignorable commonalities we see in men and women in the information age. People don't like to think they aren't in some way unique as much as they don't like to think determinism has influenced (in some

way) what makes them unique. And since I'm sure you've made this connection already, yes, the *Individuation Fallacy* dovetails nicely into a doctrine of *personal responsibility*.

On the surface this all-are-individuals notion may seem the antithesis of the 'equality' narrative that equalists cling to, but it illustrates a cognitive dissonance equalism struggles with. This approach is a means to standardizing individuality, so no scientific evidence that might find patterns of an evolved '*nature*' of a person – or in our *Red Pill* case, a sex – can be predicted. Even asking a serious question as to whether a human *nature* exists is offensive. It's the hopeful cancellation of empirical evidence that shows how influential our biologies and inborn predispositions are. This '*higher order*' individualism is overblown so equalism can claim that the *exception to the rule* disqualifies the obvious general rule itself.

*"We're all exceptions to the rule."*

*– Carl Jung*

*"...and when everyone is super, no one will be."*

*– Syndrome, from The Incredibles.*

This fallacy is where we get the NA\*ALT (not all \_\_\_\_ are like that) absolution of the most unflattering parts of human nature. ***Not All Women Are Like That*** is standard feminine-primary boilerplate for women and sympathizing men who'd rather we all ignore the aspects of female nature that shine a bad light on what are easily observable truths about behavior and the motives behind them. The social convention relies on the idea that if there is even one individual contradiction to the ***generalization*** (always deemed an 'overgeneralization') then the whole premise must be wrong. It becomes *my truth* versus *the truth*.

Of course, this individual exceptionality rule only applies to the concepts in which equalists have invested their egos. When an empirical generality proves an equalist's belief, that's when it becomes an 'endemic' universal truth to their mindset. A binary over-exaggeration of this effect is the reflexive response for concepts that challenge their ego-investments. Thus, we see any and all of the negative aspects of masculinity painted as



evidence of an endemic ‘**toxic**’ masculinity as a whole. The individualist exceptionality in this instance is always ridiculed as ‘*insecurity*’ on the part of men for just considering it.

The exceptionalism of the individual is always paired with some high-order consciousness, and/or the idea that anything that proves their ego-investment is “*more evolved*” – despite any evidence that proves the contrary. It’s proof that this individual is a being who represents some evolutionary step forward or is imbued with some divine truth. If you agree and support feminine-primacy it is ‘*proof*’ that you are more ‘evolved’ than other men. Thus, the ‘*more evolved*’ status becomes a form of reward to the individual who aligns with the ideology. Conversely, the avoidance of being perceived as ‘un-evolved’ serves as a form of negative reinforcement.

This is kind of ironic when you consider that the same equalist mindset that relies on the individualist exception is the same mindset that insists that everyone is the same; equal value, equal potential, equal purpose and equal ability. Again, the irony is that everything that would be used to establish the ‘*unique snowflake*’ ideology is ignored in favor of *Blank Slate* egalitarianism as it is convenient. There is a degree of wanting to avoid determinism (particularly biological determinism) for the individual in this *Blank Slate* concept, but it also provides equalism with a degree of feel-good affirmation that the individual is a product of social construction. So we get the idea that gender is a social construct and, furthermore, that *Blank Slate* individual is ‘*more evolved*’ to the point of redefining gender for themselves altogether. To be an egalitarian equalist is to accept the cognitive dissonance that the individual trumps the general truth and yet simultaneously accept that the individual is just the *Blank Slate* template of anyone else, thus negating the idea of the individual. It takes great stretches of belief to adhere to egalitarian if-then logic.

I apologize for getting into some heady stuff here, but I think it’s important that *Red Pill* aware men realize the self-conflicting flaw in the ideologies of post-modern equalism. Our feminine-primary social order is rife with it. They will disqualify the generalities of *Red Pill* awareness with individualist exceptionalism, and in the next breath disqualify that premise with their investments in *Blank Slate* egalitarianism. This is easiest to see in Blue Pill conditioned men and women still plugged in to *old order* thinking. However, I also see these self-conflicting rationales among *Red Pill* aware

men using the same process to justify personal ideology or their inability to de-pedestalize women on whole. There's a common thread amongst well-meaning *Red Pill* men to want to defend the individual natures of women who align with the Blue Pill ego-investments they still cling to. *All women are like that* so long as those women are granola-eating, furry-armpit feminists – 'Red Pill Women' then become the individual (snowflake) exceptions to the otherwise general rule because they fit a different, idealized profile.

## The Inequality of Equality

I do not believe in “equality”.

I don't believe in equality because I can objectively see that reality, our respective environments, our personal circumstances, etc. are all inherently unequal. Every day we encounter circumstances in life which we are eminently unequalled for in our ability to address them. Likewise, there are circumstances we can easily overcome without so much as a forethought. Whether these challenges demand or test our physical, mental, material or even spiritual capacities, the condition is the same – reality is inherently chaotic, unfair and challenging by order of degree. To presume that all individuals have equal value in light of the nature of reality is, itself, an unequal presumption. To expect sameness in the degree of competency or incompetency to meet any given challenge reality throws at us is a form of inequality. And it's just this inequality that equalists ironically exploit.

*“Each dog has its strengths for a given task”*. One dog is not as valuable as another depending on what determines a positive outcome. What equalism attempts to do – what it has the ludicrous audacity to presume – is to alter reality to fit the needs of the individual in order to make all individuals equally valuable, equally effective agents. This is the *‘participation trophy’* mentality, but it is also a glaring disregard for existential reality. Which, again, contradicts the idea of individual exceptionalism; reality must be *made* to be equal to accommodate the existences of equally valuable individuals. To say you don't believe in equality is only outrageous because it offends the predominant social narrative of today. It seemingly denies the inherent value of the individual, but what is conveniently never addressed is how an environment, condition and operative state defines what is functionally valued for any given instance. Like the dog bred to hunt ferrets out of their warrens is not the functional equal of a dog bred to run down prey at 45 miles per hour. The relative value of the individual is only relevant to the challenge demanded of it.

The default misunderstanding most equalists believe is that functional worth is personal worth.

*When you attempt to quantify any aspect of human ‘value’ you can expect to have your interpretations of it to be offensive to various people on the up or down side of that estimate. There is simply no escaping personal bias or the offense that comes from having one’s self-worth attacked, or sometimes confirmed for them.*

*The first criticism I’ve come to expect is usually some variation of how evaluating a person’s sexual market value is “dehumanizing”. People are people, and have intrinsic worth beyond just the sexual. I emphatically agree, however, this dismissal only conveniently sidesteps the realities of the sexual marketplace.*

*Again, sexual market value is not personal value. Personal value, your value as a human being however one subjectively defines that, is a definite component to sexual market value, but separating the two requires an uncomfortable amount of self-analysis. This often results in a denial of very real circumstances, as well as a necessary, ego-preserving, cognitive dissonance from that reality.*

*Denial of sexual market valuation is a psychological insurance against women losing their controlling, sexual agency in their hypergamous choices.*  
– *Separating Value, The Rational Male*

This is where the appeal to emotionalism begins for the equalist mindset. It seems dehumanizing to even consider an individual’s functional value. Humans’ capacity to learn and train and practice to become proficient or excel in various functions is truly a marvel of our evolution, or creation if you prefer. Brain plasticity being what it is, makes our potential for learning and overcoming our environments what separates us from other animals. We all have the potential to be more than we are in functional value, and this is the root of the emotional appeal of equalists. It seems so negative to presume we aren’t functional equals because we have the capacity and

potential to become more functionally valuable per the challenges set before us. The appeal to emotion is one of optimism. What this appeal ignores is the functional value of an individual in the now; the two dogs bred for different purposes. What this appeal also ignores is the ever-changing nature of reality and the challenges it presents to an individual in the *now* and how this defines value.

***What equalism cannot do is separate functional value from potential value.***

Adopting a mindset that accepts complementarity between the sexes and between individuals – one that celebrates and utilizes innate strengths and talents, yet also embraces the weaknesses and compensates for them – is a far healthier one than presuming baseline equivalency. Equalism praises differences and diversity as a strength while simultaneously promoting the *Blank Slate* ideal of us all being the same value and same potential. These are diametrically conflicting ideals. Understanding the efficacy of applying strengths to weaknesses cooperatively while acknowledging we aren't all the same damn dog will be a key to dissolving the fantasy of egalitarian equalism that the *old order* has been based on for so long. Furthermore, it will create a more balanced and healthier relations between the sexes. Embracing the fact that condition, environment, reality and the challenges they pose defines our usefulness is far better than assuming any single individual could ever be a self-contained, self-sufficient island unto themselves – and that is what equalism would have us all believe.



## CRISIS MASCULINITY

It's likely you've read a few articles about the "*Crisis of Masculinity*" we face today. Over the past decade it's become a popular rhetoric to question the validity of what I call *conventional* masculinity. That is to say a masculinity based on attributes unique to the evolved, innate proclivities of human males. There is most definitely a *crisis of masculinity* today, but it's a crisis born of four generations of men being subjected to a social engineering experiment unlike anything prior generations have ever experienced.

In the 2010 July/August issue of *The Atlantic* magazine author *Hanna Rosin* published a piece titled *The End of Men*. I drew some attention to this piece in a few essays at the time, and it's something of a milestone I refer back to when I consider the popular consensus of masculinity today. A decade later the predictions in this article have been proven prophetic, but in our new order awareness we can see just how well-designed the *end of men* was instituted. As women's empowerment progressed, men's confusion and self-loathing about their masculine identities was fomented. The narrative for women was all about manifest destiny; greater access to power, greater access to independence (from male provisioning), and a greater sense of entitlement to all aspects of '*being a woman*'. The prime directive for women and feminism in this new order is, and has always been:

***"Never do anything for the express pleasure of a man."***

In the 2020s we still hear the echoes of feminists decrying the *Male Gaze* and "*Women don't exist for your pleasure.*" Since the early 70s the ***Strong Independent Woman*** archetype has risen to a meme we take for granted. The ass-kicking, strong female lead characters we expect from Hollywood are a cliché now – but we're still expected, almost 50 years later, to believe there just aren't enough of them to sufficiently *empower* young girls today. In fact, a movie without this archetype being implied is an invitation for globalized online criticism. On March 8th of 2019, *International Women's Day*, the online movie ratings site *Rotten Tomatoes*

brazenly altered the ratings criteria for *Marvel's* movie, *Captain Marvel*. After the film's poor debut, lead actress *Brie Larson* declared 2019 was the “*year of Intersectional Feminism*.” The strong independent woman trope is so openly embraced now that it's become an expected prerequisite for any female movie role or video game character. That's how endemic this empowered woman meme is, but movie characters are only the obvious models we're expected to focus on. The model of the **Alpha Female** is a trope we teach our girls to aspire to in the new order. That the Alpha Female type is really a gender swapped Alpha Male is never considered. All aspects of empowerment in this archetype mirror what women have been taught to believe make for a powerful male. As part of that new masculine ideal of female success, along with it came the concept of the Alpha Female. Countless articles have been written about this fantasy creature; how she's a boss who takes no lip and turns companies around from the brink of bankruptcy just by virtue of being female (see *Elizabeth Holmes*). A woman of the future who emulates and exceeds the successes of any apex-male CEO of those sexist *Fortune 500* companies. Even if she's not a high powered executive, or the match (literally) of any man's prowess, women still love to imagine themselves in this “alpha” role in the worlds they create.

*“I'm an Alpha Female, and maybe I'm not a jet-setter, but I'm a Type A personality and as such I'm headstrong, a go-getter woman who knows what she wants.”*

This sloganized mental model is part of the new **Strong Independent Woman** costume that feminism has been selling to women for over 50 years now. The Feminine Imperative likes to convince women that they are ‘Alpha’ using conventionally masculine model definitions. The Strong Independent Woman meme only holds up insofar as it emulates masculine successes and a masculine defined concept of ‘Alpha’. By this definition every woman has a potential to be an ‘alpha’ female in her own way. **Confidence Porn** is something women gobble up because it's so easily achievable – all you have to do is cop the “I'm the boss, I'm a Type A person” attitude, put some foam inserts in the shoulders of your ‘power suit’



and you too can be Alpha because you say so and you walk the same walk as an Alpha Male. *Confidence Porn* is based on the myth that girls have, in any way, been held back or lack confidence in themselves because of systemic male privilege or advantages. It's the "zero to hero" story that has become the formulaic plot of every Disney-Pixar movie with a female lead character – and they *all* have female leads, even when they're not the main characters.

The push for female-primacy has conditioned generations of women to an entitlement of respect and deference to their authority from men. This is the symbolic deference for the actual disempowerment of male authority. Girls are told at every opportunity from the time they're 5 years old that they can do *anything*, have it all, be it all, and they're the "natural leaders of the future". By extension this leads women to the Alpha Female trope. Ironically, the same people who love to debunk the validity of 'Alpha Males' all eagerly accept the concept of an Alpha Female. They'll make funny videos ridiculing the *Red Pill* for using 'alpha' as an unironic referential term, but they'll readily embrace the idea of an 'alpha' female. That conditioned deference to a default feminine-correctness makes the concept eminently believable. Men can never be Alpha, but Alpha Females are all around us. They also like the idea that identifying with women's delusions of empowerment might eventually get them laid.

## Female Independence

This *Fempowerment* caricature is predicated on the idea that valid, authentic womanhood is defined by a woman's adherence to an independence rooted in self-fulfillment. This is a core principle of feminist ideology. Women are ideally self-fulfilled, self-affirming, autonomous '**things**' needing for nothing outside themselves – with the possible exception of girl-power support from **The Sisterhood** – for validation in their adherence to that ideology. This narrative naturally plays well with women's innate *Solipsism*. The problem inherent in this isolating independence is that it conflicts with women's evolved (*designed*) need for a masculine complement to their psyche.

A woman's Blue Pill conditioning is founded on the *old order*, 70s era feminist notion of the Strong Independent Woman meme. She don't need no man. She is "*independent*" – independent of what? She is not dependent on any man, and anything she might do to specifically please a man goes against that independence. To please a man is to participate in her own "*oppression*" by the nebulous Patriarchy. Those are the mechanics of a meme we now take for granted. From the time girls are five years old this independence *from men* message has been hammered into their psyches by everything from popular culture, to public schooling, to religion, to holidays, to single mothers and their Blue Pill conditioned fathers. Our present-day societal segregation of the sexes (courtesy of the *#MeToo* movement) is a direct result of this independence meme being baked into women's souls from the earliest ages for generations now. I have to laugh when I read women who tell me how '*little girls are still so repressed today*' when a gynocentric social order has eliminated even the thought of not giving girls and women every imaginable form of special dispensation and social justice for over 50 years now.

The call of new order feminists today is "*men must be actively disadvantaged for equality to be achieved.*" Feminism has never been about 'equality', but it was not enough to simply strive for an idealistic egalitarian state between the sexes – men had to be disadvantaged. And in all this, new order women have developed a sense of hubris in independence from men,

not necessarily self-sufficiency. As a result, masculinized women are encouraged to parrot an old order adage: “***We don’t need men, but we want men.***”

## Big Head Babies

And why would they need men at all? Most women fancy themselves as “Alpha Females” by order of degree, but they never really understand that the Strong Independent Woman brand they identify with is based on a masculine dynamic. Essentially they’re alpha males with breasts and a vagina. It’s hard for women to give up that fantasy, especially when they live in an era when men are portrayed as vile, stupid, untrustworthy and ‘dependent’ on women’s unique feminine powerfulness to save them from themselves.

This *old order* narrative instills a sense of empowerment in women based on false narratives. They’re taught to resist an easily hated straw-man of masculinity, and one made all the easier to knock down in our globalized, 24-hour, online consciousness. Hypergamy is dualistic – Alpha Seed/Beta Need, Cads vs. Dads – but half of that desire, the desire for protection, provisioning, parental investment, emotional investment, familiarity and comfort from men, is rooted in a need for security. While women hate to be called the “weaker sex”, biologically, evolutionarily, nature or God has made women the more *vulnerable sex*. The realities of our ancestral past dictated that women (and their offspring) were dependent on men for protection from a chaotic and dangerous world. That need for security is something women still innately seek in today’s men. Why?

***Because human babies have huge heads.***

Eggs are expensive and sperm is cheap. If you have even a marginal interest in intersexual dynamics, no doubt you’ve read this somewhere. Even if you haven’t, if you’re a new religious reader, you probably have some learned or instinctual grasp of men’s *duty* for sacrifice. Particularly, Trad-Cons want “men to be men” and long for the golden era of traditional gender roles. But how did we get to those roles? While a lot of guys in the new order question men’s obligations for self-sacrifice in a social context, evolution has designated men as the disposable sex – especially if that disposability leads to promulgating the human species. Nature, it seems,

takes far more risks with the males of virtually every species in myriad ways.

Buy why are eggs expensive, and is sperm so cheap? Beyond the obvious answer of one egg cell versus millions of sperm cells the answer is simple; human babies have giant heads. It goes something like this:

- Human beings survive by being smart.
- To make a smart brain you need a lot of neurons.
- To make a lot of neurons you need to start early in the gestation process.
- Which means human babies have giant heads.
- But you need to get those babies out of their mothers. So their mothers need inefficiently wide hips, sophisticated brain incubators, and a whole of bunch of other expensive reproductive system modifications.
- Thus, human females are vulnerable and physically helpless compared to the majority of males.
- You also have to deliver those babies early while their heads are still small enough to fit through those widened hips. As such, every human baby is essentially born premature and requires a comparatively long time to reach self-sufficiency. (For comparison, infant horses can run a few hours after being born.)
- In our ancestral past a human female was a vulnerable, inefficient, weaker physical specimen who, for much of her life, is carrying around one or more weak and delicate offspring. Neither can run, fight, nor hunt.
- Unlike females of other species, human females were constantly dependent on the males to protect, feed, and care for them – thus, the provisioning/security need side of Hypergamy became a very important priority.
- As a result, human females also acquired by proximity some of the fragility and importance of humanity's very expensive and fragile children.

Now, a problem arises in this reality; how do you prevent the males from tyrannizing the females, to the detriment of the species? By imbuing males with the same protective instinct towards them that women have towards children. And how do you prevent the females from exploiting that protective instinct to take advantage of males, or from making themselves un-protectable by ignoring male guidance? By imbuing women with the same *instinctive* obedience towards men that children have towards women.

So, because humans have giant heads:

- Men instinctively protect and care for women.
- Women instinctively (want to) obey and respect worthy men.
- Women are to men as children are to women (protection).
- Humans strive for a learned, socially enforced monogamy despite an innate nature that incentivizes a more efficient promiscuity as a mating strategy.

Sexism is hardwired into our species by evolution as an inevitable result of our giant heads. Every religion, social philosophy or sexual strategy is grounded in working with these two instincts: the female instinct to submit, and the male instinct to protect. *Traditional Conservatism* (Trad-Cons) is an attempt to maximize the male protective instinct, through indoctrination and social learning, for the benefit of women. Feminism is an attempt to minimize the female submissive instinct, also through social indoctrination, to enable women to more ruthlessly exploit the male protective instinct. The *Red Pill* is an attempt to teach men to selectively suppress the male protective instinct, to avoid its exploitation by women who are conditioned to not be submissive.

Even in the *old order* Trad-Cons and feminists alike worked tirelessly towards the common goal of female rebellion and emancipation from this evolved order. In the new order, men must be freed from the unconscious, knee-jerk expression of their protective instincts before they can deal with women in a way that maximizes their benefit, rather than that of a stranger. A world dominated by feminism (and feminist-incentivized traditional conservatism) is a world where men prioritize the interests of women, and women prioritize the interests of themselves. It is a world half-full of adults

who must protect children they have no authority over, and half-full of unsupervised children.

## Women Like Men

But in this era, men are weak; depicted in popular culture as either bumbling buffoons or overcompensating, overbearing, abusers who we're told are 'insecure in their masculinity'. Today's men are almost uniformly perceived as "*economically unattractive*"; equally incapable of protecting any woman, much less providing for her children. In new order popular culture this is the message the female Blue Pill teaches little girls and old women alike. As a result, women believe men cannot be trusted to provide anything like physical protection and, increasingly, they can't be relied upon to help pay the bills. Thus, the narrative becomes one about women who must step up and fulfill their own security needs – often by direct resource transfer from men. Simultaneously, men are admonished for not living up to their responsibilities as men while even the thought of the male authority that should be associated with that responsibility is conflated with rape, violence and privilege.

The narrative of a lack of confidence (and competence) in men has been something new order church leaders have readily pounced upon in their efforts to be relevant to the majority of women who now populate their congregations. Around the time the U.S. military announced it would be opening up combat roles to women (2015) a popular criticism of the initiative among Christian pundits and pastors was that allowing women to fight was necessary because men were unwilling to "**Man Up**" and fulfill their masculine duties as warrior/protectors. Conservative Christians invented a fiction that women weren't in fact coveting men's roles, and instead men were forcing women to push their way into combat by shirking their masculine responsibility as protectors. I'll return to this topic later, but the point I'm making is that even in ostensibly 'Patriarchal' institutions like mainstream religions the meme that men of today are lazy, effeminate, unprepared *pussies* is endemic. Not only does this go against the natural order of things, it's also an affront to God when men aren't the protectors of vulnerable women.

To compound this impression, women (and feminized men) are taught that they are in fact *Blank Slate*, functional equals of the other.



All individuals are really just chaotic, individual, unknowable products of whatever social order constructed them. There are no innate natures or differences between the genders – and, according to popular opinion, there are supposedly at least 68 genders as of this writing. Even acknowledging the innate, and eminently provable, complementary natures of men and women is an affront to the equalist narrative. Any man who would base (much less express) his own decision making criteria as such is then shamed via social conventions. The narrative is that he must be needy, or threatened by a “strong woman” or he must want this woman to be his *Mommy* substitute. All of this is a social mechanic meant to force fit that natural complementary criteria into the box of egalitarianism.

The *old order* female Blue Pill teaches women that not only are men not to be trusted for security, but that independence from men is necessary for their very survival. This insecurity about men being incapable of providing security forms the basis of the need for women masculinizing themselves. Women’s evolved need for physical, emotional and provisional security (as an extension of their innate vulnerability) makes the popular perception of men today a matter of life or death to the evolved female psyche. This is the reason most of what I write about is so triggering for women. How dare I suggest women ought to ‘*man down*’?! Men can’t be trusted to ‘be men’, just look at them! Ridiculous, abusive and incompetent men can no longer be relied upon for protection, provisioning or parental investment.

Another popular meme is that ‘women don’t need men to save them!’ As mentioned earlier, the truth of this is that women instinctually look to worthy men to protect and provide for them and their offspring. This is where the old order Prince Charming savior story originates from. The prince saves the life of the damsel in distress, thus proving his quality, she falls in love with him for his daring to sacrifice himself for her survival and they live happily ever-after – and presumedly breed another generation of princes and princesses. This archetypal story is a classic metaphor for the evolved male *Protector Dynamic*. In the new order, however, this archetypal narrative is an affront to women who for the past 50 years have been systematically conditioned to distrust men’s reasons for wanting to protecting or save them. They don’t need saving...until crisis and dangerous circumstance with unavoidable consequences make it real for them. When the floodwaters rise or women are faced with real violence that’s when the

men they told to ‘man down’ should’ve ‘manned up’, and ***what ever happened to chivalry anyway?*** Men, quite literally, cannot win in this new Gynocentric paradigm.

I should add here that this is why women resist the awareness that the new order, *Red Pill*, brings to them. It presumes they must drop all their preconceptions about the nature of men and adopt a conventional femininity that is now alien to them. *Old order* feminism, with a new order connectivity, tells women that the discomfort they feel in adopting conventional femininity is ‘*just how you are*’. However, that discomfort is really due to decades of constant social conditioning to make women feel self-conscious in being feminine in a way that conflicts with the strong independent woman narrative they’ve had socially reinforced for most of their lives. Most of all, in dropping the masculine pretense a woman feels she needs to provide her own security implies she make herself more vulnerable to emotionally investing herself in a man who she believes (by default) is dishonest in his own quality. The **Existential Fear** for women is to invest themselves in a man (and ultimately his children) who tricked her Hypergamous filters (feminine intuition) into believing he was a high-value Alpha when in fact he was a low-value Beta. By suggesting that women drop the masculine pretense and adopt conventional gender complementarity (Biblical submission), it is akin to suggesting she ignore her Hypergamous survival instincts that evolved over millennia.

This is why so many women chafe at *old order* Patriarchal religions and directly or indirectly seek to redefine these doctrines and faiths to suit a feminine-primacy in the new order. The secular influence of masculine distrust is being canonized in today’s feminized faiths.

For over 50 years the prime-directive of feminism has had women striving to achieve the ideal of the *Strong Independent Woman*. This ideal is the carrot that gets the mules to pull the cart. It is an ideal that’s never fully attainable because if it were it would make an end state for feminism a realizable goal rather than the self-perpetuating social mechanism it is. The independent ideal is intentionally ambiguous. The concept is based on selling women the idea that not only can they “have it all”, but they can ***be*** it all too. The ‘independence’ feminism sells is predicated on women being a self-sustaining, self-satisfying, autonomous ‘*thing*’ that doesn’t need for anything outside itself. A woman is every bit as good a feminine role model

as she is a masculine one, ergo, she has no need for men beyond the physical, short term sexual, aspect. In fact, an independence from men, from any form of dependency on men, has been part of the feminist charter since *Seneca Falls* in 1848.

From a *Red Pill* perspective this independence from men narrative has been the single most damaging aspect of feminism in its history. Men and women evolved to be complements, and in evolutionary terms are far stronger together we are than apart. We didn't evolve as independent, self-fulfilling things; we evolved for a complementary interdependence even if our innate mating strategies are inherently adversarial to the other. Even if *Intelligent Design* is your belief, conventional gender complementarity is evident, if not perfect. Each sex's strengths compensates for the other's innate weaknesses and vice versa. While it's beyond the scope of this book, this complementary state between the sexes is biologically, neurologically and behaviorally proven.<sup>1</sup> Yet feminism preaches two lies that conflict with this new order empirical data: not only can a woman "have it all", but she can also be an autonomous being with no intrinsic needs beyond what she can provide for or address herself. The lie is that she, "*don't need no man*" when a hundred thousand years of evolution, and an awful lot of spiritual belief, says different. Men and women *need* each other, but it's feminism (and lately MGTOW) that's selling the lie that they don't. Unfortunately for women, they're painfully (but slowly) learning that men and women are in fact different and the lie of egalitarian equalism has essentially cost them a future without the husband, children and conventional family formation that so many regret later in life.

## **Men Like Women**

For a majority of men born after the Sexual Revolution, masculinity, even the concept of masculinity, has become a subjective consideration. Between 1965 and 2000 a concerted effort to socially engineer a new sort of human male has been a constant effort in Western cultures. This effort expanded exponentially once the global connectivity of our new order was established, but it also raised awareness of the engineering project itself. This anti-masculine engineering had two identifiable goals: distort, confuse or instill a gender-loathing of anything *conventionally* masculine in subsequent generations of men, and remove or demonize all reference, influence and recognition of anything conventionally masculine on a societal level. In mainstream globalized society any acknowledgement of masculinity is effectively criminalized, ridiculed or deliberately obfuscated. There are several ways this war on masculinity is effected, but the primary means is delegitimizing and disqualifying masculinity as anything authentically unique to being male. Ask the average Westernized man what masculinity means to him and you'll likely get one of two answers. The first will be a confused or subjective definition of what masculinity means to him. The second will be a tentative redefining of a masculinity he believes a feminine-correct social order would expect him to subscribe to.

To be a "man" in this era is to accept yourself as one, or a combination, of the common masculine archetypes that have been force-fed to boys and men in popular culture. These are as follows:

### **The Ridiculous Dad**

The easy illustration of this type is *Homer Simpson*, but virtually every comedic portrayal of a *Father* follows this template. He's the goofy buffoon Dad who postures as a 'traditional' man, but we really know that it's all an act. He's laughingly incompetent and clueless about what's going on around him, so he needs his wife or daughter's unique, female-correct, intelligence and intuition to save him from himself and the family from his *inauthentic* masculinity. The *Mother Knows Best* gender reassignment theme has been a

cliché in sit-coms since the mid 70s, starting with *Archie Bunker* in *All in the Family* and carried forward to shows like *Last Man Standing*. Ridiculous Dad teaches generations of men the core lie of female supremacism — Masculinity is never authentic. Masculinity is only ever a mask, or macho posturing, and if men were allowed (by Patriarchal social constructionism) to be their *honest* selves they would emote, behave and think as women do. A female-correct social order relies on this archetype more than any other.

### **The Potential Rapist**

This archetype casts men as perpetually on the verge of anger and violence. He's the frustrated man. Not incompetent per se, but he represents women's evolved proclivity for erring on the side of caution with respect to men's potential for violence. In our ancestral past women learned to always presume a man was potentially violent or angry. This is called the *Male Anger Bias* in evo-psych; when confused about behavioral cues from men, women (and children) who over-estimated men's cues for anger tended to survive into future generations. In new order terms this evolved psychological adaptation has become a useful social convention in demonizing masculinity. Thus, we see man-as-abuser caricatures in popular culture. He's the *Dead Beat Dad*, the abuser, and he's always the guy behind the gun of the latest mass shooting. He's a perpetuator of an arbitrary "rape culture". He's the man who boys are taught a fear of becoming if they don't internalize female-correctness by their Gynocentric teachers.

### **The Confused Man**

This is largely a Beta male archetype. Since the time of the Sexual Revolution the primary means of disempowering and disadvantaging men has been two-fold: convince them that anything innately masculine is evil and anti-social, or failing this, to cast doubt on the legitimacy of their manhood or presumptions of what masculinity *really* is. The Confused Man type is the result of this deliberate blurring of authenticity in masculinity. These are the men who were taught since childhood the Blank Slate lie that gender is solely a social construct. Thus, anything that is uniquely masculine

is just an act boys and men play out to “look tough”. The narrative is that masculinity is a ‘mask men wear’, and if they were truly honest with themselves they would think and behave more like women – because femininity and the female experience is the only *authentic* experience. As a result, the **Confused Man** makes masculinity a subjective experience. He doesn’t know what manhood should mean to him, but his female-primary education has taught him that only the female experience is authentic. Boys are raised as defective girls who grow up into defective *women*. That process requires men to subjectively define masculinity for themselves to align with the female ideal they were taught was authentic in their childhood. So you get men who will say they “*never understood what being a man was all about*” or they “*never fit the mold of what **society** thinks a man should be*”. The *society* part of that misconception presumes that socially constructed Patriarchy is the dominant, oppressive and incorrect social order. What these men don’t realize is that all of these negative presumptions of conventional masculinity were conditioned into them by a Gynocentric upbringing. They are understandably confused about what constitutes masculinity for men.

## The Lost Boys

Today's product of this 50+ year social engineering experiment is the stereotypical *Soy Boy*, the *Cuck*, the *Herbivorous* man, the *Simp*, the *Forever Alone*, the *Mangina* and the *Incel*, and a list of more colorful euphemisms and insults we use to describe the man whose image of masculinity (and where he fits into it) was modeled by the *Feminine Imperative*. These males of the so called 'pussified' Millennial generation have also been called the *Lost Boys* generation by Dr. Jordan Peterson and other notables.

The Lost Boys, and subsequent generations of young men, are the first generations to be raised online. In contrast to the *Boomers* and *Generation X*, the Lost Boys (including *Gen Z*) have never known a world where the internet and smartphones didn't exist. They are the first generations to have been acculturated in a globalized uni-culture at the rate of the fastest internet connection and instant access to information which no prior generations could've imagined. These are the growing children and young adult men who were raised by *YouTube*, *Tumblr*, *Twitter*, *Reddit*, *Instagram*, *Snapchat*, *Tinder*, *Pornhub*, *Pinterest*, *Bitchute*, and *Discord* servers. *Facebook* is old media to these generations. It's where their parents and grandparents keep in touch.

Virtually all of the Lost Boys learned their perception of masculinity from a constant online Blue Pill conditioning. Where *Boomer* and *Gen X* men had to be conditioned by feminine-primary, *analog*, *old order* media, the Lost Boys learned their stunted social skills from interacting digitally with others from behind monitors and smart phones. I say *stunted*, because this is the first generation of young men to be socialized and acculturated without, or with far less, *real time* in-person social learning. The effects of this digital socialization are varied and far reaching; it's likely we won't realize the full generational impact for decades. Autism spectrum disorders are more common among boys than girls. In the U.S., around 3.6 percent of boys aged 3 to 17 years had autism spectrum disorder compared to 1.25 percent of girls.<sup>2</sup> The United States, Canada, Japan and the U.K. top the list of countries with the highest incidence of autism in children. While

ideological factions debate the causes of autism in children, and the rate increases are attributable to an increased awareness, what's not being asked is, why now? Why boys?

All Lost Boys are certainly not autistic, but a decline in, or confusion about, social intelligence is a hallmark of the young men of this online generation. *Asperger's Syndrome* is the popular default *diagnosis* of the socially retarded teenager or the young man who is perpetually awkward. *Sperg* (for Asperger's) is another online insult that describes a guy who is hopelessly inept in social intelligence, has mental issues, usually as a result of, or caused by, his long term, real time social isolation. This is not what prior generations would call an *awkward phase* that boys just go through during puberty. This is long term, perpetuated, social retardation, which is primarily the result of the new order, Gynocentric way in which boys are socialized online. Bear in mind, this is also the generation that has been conditioned from the earliest ages to loathe masculinity or consider it a fluid, subjective identity for themselves.

The long term societal efforts to emasculate men in Western society has not been lost on Traditional Conservatives of all religious stripes. The Lost Boys generations have become a lucrative niche market that online *Gurus*, *Hustlers* and *Life Coaches* are only now learning to effectively tap. The meteoric rise (and rapid decline) of *Dr. Jordan Peterson's* popularity among Lost Boys is a perfect example of how the confusion about their *purpose* in the world as men has made them into an exploitable demographic for the right message. *Dr. Peterson* is a polarizing figure in this new world e-culture. His fan base consists primarily of 15-35 year old males who are looking for direction and/or *meaning* (really *purpose*) in their otherwise isolated existences. Almost universally they call him the "*father they never had.*" He's not alone. A directing influence, a conventionally masculine father, is essentially what they're looking for. The Lost Boys are defined by a search for the guidance and direction that is necessarily provided by the strong, biological father that has been systematically devalued, debased and removed from influencing at least 4 generations of boys and men now.

Growing up in the 80s my own upbringing was largely about rebelling against exactly the "*direction*" that appeals to the Lost Boys. Punk Rock, Heavy Metal and Gangster Hip Hop played the anthems of rebellion and motivating angst for my generation's youth. The Lost Boys generations look



for purpose and a fraternity in the regimentation of the “traditions” we raged against. The paradox of choice that the new order presents to young men is defeated by a gynocentric Blue Pill conditioning that is unable, and unwilling, to direct him how best to take advantage of it.

## Man Up in the Hustle Economy

The Lost Boys are sheep in search of a shepherd; enter the online ‘*teachers*’ of the traditional, moral, masculine direction this growing niche market hungers for:

Path to Manliness  
Art of Manliness  
Legends of Men  
Illimitable Man  
Pinnacle of a Man  
Self-Mastering Man  
Self-Conquering  
We Are Man Enough  
Apex Man Mindset  
Gorilla Mindset  
The Good Man Project

There are hundreds more like these; accounts, coaches, YouTube streamers, masculinity *experts* ready to fill the role of “*father I never had*” for a generation of rudderless young men wondering what to do with themselves. Around 2014 the online Coaching/Guru hustle really began to develop into a template that anyone with a bit of social media savvy could follow. ‘*Smart*’ men (and some women) quit their dead-end cubicle jobs for more lucrative *positivity hustle* dollars that only required the small investment of a laptop, webcam and a willingness to parrot the scripts of *Tony Robbins, Napoleon Hill, Zig Ziglar* or *Norman Vincent Peale*. To be fair, this new ***Hustle Economy*** isn’t unique to the *Manosphere*; the Lost Boys niche market is just one among many. Health & Fitness, “*Entrepreneurs*”, dating/relationship/marriage, personal empowerment, motivational positivity, the *Law of Attraction*, these are just a sampling of what I’ve called the *Success Porn* industry. And everyone sells an *information product* to the Lost Boys.

New order technology makes all the *old order* grifts seem novel to a generation that's never experienced them before. Along with the *Success Porn* positivity hustlers, now pastors, religious leaders and spiritual gurus have also realigned their methods to cash in on this new *Hustle Economy*. One of the fastest growing spiritual sectors this template has been applied to is Evangelical Christian Women's "*Ministries*". Another is the *Masculinity Outreach* that men in Evangelical churches have turned into the "*Christian Kosher*" version of the hustle template. In large part this is where the *Trad-Con* push into the *Hustle Economy* began. With the new order technology and social changes that came in its wake, the barrier to entry into the positivity grift has never been lower. Combine this with a Traditional Conservative mindset with a simplistic-absolutist faith in an *Abrahamic* God and a Blue Pill conditioned investment in gender dynamics, and you get the new breed of "*Father I never had*" to give a direction to the Lost Boys generations.

The prime directive of the *moral absolutist* set is really the same message you'll hear both Trad-Cons and Feminists,...

*"The men of today are pussies!"*

*"We don't need less masculinity; we need more of it."*

*"The young men of today aren't preparing themselves for adulthood, fatherhood, husbandhood."*

*"Men of today are 'kidults' trying to perpetuate their adolescence indefinitely."*

Granted, feminists tend to approach the *Man Up!* narrative from the presumption that masculinity is "toxic", but the intent is the same – men aren't living up to a standard set for them according to what their ideological framework is. For the Trad-Con set, the Lost Boys generations are goldmine. *Old order*, Blue Pill-informed, masculine ideals are something novel to the Lost Boys. Like most men, they hunger for purpose and need direction; and their new online *fathers* are eager to fill that role. By happy accident *Jordan*

*Peterson* was the right man with the right message with the right internet gravitas to become the Lost Boys anointed *father*. And while he may have fallen from grace since his ascension he proved one thing: the profit model of *Man Up!//Father-I-Never-Had* could be very lucrative in the *Hustle Economy*.

## Neopatriarchs and the Utility of ‘*Real Men*’

The rise of the *Neopatriarchs* was the logical outcome of this new *Manhood* grift-template. What defines a *Neopatriarch*? He holds the keys to what he believes is *authentic* masculinity. The focus of his message may vary, but the offer is always the same; if you want to be a *real man* you’ll have to align yourself with his *old order* ideals. Those ideals are almost universally rooted in *old order* religious or metaphysical spiritual beliefs repackaged for new order sensibilities. The *Neopatriarchs* who don’t outwardly appeal to magical thinking often rely on romanticized appeals to Stoicism and classical *manly virtues* – later they get religious in nature.

There’s nothing inherently wrong with directing men back to a conventional understanding of masculinity. I make efforts to clarify conventional masculinity in all of my own work. The problem is that the *Neopatriarchs* are essentially building online personal brands based on the same *old order* ideals that the Feminine Imperative has been using against men since the age of *Chivalry*. Appeals to men’s *Burden of Performance*, the ideals of masculine responsibility, honor and the male *protector* instinct have always been useful to the interest of women. The measure of control that stems from pandering to the *male protector dynamic* is one of the primary reasons women integrated the tenets of *Courtly Love* into the framework of *Chivalry*. Sexual agency and men’s sense of duty are the classical thumbscrews women use in attaining covert power. Men use the same dynamics to influence, intimidate, shame and motivate other men. In the *Hustle Economy*, what’s old is new to the Lost Boys generations. If you can mix God or supernatural “*energy*” into that mix, even if just hinting at it, it makes for a convincing self-improvement program.

Feminism and the Feminine Imperative have effectively used the same *Man Up!* appeal in the 50 years after the Sexual Revolution. That may sound odd considering the 50 year social engineering experiment of *Fempowering* women and erasing masculinity I mentioned above. Why would Gynocentrism want men to Man Up when it’s been telling them to *man down* for decades? Although Gynocentrism has systematically ridiculed, demonized and obfuscated masculinity, men’s’ desire to

understand and identify with some sense of authentic *Manhood* is still the same innate, exploitable, drive it's always been. Women have always shamed men for their lack of *authentic* masculinity to get them to do what they want, but in the post-Sexual Revolution era this exploit takes a different tact. For the last four generations of men, whatever benefits female interests is what a "*Real Man*" would do:

"A *Real Man* isn't threatened by a strong woman."

"*Real Men* aren't *afraid* to date a single mother."

"A *Real Man* listens to his wife."

"A *Real Man* prioritizes his woman's needs."

"He's not the Stepdad, he's the 'Dad who stepped up'."

There are dozens more tropes like this that have been propagated in feminine-primary pop-culture since the early 70s. All of these witticisms center on one principle: only women can tell you what a *Real Man* does, how he behaves and what he thinks. For generations of men conditioned to either hate or *subjectivize* conventional definitions of masculinity, this selling of *authentic* manhood back to them in the form of female interests is a key element of the Blue Pill. For *old order* generations of men deliberately confused by what manhood should mean to them, only the Feminine Imperative was allowed to provide them with the Manhood Medal; and only after he internalized behaving, thinking and living in a way that promoted women's interest and policed men's interests. Anything else, anything hinting at the interests of men, is misogyny, chauvinism, sexism, and today, a hate crime.

Being the only source of authentic masculinity in an age of masculine confusion (your own ideology created) was an excellent means of control for Gynocentrism. In fact, it's the definition of profiteering; create the problem for which only you have the solution. And right up to the advent of the internet and the information age this means of gendered control was

uncontested. Generations of masculinity-confused men were oblivious to, and frustrated by, a social experiment that kept them ignorant of the nature of women. This ignorance-control reached its apex in the 1990s. If you look back at popular stories, movies and television from that decade with a *Red Pill Lens* you'll be amazed at how laughably ignorant men were about gender politics. However, the explosion of globalized information that came after the internet upended this control. Men began to unplug from themselves from the Matrix. While the progress men made in coming to terms with their ignorance of women's nature (*Red Pill* awareness) was admirable, the *old order* beliefs were still being engineered into Millennial and Gen Z, men and boys. The social experiment adapted to its new globalized environment. Via the internet Western feminism is exported much more efficiently to societies around the world, but the Gynocentrism it serves still depends on men's ignorance of conventional masculinity and their complacency in their own disempowerment.

Today's *Neopatriarchs*, most of whom are products of this social experiment, recognize the confusion and/or disgust the Lost Boys feel about what manhood should mean to them. The incentives to prepare themselves for what prior generations called 'personal success' have been systematically erased and replaced by a globalizing Gynocracy. No longer do women require the provisioning (or even parental investment) of men to effect their own long term security. In the course of just two decades young men have adapted their life strategies not only to the lack of personal incentives to prepare for an *old order* marriage, but also the strong disincentives of even considering a long term pairing with a woman. As a result the Lost Boys become the *Drop Out Generation*. When the "*Juice ain't worth the squeeze*" and even the *squeeze* might land you in jail or in life long debt, what's the point in preparing for it?

But *old order* ideals of Traditional Masculinity are what define the existences of the *Neopatriarchs*. No matter that a majority of them have fallen prey to exactly the circumstances that the young men of the *Drop Out Generation* hope to avoid: marriages to single mothers, divorces that left them and their families destroyed, married to women who cheated on them, living in sexless marriages, financially dependent marriages, etc. It's the adherence to belief that drives the *Neopatriarchy* in spite of all that. In place of the Feminine Imperative withholding *authentic* masculinity, now the

*Neopatriarch* will tell the Lost Boys what a **Real Man** should do to get his Manhood Medal. And it's *no school like the old school* from there on.

To their credit, the *Neopatriarchs* understand that men innately need a tribal fraternity of some sort. Most of their organizations center on some secret society, warrior lodge dynamic where only **Real Men** are allowed entry. The Feminine Imperative, in its drive to erase and control men has inserted itself into, assimilated and destroyed virtually every exclusively Male Space it's targeted since the early 70s. While female-exclusive organizations are actively encouraged, any and every male-exclusive organization is deemed an example of institutionalized misogyny and sexism. Overseers in the locker room is essentially a means of gynocentric control over men. By this definition the *Neopatriarchs* are pitched as clandestine *orders* of **Real Men** fighting feminism or *Saving the West*.

Again, in and of itself, men gathering with a common purpose is part of conventional masculinity and something to be encouraged. The problem is with the *old order* purpose *Neopatriarchs* believe a successful **brand** of masculinity should be based on. In 2015, Pickup Artist-turned-Christian social pundit, **RooshV**, attempted yet another rebrand of his online persona by launching **Neomascularity**. This 'new' movement would have been more aptly titled **Retro-Mascularity** because it was essentially an appeal for a return to a romanticized pre-Sexual Revolution golden era of masculinity; an era that only existed in a time when women and men had a mutually complementary interdependence on each other. **Neomascularity** was really the first commercial attempt to brand a blend of what *Neopatriarchs* could accept of the new *Red Pill* awareness and *old order* religiosity. It embraced what the *Red Pill* exposed about women's feral natures, yet rejected the evolution-science that it was founded on. Homosexual men were expressly out of the *secret order* of **Real Neomasculine Men** yet *Roosh* found time to have lunch with then *Breitbart* writer, and flamboyant homosexual, *Milo Yiannopolis* to get an article written about **Neomascularity** and his subsequent world tour of 2015.

In 2020, few people remember or care what Neomascularity tried to be, but in principle it's what *Neopatriarchs* are still trying to build a brand on in the new Hustle Economy. Some of these guys enter into their low-risk masculinity gift with the best of intentions. They earnestly believe that they're making a difference in re-masculinizing the men of today. That *true*



*belief* is what makes their investment in a return to a moralized, Blue Pill, *old order* masculinity ultimately damaging for themselves and the men they draw into their orbit. Moral absolutists in the Manosphere put the prescription before the diagnosis. For the *believer* the moral ‘solution’ always precludes understanding the problem, and in doing so defines the problem in terms of how it *should* be solved by the moral solution. This is not just a Christian thing. There are many *Neopatriarchs* of a variety of religious and spiritualist beliefs, but the underlying dynamics of a globalizing Crisis of Masculinity is the foundation on which they make proselytizing an online career.



## **THE ROMANTIC IDEAL**

## A Religion Called Chivalry

**R***ed Pill* is a metaphor from the movie, *The Matrix*. It represents a conscious choice to reject lies that we have accepted without even knowing we had accepted them. I'm not really a fan of the metaphor anymore. In the beginning it served pretty well when I was trying to explain the differences between conditioned belief sets and the evolving truths about intersexual dynamics back in the early 2000s. Today, the term *Red Pill* has become distorted to align with the pet ideologies of outspoken internet ideologues. One of the problems with the term is its application across overly-divergent perspectives. The 2017 documentary *The Red Pill* for example represented the ***Men's Rights Activist*** (MRA) perspective, which has been a push to make feminists live up to the stated ideals of feminism 'true' equality and egalitarianism. Another group is the MGTOW (Men Going Their Own Way). From what I've experienced even MGTOW argue passionately amongst themselves about what this really means; one argument being whether married MGTOWs are true MGTOWs. As the argument goes, who is to tell a man if he *really* is going his own way? I won't try to resolve that argument in this book as I'm not a stakeholder.

A label *Dalrock* used to apply to himself was *Unchivalrous Christian*. After more than 10 years in this sphere I understand why. Nearly all conservative Christians would consider this label a contradiction in terms, and this is the real problem with modern concepts of chivalry. A feminized definition of *chivalry* has become a parody of Christianity that was eventually accepted by Western Christians as if it were an article of faith. When I first started writing I mistakenly believed that what we call chivalry started off as something noble and was perverted in or around the 20<sup>th</sup> century. However, the more I looked at it the more obvious it became – it was a perversion from the beginning.

In its basest form *Game* is an applied psychology. The primary application of *Game* is seduction– specifically a man seducing a woman. *Game* is profoundly disruptive because not only are men highly motivated to be sexually successful to satisfy sexual desire, but as a society we also equate the ability to attract and seduce women with intrinsic value in men.

It isn't just secular culture that makes this equation. If anything, *believers* are worse in this regard. Women's approval is seen as anything from a holy sanctifying force needed to purify marital sex, to the very words of God by modern *Believers*. This near universal belief that women's sexual desires point to male virtue is rooted in a bastardized form of *Chivalry*, which explains why Christians in particular have this bug the worst. It also explains why *Game* is such a threat to so-called Christian values.

There is another group most *Red Pill* savvy Christians avoid mentioning; these are the Pickup Artists (PUAs). Their focus was (usually) seduction purely for the sake of sexual access. They are, by and large, the ones who discovered/developed/spread *Game*, for obvious reasons. One way to look at it is that today's *Chivalry* is both a system of moral values *and* a form of *Game* (a set of tools to seduce women) that contemporary *believers* adopt. In both regards it is false, but you can't really appreciate why they're false without a proper understanding of the origins of Chivalry. Pickup Artists, by and large, aren't interested in the moral question and reject chivalry simply because it isn't an effective way to seduce women (virtuousness is an attraction killer). If it worked as advertised, they would happily employ it. From a religious perspective, *Chivalry* is a parody of Christianity; It's become a false religion unto itself as feminization has spread through mainstream religions – much in the same way that the Soulmate myth is an accepted tenet of *secular* religion (later adopted by feminized Christianity).

Chivalry is simply one of many ideologies that was subsumed by westernized romanticism. Originally, Chivalry also applied toward things such as not hitting a man while he wasn't looking or attacking a blatantly indefensible, inferior, or even a respected foe when he was unarmed. It was originally intended as a martial code of ethics determined by the *Roman Catholic Church* to control the otherwise lawless and violent natures of male soldiers and knights who had a penchant for brigandism in the middle ages. What passes for most people's understanding of chivalry is actually a classic interpretation and bastardization of western romanticism and the ideologies of '*courtly love*'; which ironically enough was also an effort by noble women of the period intended to better control the men of the early and *High Renaissance*. Essentially, it amounted to a taming of the over-dominating masculine influence of the time by laying out a system of

proscribed appropriate conditions necessary for men to satisfy a woman to gain access to her intimacy.

In our new order, *chivalry* is no longer an accurate term. However, it serves in the abstract because so many people in globalized Western societies intrinsically understand ‘*chivalry*’ in its modern context.. What most people refer to as *Chivalry* is actually a bastardized form of ***Courtly Love***. This in turn served as the ideal for the **Romantic Love** that literally every human being on planet earth reveres as much as the gods they worship. Even for the Atheist, an idealized *Romantic Love* is the basis of the Soulmate Myth. There’s a popular misperception in mainstream religion today that the ugly, secular, feminism we see assimilating our classical, *old order* faiths are the unique result of a 20<sup>th</sup> century cultural shift. The truth is this feminine religious assimilation has been endemic of almost all religions for at least 1500 years. Only in the late 20<sup>th</sup> century, in the technological expansiveness of the *new order*, has this effort come into its own. Early Puritans tried to tame courtly love by bringing it inside Christian marriage. With possibly the best of intentions, this was the first step towards the standardization of Romantic Love as the ideal basis of not just Christian marriage, but *all* forms of marriage we consider *legitimate* today.

## Classic Chivalry

The year is around 1060, the scene is medieval Europe, and over the last 100 years or so (the ‘*Dark Ages*’) a feudal system of moneyed landowners and their personal militias have made a mess of things. Despite the best efforts of containment and control by the **Holy Roman Empire**, constant violence and sporadic wars amongst these small land-holders have led to near societal breakdown. Brigandism and barbarism are common amongst these militias – what they lacked was a common enemy to unite them, and what the church lacked was resources. Eventually the Holy Roman Empire would provide that common enemy in the form of the Muslims (Moors) to the south and a series of bloody Crusades ensued. The Moors possessed the resources the church desired, but the church lacked a cohesive social / religious dogma under which to unite these various militias they needed to process the Crusades. Thus was born the *Code of Chivalry*. This quasi-religious code appealed to the martial pride of the evolving noble classes, but the new ideology was also cemented into the commoners by pairing it with the religious and romantic doctrines of the era.

The code was described as the *Ten Commandments of Chivalry*:

1. Believe the Church’s teachings and observe all the Church’s directions.
2. Defend the Church.
3. Respect and defend all weaknesses.
4. Love your country.
5. Do not recoil before an enemy.
6. Show no mercy to the Infidel. Do not hesitate to make war with them.
7. Perform all duties that agree with the laws of God.
8. Never lie or go back on one’s word.
9. Be generous to everyone.
10. Always and everywhere be right and good against evil and injustice.

Not a *bad* code of ethics under which to unite factions who previously had little better to do than smash each other with maces and steal each other's resources. It's a difficult task to get a man to die for another man, but give him a lofty purpose in an ideology, and *that* he'll die for. The *Chivalric Code* worked surprisingly well for over three centuries and was instrumental in consolidating most of the countries that evolved into the Western Europe we know today. However, as with most well-intentioned social contracts, what originated as a simplistic set of absolute rules for knights' (and gentlewomen's) behaviors to be governed by were progressively distorted by countervailing influences as time, affluence and imperatives shifted and jockeyed for control.



## Courtly Love

For all of the influence that the church exerted in using chivalry as a social contract, it was primarily a contract played out amongst men. With the notable exceptions of a few select Queens and *Jeanne d'Arc*, it was only men who had any true social input either publicly or privately during this time. It wasn't until the mid-thirteenth century that (*noble*) women would insert their own imperatives into the concept of chivalry. At the time, chivalry was a man's club, and unless she was a widow, women were more or less insignificant in the scope of chivalry. A nobleman might take a wife, but rarely were these marriages *romantic* in nature. Rather they served as political alliances between states (and often consolidating church control) and a man's romantic and sexual interests were served better by mistresses or the spoils of his military conquests. Infidelity was *expected* in noble marriages.

Enter the French noblewomen *Eleanor of Aquitaine* and *Marie de Champagne*. Both of these Ladies were instrumental in attaching the concept of **Courtly Love** and romance to the Chivalric Code that the women of today blithely complain is lacking in men. The wealth and affluence that Western Europe enjoyed from the late Medieval to the High Renaissance era provided the perfect environment into which high-born women were feeling more comfortable inserting *their* feminine imperative. Both these noble women had a notorious love for the traveling *Troubadours* of the time, espousing acts of love and devotion as ephemeral merits for a new aristocracy. Originally courtly love was a *Pagan* ideal, but as the Church had done centuries before, when ideologically fused to the Chivalric Code it gradually proved to be an amazingly effective source of social control for women. While powerful men of the period exercised overt power, the women became progressively more adept at influencing covert forms of power. The key thing is that these *Troubadours* were not some “*traveling band*” of performers singing for their supper. Maybe later, but at this time, they were major nobles, from both the nobility and the higher noble classes.

In its earliest form, **Courtly Love** was more salacious than the social control device it evolved into. Not unlike the social conventions women will

use today to excuse their own promiscuity, the concept of Courtly Love was a rationale for noble women to engage in everything from romantic dalliances with these *troubadours* to legitimizing their own sexual infidelity. Properly applied, the phrase, *l'amour courtois* defined an extravagantly artificial and stylized romantic relationship – a *forbidden* affair that was characterized by five main attributes. In essence, the relationship was:

- **Aristocratic:** Courtly love was only to be practiced by noble lords and ladies. Although the commoners would later adopt the idealized tenets, its proper place was the royal palace or the courts of nobility.
- **Ritualistic:** Couples engaged in a *courtly* relationship conventionally exchanged gifts and tokens of their affair. The lady was *wooed* according to elaborate conventions of etiquette and was the constant recipient of songs, poems, bouquets, sweet favors, and ceremonial gestures. For all these painstaking attentions on the part of her lover, she need only return a short hint of approval, the merest passing of affection. She was the exalted *Domina* – the commanding “*mistress*” of the affair; he was but her *servus*—a lowly but faithful servant. In most cases his life was literally in her hands as she could have him killed at her slightest displeasure.
- **Secret:** Courtly lovers were pledged to secrecy. The foundation for their affair – the source of its special thrill – was that the rest of the world (except for a few confidantes or go-betweens) was excluded. In effect, the lovers existed in a universe to themselves – a special world with its own places (the secret rendezvous), rules, codes, and commandments. This is still a common theme in modern romance stories.
- **Adulterous:** “*Fine love*”, almost by definition, was extramarital. Its principle attraction was that it offered an illicit escape from the dull routines and boring confinements of *noble* marriage. The *troubadours themselves scoffed at marriage*, regarding it as an exaggerated religious swindle. In its place they exalted their own ideal of a disciplined, decorous carnal relationship whose

ultimate objective (ostensibly) was not crude physical satisfaction, but a sublime and sensual intimacy. *Fine Love* appealed to women's emotional state, not specifically sexual release.

- **Literary:** Before it established itself as a popular real-life activity, Courtly Love first gained attention as a subject and theme in imaginative literature. Chivalrous knights and their passionately adored ladies were already popular figures in song and story before they began spawning a host of real-life imitators in the palace halls and boudoirs of medieval Europe. Arthurian legend is rife with the concepts of Courtly Love's intrigues and infidelities even though the era in which they imaginatively took place was hundreds of years before the advent of "*Fine Love*".

This last, literary, part is important to consider. Much of what we call *chivalry* today is dependent upon the popularity and evolution of the concept throughout history. The Romance literature genre of our era still finds its roots in the ideals of hundreds of years of development of Courtly Love. In fact, our modern concept of what an idealized love *should* qualify as is founded on this metric. The convention of prearranged marriage (by tradition or contract) was the first cultural shift that romantic love challenged. *Romeo and Juliet*, indeed almost all of *Shakespeare's* romantic plays, are impossible without the cultural normalization of an idealized romantic love as the global standard for love.

What we consider acts of romance today – “keeping it fresh” according to Oprah's advice – what we consider our *chivalric duties* to uphold in their regard, are all the results of a 13<sup>th</sup> century *feminine imperative's* attempts to better effect women's innate (and socially repressed) instincts for Hypergamy. When we think of noble masculine acts of self-sacrifice for women this is where their origins are. Romantic love requires sacrifice to be legitimate. Love conquers all – *All for love*, as the song goes. Even dying for romantic love (even suicide) is elevated to a noble self-sacrifice, which in turn aligns with the evolved male-protector instinct men hold for women. *Eggs are expensive, sperm is cheap*, is made all the easier to accept when

popular social and religious conventions reinforce that evolved reality in a way that's palatable to our egos.

During the Courtly Love era one of the more cruel acts of devotion a 'lover' may ask of her paramours was to *bleed* themselves for her; capturing the blood in a vessel after slicing his forearm and comparing the amount therein. In the doldrums of a well provided-for existence, women will actively create the elusive **indignation** they need to feel alive. The women of the early courts were effectively perfecting the art of maintaining a bullpen of what we might call Beta Male Orbiters willing to address all of her unmet emotional needs. The Courtly Love practices of the 13<sup>th</sup> century served the same purpose for women as *Instagram* does today – *attention* – balancing the Alpha seed with the Beta need.

Like today's push for men to better identify with the feminine, the idea of Courtly Love was to 'encourage' men to explore their feminine sides with **divine** expressions of love, offerings of poetry, fantastic (often life threatening) feats to prove one's devotion or presenting gifts beyond compare to, again, prove ones quality and sincerity to the "*object*" of his desire – hers being the only gauge for acceptance. This qualifying for a woman's intimate approval is the root belief of Beta men today. In fact the pretense of a man making women his *Mental Point of Origin* in the Blue Pill conditioning of today is founded in a qualification dynamic that began in Courtly Love. When men rebel against the idea that women should be the metric by which a man measures his personal value, this Chivalric / Courtly Love root is where that default belief originated. And just like the women of today, the women of the time's behaviors rarely matched their stated intents. But far be it from the objective eye to cast a doubt upon women's intentions for fear of social ostracization. To question a *Woman's Prerogative* (to change her mind), also a tenet of Courtly Love, was itself an *unchivalric* proposition.

The modern elevation of unconstrained romantic love to something pure, transcendental, wise, and moral is something future cultures will look back upon with great curiosity. Wiser cultures than ours understood that romantic love is an incredibly powerful force which unless carefully constrained tends to wreak great havoc. *Passionate* desire and love often had disastrous results according to the classical authors. Shakespeare's *Romeo and Juliet* again

serves as a warning against the dangerously childish nature of feral romantic love, although today audiences are unlikely to make sense of this message. Our modern view of romantic love is so profoundly foolish because it fails to grasp the fact that the unconstrained search for romantic love leads to a never ending stream of new love, ultimately followed by disappointment and disinterest for one and heartbreak for the other. The women of the Courtly Love era, when afforded the leisure to do so, standardized this cycle of highs and lows as an idealized form of love. This constant quest for a new high or a *fix* followed by the inevitable crash is at the core of today's *choice addiction*. For women pursuing choice addiction the reality of the larger pattern is nearly universally ignored, and the momentary feeling of "*I will love him forever*" is frozen in time with her own trail of wreckage conveniently forgotten.

When men act this way we call them players or cads, but when women act this way we tend to say, ***She was following her heart!***

Indeed, the quest for "*true love*" is at the core of women's entitled path to marriage. In the event that she finds herself not wanting to keep her commitment this is nearly universally offered as proof that it must not have been "*true love*" after all, and there is great suspicion that the man must have somehow deceived her. This coincides with women's *Existential Fear* – to give her heart (and reproductive potential) to a man whom she believed was an Alpha, but later proved to be a Beta unworthy of her life's commitment and emotional investment.

Consider this quote from *The Origin and Meaning of Courtly Love*, Roger Boase:

*...the lover continually fears lest he should, by some misfortune, displease his mistress or cease to be worthy of her; the lover's position is one of inferiority; even the hardened warrior trembles in his lady's presence; she, on her part, makes her suitor acutely aware of his insecurity by deliberately acting in a capricious and haughty manner; love is a source of courage and refinement; the lady's apparent cruelty serves to test her lover's valor.<sup>1</sup>*

Christians have fallen for this toxically foolish concept. Indeed, as a result of the widespread feminization of all mainstream religion, the Romantic Love ideal has become standardized as formal doctrine. As a result, when Christians approach the epidemic of wife-initiated divorce the cultural focus is not on the scriptural framing of marriage but on demanding that husbands make their wives love *them* instead of the new man she has fallen in love with. While women tend to either ignore the cyclical pattern of *feral* love altogether or frame each new emotional train wreck as an essential stone on the ultimate path to **the One**, men are at least generally more aware of the absurd nature of uncommitted romantic love. Our foolish elevation of romantic love to a **moral** force and the ultimate good is even more disastrous because large numbers of women now also feel that they have the right to marry a man they aren't able to fall in love with. Our current madness stands in stark contrast to the elegant wisdom of the Bible on the topic, which explains that *lifelong marriage* is the **only** moral safe harbor for sex, but that it is only wise to marry if you *burn with passion* for your future spouse.

While I'm using Christianity as the basis for how 'Chivalry' and the romantic ideal has become its own moral force, I need to emphasize that *all* religions of today are subjected to this underlying ideal. As our societies coalesce in a new globalism, Western feminism and the Feminine Imperative has spread the influence of the romantic ideal exponentially among our new global consciousness. While some religions (usually the more orthodox ones) seem to be resisting the influence of the romantic ideal better than others (Islam for example) it's important to remember that this ideal is based on evolved, limbic, reproductive desires in men and women. The romantic ideal is supremely attractive to women because it promises an idealized control over their Hypergamous circumstances. For men it appeals to their *Burden of Performance* and their innate protection instincts. Men's evolved nature predisposes them to idealism as it is – men are deductive problem solvers, but we rely on an innate sense of idealism to take the initiative to solve problems. When you insert 'God's Will' into this mix, when you conflate the female-primary romantic ideal with divine providence, you get a very potent means of social control over men.

## Chivalry Game

While the *Feminine Imperative* remains the same, its social extensions for exerting itself change with conditions and environment it finds itself in. There's been some discussion in the Manosphere that feminism can only exist in an affluent society that provides sufficient internal social controls to protect the extensions of the Feminine Imperative. For instance, while *Slut Walks* may be encouraged in Sweden, there are none in any Middle Eastern countries at the moment. One socioeconomic environment supports the expression of the imperative, the other does not. We can make a moral argument about which society is more progressive or repressive, but the fact remains that affluence and deprivation both influence the expressions of the Feminine Imperative. The concept of chivalry in its original intent was the result of a social control in an otherwise lawless environment. Later, when affluence accumulated and an upper class evolved, then do we see the social extensions of the Feminine Imperative exercised in society. This is an important concept to consider in a rapidly globalizing sexual marketplace.

Fusing the philosophy and rituals of courtly love with the chivalric code was one such extension of the time – and a more enduring one I'll add. The major failing most *White Knights* (a term derived from Chivalric dedication to the interests of women) and moralistic leaning *Red Pill* men have today is understanding that the modern concept of chivalry, and all their feel-good Arthurian idealism bastardized for the last millennia, sprang from the want of a more exercisable Hypergamy for the women of the era. It should then come as no shock that the old model of romanticized chivalry would conflict with the more overt social extension of today's feminism. A want for that old, socially coerced, masculine devotion clashes with the 'do-it-yourself' feminism of today.

*Red Pill* awareness and *Game* were the logical, adaptive response to a globalizing social order based on women's Hypergamous imperatives. However, one thing we need to be very careful of is not to try to create a theology of *Game* (intentionally or not). This would be replicating what Western culture did with chivalry. The Bible, the Quran, the Torah, don't tell us to *Game* our wives, just like they don't tell us to buy them flowers and

propose on one knee or speak their *love language*. In a Christian context, the Bible also needs to be the lens Christians view *Game* through, not the other way around.

Now, if we are clear on all that, *Game* can make it easier to stop rejecting what the Bible (and other religious texts) plainly tells us. Contemporary feminized Christians tend to reject the bulk of what the New Testament teaches about men, women, and marriage because it offends our *primary* religion – that of *Chivalry* and the romantic ideal. *Game* helps us recognize the error of worshiping chivalry. It is beneficial, but we shouldn't then make the same mistake and confuse *Game* for Christianity. Wives should *submit to their husbands in fear and reverence*, not because it generates “*tingles*” (sexual attraction), but because this is what the Bible states. Husbands should see themselves in **headship** not because this makes them sexy, but because it is what the Bible, the Quran, the Torah, tells us. And if someone outright rejects *Game* but chooses to follow biblical teaching on marriage anyway, they are doing the right thing for the right reason and any disagreement on *Game* is akin to two Christians disagreeing about the proper way to forecast the weather.

While I generally agree with the concepts of men being Alpha or Beta as abstractions I disagree with the common acceptance that Alpha is necessarily *good*, and Beta is *bad*. Remember, these are abstract terms for objective states, not binary definitions. Blogger *Roissy* may have mocked Betas for being sexual losers, but he understood what nearly all modern *believers* fail to grasp – being sexy isn't a sign of *virtue* in a man. Betas are careful and loyal, and this makes them boring and less sexy than exciting Alpha bad-boys. By this definition ***Marriage is fundamentally Beta***. Many MGTOW and PUAs alike refer to marriage as a public and legal declaration of “***Oneitis***” – an over-investment in the Soulmate Myth.

Since 2010 I've been seeing Christians outside the men's sphere use the term *Alpha* to represent *good* husbands, and Betas to represent *losers* – usually the men who are more sexually successful than themselves who need to be disqualified in a religious sense. This is an anti-marriage perspective. The allure here is that for decades conservative Christians have responded to feminist rebellion by declaring that if men were just **good enough**, women wouldn't be tempted to rebel and go for the nuclear option of divorce. I'll discuss women's rebellion in the *Marriage* chapter, but the



implied solution is that we can create an elite squad of *crack* husbands who will be so irresistible that their wives won't rebel. This has a number of glaring problems. One is that if we say only elite men are fit for '*moral*' Christian marriage, we are saying the same for women. The other is that the way you create a crack squad of anything is by ruthlessly cutting out the men who can't hack it. How do you weed out the loser husbands who somehow made it into the program of Christian marriage? You wash them out via the divorce courts. And in fact this is exactly what we have embraced, without so much as an afterthought to the children who will thereby grow up without their father in the home.

In the global ideological marketplace religion and chivalry are intertwined. Nearly all major religions today would struggle greatly to separate the two in a meaningful way, especially when it comes to the proper roles of men and women and the moral primacy of romantic love. This is true despite the fact that the ideas now accepted as "Christian" were created as a parody of Christianity. The Bible teaches Christians that wives should submit to their husbands in all things, with fear and reverence, and call their husband *lord*. Chivalry teaches Christians that a man should submit to his *lady* in all things, with fear and reverence. Chivalry, the mock religion that decadent medieval aristocrats contrived as a devious joke, is now mistaken by modern Christians for true religion. This makes modern Christians helpless when trying to fight against feminism, because the temptation is to offer chivalry as the "way back" to Christianity.

## Feminism 1.0

Today's Trad-Cons are laboring under the assumption that Chivalry is a tool to fight feminism. What makes this so confusing is that Chivalry and feminism are quite difficult to separate. In a sense, the romanticized Chivalry that *courtly love* bastardized centuries ago was the first version of feminism – ***Feminism 1.0*** if you will. Chivalry covertly served (still serves) the same female-primacy that modern feminism overtly enforces in today's globalized Gynocentrism. Modern feminism is fundamentally an appeal to Chivalry, which is the essential truth of ***Dalrock's Law of Feminism***:

*Feminism is the assertion that men are evil and naturally want to harm women, followed by pleas to men to solve all of women's problems.*

The error is assuming that doing women's bidding will eventually lead to feminist gratitude. In *Red Pill* circles we call this the *Captain Save a Ho* ideal, or the Savior Schema. Chivalry is a fundament of Blue Pill conditioning in that it perpetuates a transactional association between men and women in which women are always the arbiters. She has the vagina; she makes the rules. Happy wife, happy life, and if Momma ain't happy, ain't no one happy.

Traditional Conservatives foolishly believe that one more act of valiant chivalry will finally win over *Fempowered* women. With the perfect act of Chivalry they believe women will transform into the *righteous* women who **can** appreciate them. Chivalry is a way to strike a heroic pose while avoiding the prospect of opposing feminism. Worse still, in the chivalrous mindset, feminist expressions of ingratitude are only proof that the chivalrous man is on the right and heroic path. Persistence in the face of cruel scorning by his lady is the very essence of ***chivalrous manhood***. The same manhood the last 4 generations of men hope to attain. This is the root cause of the Blue Pill idea that men must endure constant rejection from women while perpetually qualifying for her intimate approval. Even in Christian marriages, the endless qualification and learned self-abasement of

married men is expected from “*Godly Men*”. Trad-Con men often reflexively default to self-deprecation when introducing or talking about their “*Brides*”.

*“God is good because I can’t believe my beautiful Bride would ever have anything to do with a loser like me.”*

This annoying self-deprecating habit grates on their wives because his quality as a man is reflective of her status as a woman, but few of these guys know that their defaulting to self-deprecation is the result of a romantic-chivalric ideal they’ve internalized that permeates their religious beliefs. *Happy wife, happy life* is a chivalric article of his faith. When a wife is *unhappy* it becomes a sign that God is not happy with him, thus, Christianity has placed a man’s meriting a woman’s happiness on par with acts of faith.

In *The Allegory of Love*, C.S. Lewis explains that courtly love teaches that men must look to women for moral guidance:

*The love which is to be **the source of all that is beautiful in life and manners** must be the reward freely given by the lady, and only our superiors can reward. But a wife is not a superior. As the wife of another, above all as the wife of a great lord, she may be queen of beauty and of love, the distributor of favors, **the inspiration of all knightly virtues, and the bridle of ‘villainy’**; but as your own wife, for whom you have bargained with her father, she sinks at once from lady into mere woman. How can a woman, whose duty is to obey you, be the maidens whose grace is the goal of all striving and whose displeasure is **the restraining influence upon all uncourtly vices**?<sup>2</sup>*

Chivalry is fundamentally anti-biblical. It teaches that women are inherently moral. Biblical marriage is antithetical to the wife worship Chivalry demands. This involves associating both women and their feelings of *romantic love* with virtue and the divine. Biblical marriage is anti-chivalry because of male headship and because it is based on commitment

instead of female-primary emotional imperatives. Men's sexual urges tempt them to sin, but in the chivalrous world women's sexuality is always *pure* and always a *gift* to bestow upon worthy men. It only results in sin if men somehow corrupt women's natural purity. Again, this aligns with the victimhood status of women that feminism has always perpetuated. This is *not* the biblical view, but because Christians have adopted Chivalry it has replaced the biblical view.

There is a new sexual morality which modern Christians and non-Christians alike have embraced in the place of biblical marriage, and it isn't centered around overt hedonism.

**The new sexual morality is centered around *romantic love*.**

What modern Christians have done is place romantic love above marriage. Instead of seeing marriage as the moral context to pursue *romantic love* and sex, *romantic love* is now seen as the moral place to experience sex and marriage. This inversion is subtle enough that no one seems to have noticed, but if you look for it you will see it *everywhere*, and not just in Christianity. Lifetime marriage, with separate defined roles for husband and wife and true commitment is what makes sex and *romantic love* moral in the biblical view. In our new view, *romantic love* makes sex moral, and the purpose of marriage is to publicly declare that you are experiencing the highest form of *romantic love*. People commonly refer to a wedding as “*making our love official*”. The gradations we now apply to *romantic love* are symptomatic of the problem. We take great care to distinguish between “*true love*” and mere “*infatuation*”. But there is no biblical basis for this kind of thinking. Even scientifically there is no reason to believe the hormones/chemistry is any different. The biochemical reality is (physical) sex naturally tends to create feelings of *romantic love*. When channeled correctly this is both moral and incredibly enjoyable. Only in a world molded by the chivalric ideal is there a need to distinguish between gradients of *romantic love*, where some forms are more pure and authentic than others. And once we take away the frame of socially enforced monogamy these ideas become absurd.

When the Apostle Paul advises on marriage, he says to only marry if you “*burn with passion*”. There is no worry about “true love” vs. “infatuation”, because such thoughts are meaningless in this context. If the couple has a strong sexual/romantic attraction, are prepared to commit for life, and fulfill the roles of husband and wife, *then* they should marry. Paul’s advice runs counter to what we now consider a woman’s path to marriage. The modern view is that women need to experience falling in and out of love a sufficient number of times to identify “*the real thing*”. This is her *Journey of Self-Discovery*. Only *if* she finds “true love” the new paradigm asserts, and she will remain bonded to him for life. If she later finds herself trapped and not wanting to keep her commitment, this is proof that what they had wasn’t *true love* after all. He wasn’t really her *Soulmate*. Marriage in this context is just a public assertion of *true love*, and there is no concept of commitment outside of *romantic love*.

From a secular perspective, the *romantic ideal* defines and qualifies the “meaningfulness” of sex. The convention of shaming someone for having a string of sex partners and engaging in “meaningless sex” is attributable to the *romantic ideal* standard. Because men’s natural proclivity to separate emotion from the sex act is part of our evolved mental firmware this tact applies to us most. Men’s innate sexual strategy – unlimited access to unlimited sexuality – is in direct contradiction to the *romantic ideal*. True Love is effectively impossible for men following their innate mating strategy. Ergo, any sex a man engages in outside the feminine-correct *romantic ideal* is “meaningless” by default. Because it is *true love* and not marriage which now confers morality upon sex, sex outside of marriage is now considered moral so long as you are *in love*. Thus we have the modern woman’s defense “*but we were in love!*”. *Romantic love* not only becomes the moral framework in which sex is sanctified, but it also becomes the ideal that men must aspire to if they are to please God by pleasing women.

This paradigm is exactly why I said that traditions like prearranged marriages and a suitor seeking a father’s permission to marry his daughter were the first casualties of the *romantic love* ideal. Not only is the *romantic ideal* a means of controlling men it serves as a framework for women to exercise their innate mating strategy – Hypergamy – free from moral stigmas and inconvenient traditions that would make them accountable for it. In Trad-Con spheres there is a popular notion that men are their *Sister’s*

*Keepers*. Women have no real moral agency and women's immorality is only the result of "*weak men*" contributing to, or being complicit in, their bad behavior. Naturally this absolves women of their own 'sin' when *unchivalrous* ignoble men don't live up to the moral imperative of guiding women down the right path. It's an effective *Catch 22*. Men must conform to the *romantic ideal* while simultaneously adhering to a moral standard that directly conflicts with it. And their immortal souls hang in the balance.

## Hail to the V

Understanding the expansion of “*Chivalry*” and the *romantic ideal* into a larger Western Humanism is one of the key elements in coming to terms with how endemic it is, and will continue to be, in the new order. What we call *Blue Pill conditioning* is rooted in the *Chivalric-romantic ideal*, which is why Red Pill awareness and a new realization of intersexual dynamics is so threatening to a Gynocentric power structure it depends on. But why is this ancient form of Gynocentrism still exist today and how did it get here? Why is the *romantic ideal* so effective?

Allow me an analogy here and step back just a little bit in time. The time is the mid 1960s just as the Sexual Revolution and the “free love” movement (one of many I should add) is picking up steam in the wake of female-controlled hormonal birth control. Consider *Hugh Hefner* and his first issues of *Playboy* magazine. The mid-60s were a time of social friction. Civil rights and racism are extreme issues. Sexual “liberation” is coming about. The *rights* of just about everyone are a big topic. At the time *Hefner* had a show called *Playboy After Dark*. The set looked like a large living room in a swanky Playboy bachelor pad. All these cool, meaning *avante garde*, “open minded”, intellectually superior, artistically superior, liberal people are just hanging out, having a hip party. *Hef* does more for civil rights in a minute than 50 writers do in 10 years by having *Sammy Davis Jr.* on the show. *Hef* did more for women’s liberation by having a guest on the show to talk about it and the camera sees *Hef* nodding approval than 50 screeching female professors could ever do.

So then, the *cool* boys of the time wants to be like *Hef*. All through the 60s and the 70s, the “*cool boy*” believes in Equal Rights, Feminism and this idea of *gender* being a culturally imposed concept. And that *cool* boy does it exactly because it is “artistically and culturally superior” to the conservative ideas of the time. Now imagine how pervasive those viewpoints on sexism are today and how “religious” both have become in such a short time, historically. The critical reaction most people have to *Red Pill beliefs* borders on religious arguments. And the biggest fighters of what we propose are men. Thus, a philosophy can quickly move from the fringe and become

core if the “*right*” people get behind it and push it. And at no other time has this shift in ideology been more rapid than since the advent of the internet.

Now, imagine the same thing back in 1200AD. The “*cool*” boy, the son of the nobles, that reads Latin, has a little bit of education, he thinks the Catholic church is a bunch of sticks in the mud. He is literally hard-wired for sex and to want women. This *new* idea of “Love” makes absolute sense to him, or at least he wants it to make sense, because the top shelf, highest status women, those noble women in that era were all giving approval to those men that bought into it. By saying “*I believe in Love*” or “*I am in Love’s army*”, or “*I am a soldier of love*”, what he is saying is “*I’m cool, man. Please like me.*” And just like today, any guy that goes against Feminism or attacks the behavior of women is shunned. If I tweet out some unflattering fact about women’s nature that people think is some attack on women, like clockwork someone comes back with “*Oh, I be you’re an Incel*”. In 1200AD, it is “*No ‘Love’*”, then no “*love*”, you were ostracized by women, or at least the cool French Chicks who were the celebrities of the day.

So it takes hold, and as Feminism has co-opted the church, today’s women have imposed their viewpoint on church acceptance of divorce, premarital sex, with the whole idea of the “*magic vagina*” of women compelling those men into better behavior and better performance. The woman has both the right and the duty to punish him for failure to live up to the *love* that the woman has given him as a gift that he must continue to earn. It co-opts the Catholic church of the day, and throughout the 13<sup>th</sup> and 14<sup>th</sup> centuries, “love” creeps into the morality and consciousness of the people at the time. The “love” thing is dominating the “court” and it leaks into the church. It catches on and becomes the dominant aspect of the culture and women are “*rehabilitated*”, seize control, and never let go. They have the authority because they have the morality, and they drive the course of society by controlling language of what is moral and what is honorable. And what constitutes both, from that point forward, are generally what is in the best interest of women, according their circumstances, given the time.

**So why is this important to us?**



The whole idea of “*Courtly Love*” was based entirely on facilitating Hypergamy. From there, the masculine duty of an assimilated chivalry established the interests of Feminine Imperative as the standardizing social imperative. It expertly plays on men’s innate protector instinct, *Burden of Performance*, inherent idealism and their evolved proclivity to be diligent problem solvers. This dynamic social convention endures into our new order era.



## THE KOSHER PRINCIPLE

Around 2009 I was working in the wine and spirits industry. It was my 5<sup>th</sup> year doing art direction, brand management and identity work for various brands of liquor in my importers' portfolio. In that time I learned a lot about alcohol compliance laws, but I also learned some valuable life lessons there. Not to put too fine a point on it, but there are a lot of Jews in the liquor industry. Distribution, import, export, sales and marketing, Jewish men (and women) are the movers and shakers in this business; at least from my experience. I learned about the Jewish religion and traditions from one of my best friends and business partners during this time. One afternoon he comes to me and tells me we'll need to add a *Kosher* icon to all the bottles of our proprietary brand of vodka. He was actually kind of jazzed that we got the designation for the brand. It meant that we'd be able to *officially* be able to market to an orthodox Jewish demographic. I didn't understand why vodka wouldn't already be "kosher" in the first place. Was there some stipulation in the Torah against Jews drinking distilled spirits that wouldn't be invented by humans for centuries after its writing?

The process of getting something designated officially *Kosher* was relatively simple. You send a sample of the product to a kosher certification 'expert' (I presume a Rabbi in the know about what's kosher), send the fee money and they send you the certification documents that allow you to use the official *Kosher* icon on your product. This is the definition I pulled from kosher certification agency *Star-K*<sup>1</sup>:

The Jewish religion incorporates within its tenets a regimen of dietary laws. These laws determine which foods are acceptable and conform to the Jewish Code. The word kosher is an adaptation of the Hebrew word meaning "fit" or "proper." It refers to foodstuffs that meet the dietary requirements of Jewish Law. Market studies repeatedly indicate that even the non-Jewish consumer, when given the choice, will express a distinct preference for kosher certified products. They regard the kosher symbol as a sign of quality. The barometer of Kosher and non-Kosher depends on two variables: the

source of the ingredients and the status of the production equipment. Kosher certification, which is the guarantee that the food meets kosher requirements, revolves around these two criteria. Just as a kosher consumer would not borrow his non-kosher neighbor's pots to use in his kitchen, non-kosher equipment cannot be used in the production of kosher foods.

I'm not sure what the standards are for the equipment used in distilling vodka, but apparently we qualified for it. I had to do a little research just to satisfy some curiosity I had about something being 'kosher'. Most religions have some sort of quality standard for a particular *code* that believers adhere to. For Jews it's *Kosher*, for Muslim it's *Halal*. Even Hindus and Buddhists have dietary practices that align with their religious beliefs. Most of these laws once had a latent purpose. Eating uncured pork in the time of the ancient Jews had a high probability of giving you trichinosis. Definitely not Kosher. Eating shellfish had similar gastrointestinal risks, also not Kosher. In ancient times it just made sense to avoid these foods and if God declared them forbidden then His people could avoid various pathogens. And these were just the dietary laws; there were a lot more *practical* social solutions included in these restrictions.

In modern times, with modern means of production, a lot of these religious laws and traditions seem anachronistic. Bacon tastes better when you know it won't kill you. But the idea of something being *kosher* has morphed into business prospect in an information age where we see the latent functions of those old traditions for what they are. *Hebrew National Hotdogs* are Kosher, but no one in the time of Moses ever ate a hotdog. What the ***Kosher Principle*** does is verify an otherwise religiously suspicious product as being *okay* for believers to partake of, participate in, or otherwise enjoy free in the knowledge that God would be cool with it. In more orthodox religions this verification begins with a religious authority declaring some new invention, foodstuff or idea "*kosher*" for believers to decide to involve themselves in. The problem then becomes one of that particular authority's interpretation of what God would be cool with. The ***Kosher Principle*** itself has several utilities. First and foremost it serves as a form of tribal identification for believers. This is what *our* people do. This is

how *we* honor God. Though times and fashion change we hold to these ideals, and these traditions, codes and laws are how you'll know *us*. Secondly, it serves to create a niche market amongst believers. Again, humans' tribal nature comes in; keep it in the family, keep it in the tribe, keep it in the collective of people with these beliefs. If you see this mark, this icon, this symbol, it means that someone in the tribe with *our* beliefs will be profiting from your purchase or participation and using it in a way that God would approve of.

Lastly, the ***Kosher Principle*** is mutable with the times. Modern ways of worship, new doctrinal ideas, products and services that would to prior generations seem unorthodox can be made orthodox using the ***Kosher Principle***. The serviceability of this religious caveat can't be understated. It fluidly allows for belief to adjust and align with advancements in technology, scientific discovery and popular culture. In particular, the ***Kosher Principle*** keeps old religions alive by allowing for more modern means of staying relevant to contemporary society. This, of course, has its advantages and disadvantages in a rapidly developing information age. The sincerity of belief is challenged by how readily that belief will find ways to adjust itself to keep pace with a social order. *True Religion* means nothing if new people can't be drawn into the faith. Like a living organism, it goes extinct without some stipulation that allows it to adapt to changing environments. I've had critics of this idea employ the *god clause* to argue that a *real* faith is unmoving, universal and timeless. God's truth *remains* even if men don't believe it or men even exist at all – *the grass withers and the flowers die, but God's word remains*. That may well be true, but tribes go extinct, empires fall, and churches go bankrupt while other *believers* live on to explain what their God's truth is to the surviving generations.

## The *Gospel* of Stryper

In 1983 I was 15 years old and the great *Satanic Panic* of the 80s was getting into full swing in an MTV fueled pop culture. I was very into *Heavy Metal* music at this age (still am), and to make matters worse for my ‘eternal soul’ I was also an avid teenage *Dungeons & Dragons*™ player. I can remember a time when a particular Evangelical Christian teacher dropped into our high school *D&D* club after-school game regaling us with stories of how we were dabbling in demonology and our next step would invariably be using Ouija boards to commune with the devil. If you’re a fan of the *Netflix* show *Stranger Things* I was one of those kids – I just listened to *Slayer* and *Iron Maiden* more.

*Chick Tracts* were just getting into circulation in Evangelical churches back then. These were small, ridiculously exaggerated mini-comic books that addressed the popular-but-satanic fads of the 80s and always had a “turn or burn” message at the end. Lots of religious tracts were used to third-party *witness* to the unchurched then, but *Chick Tracts* were over-the-top Evangelical sensationalism. Most of these tracts were directed at *satanic* kids just like me. My mother was always a *Born Again Christian* (that’s what we called them), but my father was a dyed-in-the-wool Skeptic/Atheist and *secular humanist*. As you’d imagine, I had quite the religious “education” as a teenager. The one thing I was aware of during the time was that most Christians tended to be hypocrites. At my mother’s churches the pastors seemed more concerned with attendance and condemning the satanic degeneracy the of 80s. It was good business back then. Naturally, I made for an easy target. I believed in God, and I considered myself a *Christian*, but I really didn’t want anything to do with that church.

Around 1984 I became aware of the Christian heavy metal band **Stryper**. I’d heard some songs off their first EP and I liked the sound a lot. Directly and indirectly they sang about God, Jesus and the Devil (in the negative), which I thought was cool, but it was really the riffs and the sound that got me. I filed their first two cassettes into my tape collection with *Dio* and *Ozzy Osbourne* without an afterthought. It wasn’t until I watched *Michael* and *Robert Sweet* (singer and drummer) on a local access cable TV channel

show called the *Wally George Show*, that's when I realized what these guys represented. *Wally George* was known for his extreme conservative political and religious views. He was the template that a lot of modern Neoconservative pundits who came after him followed. Everyone in my geek-metal social circle loved to hate this guy, but mainly for one reason – *Wally George* **hated** heavy metal.

*Wally* was an outspoken opponent of the *satanic* heavy metal music of the time, so it was an event to see a “metal” band, even *Stryper*, being interviewed on the show.<sup>2</sup> The crowd at the show was going nuts because they assumed *Wally* would run the guys up the religious flagpole for blaspheming against God by using *metal* to promote Christianity. I'll admit, at 16, I was waiting for the lambasting to come, but it never did. By the end of the show *Stryper* had won over not just *Wally*, but the entire audience of goofy stereotypical rednecks. The *Sweet* brothers made their case: they loved heavy metal music, just not the common *satanic* messages from the likes of *Ozzy Osbourne* or *Slayer*. It wasn't about the delivery; it was about the message. In the early days *Stryper* used to toss out yellow and black striped New Testament Bibles to the audience after a show. The band was the definition of unorthodox for both the metal scene and the Evangelical undercurrent of the time. I can remember talking to Christian guys who would tell me how awesome it was to go to a *Stryper* show because of all the hot Christian girls (the *Righteous Foxes*) who would be there. It seemed like it was *okay* to rock out to a religious message with the added bonus that the girls there would likely be *good girls*, but they'd be *cool* Christians – just the kind of ***Righteous Fox*** they felt would make ideal wives, if not immediate sex partners.

The lesson of *Stryper* wasn't lost on me even then; Christians would fluidly adopt whatever was *cool* in the secular world to incorporate it into their means of *witnessing* or spreading the gospel. Music is the easiest example here. Hymnals, outside of hardline Southern Baptist churches, are a rarity today, but even the music of many old hymns were appropriated from popular songs of bygone eras. The tunes to popular barroom drinking songs served as the basis for the music of the Salvation Army during prohibition. The music itself was made ***Christian Kosher*** by altering the lyrics of the song. Although no other Christian band ever really eclipsed *Stryper*, during

the mid to late 80s *Christian Heavy Metal* started becoming a *thing*. Other bands wanted to *rock for Jesus* too. Today, you can hardly find a mainstream Christian church that doesn't have a worship team playing *Contemporary Christian Music*; which is to say some variety of upbeat, 4/4 time, soft-to-lively *rock* music. This varies according to the franchises of Christianity, but the adoption of popular music into worship was (and is) an example of how secular influences are made ***Christian Kosher*** in order to be more *relevant* to the unchurched. Wally George, the Christo-Political hardline authority, who hates heavy metal for its *satanic* inspiration, gives his blessing to *Stryper*, slaps the *Jesus Fish* logo on the LP and now Christian teenage boys can bang their heads for God.

The ***Christian Kosher*** designation extends far beyond popular music, but it tends to follow a predictable pattern. First, some new *worldly* cultural trend explodes in popularity. This may be a new fad, a brand of clothing, musical style, a game, a book or a genre of fiction. It could be some new social media, a technology, or a sport (CrossFit and MMA fighting are examples), or a hobby. *Or* it could be a popularizing secular ideology. Regardless of the trend, it's usually viewed with some suspicion by the believer in the beginning. It may even be hated or "*satanic*" or unbiblical or deemed to be "degenerate" at first. But after a time, maybe months, maybe years, the popularity of that secular trend becomes established as a *draw* for the church. All that's needed is a few *Christian pioneers* to modify and use that trend for God, and then have a recognized authority (or authorities) give their blessing. And that blessing holds more sway if he/she hated the trend previously – and *Violá!* you have the first incarnation of the ***Christian Kosher*** version of that trend. From there the previously secular practice or ideology evolves until it becomes an identifying doctrine of that kind of church.

The setting of the *Lord of the Rings* was the basis for the fantasy genre which *Dungeons & Dragons*™ used to create a game that's still popular today. While *D&D*, comic book and *Nerd* culture now enjoys a long awaited coolness in globalized popular culture, Church Culture has tried to maintain hipness with either *Christianized* alternatives (*Chronicles of Narnia*) or they eagerly embrace the Christian-interpreted, ***Eternal Messages*** in *Lord of the Rings*. It's ***Christian Kosher*** if there's a workaround to make something



cool into something Christian. A similar alignment of Christianity was also found in the *Matrix* movies.

Mixed Martial Arts (MMA) fighting is another example. In the early 2000s, while working for a big casino, I was asked to do the promotional material for a new “sport” called *King of the Cage*. This was a precursor to what’s now big money MMA fighting. At the time Nevada was the only state in the union that allowed this kind of violent competition. Churches called it a *blood sport* then, but after more than a decade of normalizing MMA fighting, and Christian fighters giving their *Testimonies* to a receptive Church Culture, MMA is now a ***Christian Kosher*** darling for many *relevant* churches – especially those looking to draw men back to church. In fact, some mainstream Christianity has used MMA influences in its attempts to ‘*re-masculinize*’ men in their congregations and draw new men in with the *coolness* factor. What had been a violent trend of a morally decaying society was transformed into a “tool for God to spread the gospel” in about 10 years’ time. God using unlikely things and flawed people ‘*to His glory*’ is a feature of many religions, but it’s also a useful function in allowing a religion to evolve with the times.

## The Romantic Ideal vs. Christian Kosher

In March of 2012 a new super-trend for women was hitting the globalizing social marketplace. A hot new book called *50 Shades of Grey* had just gone on sale and women were buying it up based solely on word of mouth. Just 6 weeks later author *E.L. James* had sold 10 million copies. By the end of 2012 the book had sold 65-70 million units – almost solely to a female readership. In essence, the story follows the standard romance novel plot formula, but mixed with a lot of female rape fantasy and the “tasteful” *BDSM* sexuality. It was *red meat* in the right place at the right time for both the *Soccer Mom* and the young *Millennial* woman demographics. On *Valentine’s Day*, 2015, the much-demanded movie adaptation was released. The trailer for the movie reached 36 million views in the week it was released in July of 2014, making it the most viewed movie trailer of the year.

*50 Shades of Grey* presented the first real moral quandary for Christian women of the 21<sup>st</sup> century. By 2014 the book had sold 100 million copies, and had spawned what was called the ‘*Mommy Porn*’ genre in literary circles. It wasn’t just deviant, liberal *sex-positive* feminist women buying this soft-core porn; Christian women were eating it up too. When the *Twilight* series of books and movies hit popular culture Christian women could get behind the fandom (like their young daughters), even though it was never truly made **Christian Kosher**. But *50 Shades* was different. It was an overtly sexual story created by a woman, for women, that went around traditional publishing (it was initially self-published by *James*) to be made available to the masses. Women *wanted* this story, and it was impossible for Christian women to deny the global appeal. According to a 2013 *Barna Survey*<sup>3</sup> women who identified themselves as ‘Christians’ were reading the books at the same rate as the general public.

Male pastors of the time scrambled to address the phenomenon – claiming it was men’s lack of masculine leadership that led to the popularity, and men needed to *Man Up!* and take more responsibility. Meanwhile, women agonized over finding some moralistic loophole to feel *okay* about enjoying it. Pastors couldn’t blame Christian women for

shamelessly consuming the porn; so the narrative that women were being tricked into trying to “*rescue a broken man*” (protagonist *Christian Grey*). There has to be a *man* to blame, so the *fictional* character *E. L. James* invented (and *E.L. James* for inventing him) became the target. *He’s* the one to blame, for not being a ***Real Man***. Godly ***Real Men*** were supposed to reign in their wives’ appetites via *Biblical Headship*, but that required calling out women’s sin in a way that seemed like a condemnation that would make their wives *unhaaaapy*. A fictional man, a romantic ideal, was to blame, but *real* men needed to step up and solve the problem. ***Real Men*** were to do this *not* by confronting women’s sin and refusing to allow women to deny the nature of their temptations. ***Real Men*** were to do this by treating women better and improving their self-esteem.

The ever-present narrative of the ***Romantic Ideal*** in church culture, and now doctrine, is so reflexive that it’s unnoticeable by the men parroting it – if there’s a problem with women it’s because ***Real Men*** aren’t qualifying themselves adequately or women would never be inspired to this sin. Men, it seems, are in fact their *Sisters Keepers* when they sin. In the religion of romance, women lack moral agency, but simultaneously hold Hyperagency. Whenever this conflict presents itself to men, they err on the side blaming themselves (per the *courtly love* ideal) for not qualifying to women’s standards. Just as the Blue Pill conditions them. Men will self-condemn over a “pornography addiction”, and simultaneously agonize over not being ***Real Man*** enough to prevent their wives from enjoying porn themselves.

While the menfolk dithered in self-loathing for women’s sins, it was up to the women in Church Culture to police themselves. *50 Shades of Grey* was never going to be made ***Christian Kosher***, but that didn’t mean Christianized alternatives couldn’t be put on offer. Christian filmmakers jumped at the chance to give Christian women the same indignant thrills that the book offered, but with the Jesus Fish logo slapped on to give them permission to enjoy it. The *Kendrick Brother* (Christian filmmakers) came up with *Divorce Porn* stories in movies like *Fireproof*, while other ***Christian Kosher*** films like *Old Fashioned* and *Comet* were attempts at delivering the *tingles* of the romantic ideal while providing the safety of a Christian moral framework. Again, all of the plots of these alternative stories put the onus of women’s sin on the flawed character of the male

protagonists. The men “find Jesus” and the illicit romance is legitimized per the romantic ideal moral framework.

The great irony is that *50 Shades of Grey* was a case where the marketers weren’t providing the type of salaciousness women demanded, so women went around the marketers. The book is a work of fan fiction which went viral. By all accounts the mass enthusiasm for the book isn’t due to it being masterfully written. Pretty much everyone agreed it was horribly written, but women were willing to overlook that because it scratches a powerful itch. The lesson of *50 Shades of Grey* was it represented the first time an *old order* church, steeped in the *romantic ideal* and *Fempowerment*, was forced to contend with a new order confirmation of women’s visceral nature. And the Blue Pill conditioned men of Church Culture were caught totally unprepared. Women’s embrace of *Open Hypergamy* – a proud revealing of women’s mating/life strategy – was on open display, flying in the face of everything Christian men were ever taught about ‘Godly’ women.

## The Bad Business of Good Women

Telling the truth and standing up for the parts of biblical morality which offend women isn't good for business when your business is pleasing women, especially in our time of unprecedented feminist rebellion. In the *Goddess Movement* I'll explain how this rebellion has assimilated (or will assimilate) virtually all mainstream religions, but it's important to understand how the *kosher* dynamic serves as an economic springboard for this assimilation.

In Western culture women are the primary consumers. If you've worked in retail, marketing, PR or just watch commercial television, you know that women control the purse strings of American spending. According to *MarketingZeus.com* (2017) statistics:

- 60% of all personal wealth is held by women.
- 51% of all stock ownership is held by women.
- 80% of healthcare decisions are made by women.
- 68% of new car purchase are made by women.
- 75% of women identify themselves as the primary household shopper.
- 85% of all consumer purchases in the U.S. are made by women.

Over the course of a family's life 90% of women will control its wealth.

Despite all the gnashing of teeth about the mythological *Gender Pay Gap* these are some very damning statistics. Next time the *Super Bowl* comes around and you're watching all the clever commercials that companies pay millions of dollars to produce, ask yourself, who is this commercial targeting? Most men's products are marketed to the women who will purchase them for men. This has been the economic reality for Western cultures for over 45 years – women control spending.

This economic reality hasn't been lost on mainstream religion. Women are the paying customers of the commercial enterprises that modern organized religion has become. Once again, mainstream Evangelical Christianity is the best example of this enfranchisement of mainstream

religion, but don't think there aren't parallels in other faiths. As the Feminine Imperative has spread through globalizing Western culture, so too has the economic accommodation of it into *all* religions. Yes, even the orthodox ones. I'll get into the reasons why all but the most orthodox of men have been abandoning religion in the coming chapters, but to wrap our head around those reasons we have to consider how mainline religions became by-women-for-women.

Sometime between the Sexual Revolution and the present day, organized religion was perfected as a franchise profit model. In the past I'd refer to various religious denomination being franchises as a joke, now I don't. It's what virtually all of them are today. Whether that's *Joel Osteen's* multi-million dollar megachurch or the '*seeding*' church you attend in a retail unit at the corner strip mall, religion is a business. And these church businesses are in competition with each other in a time when their market has never been more saturated thanks to the Hustle Economy. I know that sounds clichéd; "*Churches are just big business.*" It evokes images of 80s televangelists promising a better seat in heaven if you just send them junior's college fund to promote the *Kingdom of God*. Granted, there are other stereotypes we apply to our impression of *organized religion*, but none of them are as ubiquitous as the notion that the religious are only in it for the money.

I'm hesitant to even spell this out for anyone. The unchurched will be too eager to agree with this money grubbing preacher caricature and the *believer* will think I'm being typically critical of the sincerity of their invested beliefs. Both miss the point. While I'm confident there are people who get into ministry (for whatever religion) for sincere belief and convictions, I'm equally sure that there will always be religious grifters. In either case the business of religion doesn't change. For a church, synagogue, mosque, temple, to survive and promulgate it must comply with some basic economic principles. Money has to come in to keep the lights on and the flocks fed. Customer retention is just as imperative as developing new clientele (sales conversions), and all while staying abreast of the needs of their economic base in such a way that's expedient to growth in a rapidly changing age of technology. And since the early 80s the interests of that base has been almost exclusively about the experiences of women.

While doing the research for this book I looked up articles written about the lack of men in mainstream religions and why, and how, these faiths have become universally feminized in the past 30-40 years. There were too many for me to site as sources. It seems every major religion has some explanation as to why men are participating less in religion, or abandoning it altogether. In *The Goddess Movement* I'll explain this phenomenon, but where this male exodus began can be traced to one simple economic reality of the modern church:

### **Women sign the tithe checks**

If a modern church wants to remain both economically and religiously viable they must appeal to the sensibilities of women. According to *ÜberFacts* (2017) worldwide, women earned \$18 trillion, but accounted for \$28 trillion in spending. As with any good business, it's important to know your customers. Market savvy churches in a globalizing new order world instinctively picked up on the influence that female interests have on church revenue long before the internet became a thing. The *kosher* dynamic is part of most organized religion's DNA. Thus, the gradual prioritization of the Feminine Imperative into church culture, and later as faith-altering doctrine, made good business sense. Since the mid 80s the most sustainable profit model in mainstream religions follow a similar template:

- Be sensitive to the secular needs of women
- Foster a church culture of female empowerment
- Find contemporary ways to be *relevant* to women outside the belief structure
- Reward and reinforce the appreciation of women's experience and struggle
- Appeal to, and affirm the emotional nature of women
- Remove *judgementalism*, and reassign responsibility for women's sins to irresponsible men
- Make covert feminist ideology *kosher*, and later an identifying characteristic of that religious franchise

This template for church success has become so endemic that even the most recognizable personalities in mainstream church cultures don't realize they play a party to it. The formula has always been the lens through which they consider faith, so even questioning it seems wrong. Why would *church planters* ever question female-primacy when they see their churches grow as a result of fostering it? Is not their church's prosperity a sign of God blessing this template? Over the course of about 40 years, religion, and Christianity (including Catholicism) in particular, has systematically become about the needs, interests and sensibilities of women. If you consider how a Chivalry – bastardized by *courtly love* – has set the priorities for religion since the late medieval era, you could make a case that all religion since then has been influenced by the Feminine Imperative.

But wait a minute, *Rollo*, religion is all about men and Patriarchy! Think about all the religious oppression of women over the years, religion is a man's thing! Feminists have been telling us for decades that religion *is* Patriarchy, and from an Abrahamic perspective they're correct. Those faiths *were* most definitely based on a fundamentally male experience. God is *He*, not *It*, and certainly not *Her*. The faith itself is conventionally masculine, but the church is feminine. Even Jesus referred to His church in the feminine, as the *Bride* of Christ. Now, those are matters of faith, but matters of organization and influence on the church is what defines a franchise. While the pastorate is still seen as a *Male Space*, almost every other area of church life is dominated by women. Where Christians gather, men are never in the majority. Revivals, concerts, conferences, missionary work, men are always the minority. A pastor is likely to be a man, but at least two-thirds of the ministry leaders will be women, and even the pastorship role is being openly challenged by a feminine-primary church. This lack of men in the church fits well into the female-primacy doctrine. Men are shamed for not living up to their masculine responsibilities in the church while simultaneously driven from it by the female empowerment church growth template.

In the new order information age Gynocentrism defines the modern religious experience. Most churches have either given up on men as a sustainable revenue model or they make token efforts to appeal to a conventional masculinity they, generationally, have no understanding of. They tend to follow the popularized '*ridiculous man*' meme to get men to



go to youth camp style men's retreats or they rely on the '*evil and flawed man*' character that Gynocentric secularism encourages to "***get men to be better***". In either tact appealing to men's interests in church always serves the female experience that defines that franchise. Men are never to be empowered with any actionable authority, but they are commanded to assume masculine responsibility in spite of it. Again, this appeals to women's *secular-made-kosher* sensibilities. The modern church has become a therapeutic place for women (almost a spa) because it so aptly caters to their needs for emotional indulgence, comforted insecurities, the promise of male responsibilities and the absolution of "bad choices" (not *sin*). It offers the same empowerment they feel bad about adopting from a secular society, but are emboldened by in a ***Christian Kosher*** application of it.

In a practical sense modern religion, all religion, panders to the interests and empowerment of women because it's a sustainable model for growth. The men who remain in the church become accessories to this *Fempowerment* model. Married men in church are generally there as a result of their wives deciding the church was acceptable for him, or by proxy their family. Even if the husband is the dominant partner and out-earning his wife, savvy pastors know that 90% of women will still control a family's wealth. They need to appeal to the wife's sensibilities in the same way that commercial advertisers sell male products to the women who will ultimately be buying them. Catering to women's secular sense of entitlement in a *Christian Kosher* theme is how smart church startups attract and retain revenue. This understanding of female appeasement isn't something that's overtly planned as a church business strategy. Low key Gynocentrism and *Christian Kosher* prioritization of women's interests in religion has become so endemic to church culture that it's been passed on to different generations of believers as a matter of course. It's just what churches do in modern times if they have any hope of growing.

The lack of men, and/or '***Manly Men of God***' in today's churches is becoming more apparent. Articles lament the irreligiousness of men looking for the reasons why churches hold no appeal for them today. Usually those reasons are founded on men's lack of measuring up to the serviceability women would have them deliver and call it '*God's Plan*' for men, or it's the easier answers of modern male sins – pornography addiction, alcoholism, poor fathering, anger issues, or emotional retardation. The expectation of

*'Godly Real Men'* to live up to the *romantic ideal* as an article of faith has been the primary attraction for women in church cultures for decades now. Endless exhortations for men to “do better”, to win his *Manhood* by qualifying himself to women's expectations, are supremely satisfying for women in the church. Women's happiness becomes a proxy for God's pleasure with men, and in so doing becomes a means of control for women. *'God wants men to do what's best for women'* is a means for women to achieve the security that their evolved female nature seeks.

In seeking more efficient ways to cater to their female congregations churches inadvertently serve as a means for women to consolidate on their innate mating and life strategies. The fulfillment of those strategies becomes the ordained *'holy'* direction of God for the men in the congregation. The most common reason *Red Pill* men give me when they explain why they gave up on church is that churches have become feminized. That feminization is more or less just how religion is done today. Church is for women, and the men who remain are largely Beta males or Blue Pill Alpha men proud, but ignorant of their role in the female-correct economics of the religion they've invested their egos in. Unless they're attracted to a hot-but-righteous girl in the church, most men outside the church see nothing attractive in it; and often they see open hostility towards anything masculine. Women themselves bemoan the lack of *real* masculinity in the church, but this frustration still comes from a place of needing serviceable men; not any sincere concern for their faith. Their interests are less about *saving men's souls*, and more about optimizing Hypergamy in a morally acceptable way.

## Religion in the Hustle Economy

As religion has modernized in the new order information age the business of belief has also entered the *Hustle Economy*. Like everything else, the barrier to entry for starting a church has never been lower. If you live in Florida, drop by your local high school auditorium on any Sunday at 10am; chances are you'll find a "church" service of believers who have big plans for their **ministry** – and 'ministry' is the brand that can make even the most doctrinally incongruous of things *Christian Kosher* now. Ministry can be pretty much anything you want it to be in the *Hustle Economy*. *Old order* doctrinal limitations are only defined by how they square against new order interpretations of them – and how well they promote the economic stability of those *old order* faiths.

As the *Positivity Mindset* profit model (ala *Tony Robbins*) has expanded online to become the juggernaut it is today, many other niches of modern life have followed this template. Today, a natural fit for this is the **Christian Women's Ministry** industry. Along with fitness experts, life and dating "coaches", motivational speakers, entrepreneur gurus and nootropics peddlers, a huge market has expanded for (largely Evangelical) Christian women's *ministries*. In today's *Hustle Economy* it's never been easier to self-publish a book or become a self-appointed expert in practically any field. For niches like health, relationships and *success* there are dozens of conferences and programs sold as templates for others to follow in order to establish oneself as an "expert". There are literally programs to help you sell programs to help the average person become a self-employed **guru**. As I mentioned, the barrier to entry has never been lower and the potential for profit – as well as pathological confidence – has never been more enticing. In fact, religion in the Hustle Economy is so lucrative one wonders if church planting might become a thing of the past.

From 2010 to 2020, the *Christian Women's Ministry* gift has become a multi-million dollar industry by following this new order profit model. Organizations like *LifeWay Ministries* book dozens of conferences each year and have been responsible for the meteoric popularity of many women's ministry authors and speakers. While most mainstream Christian churches

still adhere to the scriptural mandate of disallowing women to teach men, or bar women from the pastorate, *Women's Christian Ministries* have found an easier – not to mention more profitable – loophole in declaring their *Hustle Economy* gatherings and speaking gigs (really *Mastermind Conferences*) as *Ministries* rather than forming a church or directly challenging church doctrine to allow women into the pastorate. Today, any woman who feels “*called to ministry*” can now follow the same plan for success that *positivity gurus* set out for them in other niches. Move beyond your women's Bible Study; write a book, maybe a prayer plan or a devotional guide, put a testimonial in written form, write a blog to address the dating/relationship/sexual/motherhood concerns of Christian women in today's sinful world. Self-publish it on *Amazon*, and bang! You're a Christian author. The *ministry* speaking invitations and conference booking make you a credible authority; and really, who can argue with the “plans that god has for you”, right? For the more *relevant* churches – the *progressive* ones that encourage the ordaining of women into pastorship – a gal might even be asked to be a guest pastor for a Sunday.

The *Instant Ministry* template basically follows the same outline as the *Success / Positivity* hustle that's come into its own courtesy of new order technological conveniences. Generally this plan begins with a focus on a specific niche. In terms of women in religion these niches are areas of need particular to women. The common secular troubles of women play well in that ministry focus: marital problems, dating, overcoming guilt or condemnation, money management, single motherhood, etc., but the most popular, all-purpose theme that unifies these niches is a dedication to *confidence* and female empowerment. Confidence is an important theme to all *Success/Positivity Hustle* programs because it's the most fluidly definable to an individual. The key to all success is distilled down to whatever makes up confidence to the person involved – and it is much easier to sell this nebulous *confidence* to women who've been conditioned since birth to believe in an historic, default victimhood and oppression of women by controlling men. It's the perfect form of profiteering; create the problem for which your program holds the best (or most ego satisfying) solution to. The *Instant Ministry* hustle is this generation of Christian women's *Amway* marketing.

Ironically, the same *repression of the female spirit by men* narrative that *Women's Ministry* personalities founded their “rise above it” testimonies on is exactly what makes these ministries more viable than the churches they lament will never allow a woman to preach. Why bother with the day to day administrative bustle and church maintenance responsibilities of pastorship when speaking at women's ministry conferences or as a guest pastor will net you more book sales, more *ministry cruise tickets* or more notoriety to pitch revenue generating program offers. Decrying the *old order* Patriarchy in church makes for better women's *ministries*, but changing that order would be bad for their individual businesses. It's much easier to sell confidence testimonies to women when the *Sisterhood* must overcome the phantoms of the sexist *old order* church.

Now, to play fair, I can't leave the *Men's/Masculinity Ministry* template out of the *Hustle Economy* equation. At some point along the way the men still remaining in the church noticed an unignorable lack of men in their congregations. Where had all the men gone? Men are, in fact, still a necessary part of sustaining a church franchise and ensuring the survival of an *old order* religion. While women are the primary spenders, the loss of men is the loss of revenue. As more men abandoned the church it became necessary to find ways to bring them back to the congregation, but first those churches had to figure out where these men had gone. That's where the *Men's Ministry* grift originated. At first the usual suspect sins were presumed. Men left the church because pornography addictions made porn preferable to religious guilt. Then it was a generational shift. Men weren't *Real Men* anymore and just wanted to shirk their Godly/Chivalrous masculine responsibilities – never mind that marriage affords men none of the *old order* authority anymore. The ubiquitous male shame rationales of video games or “perpetuating their adolescence” that seemed to work for women were being used by men now.

But the real issue of male church abandonment can be distilled down to one factor – actionable *authority*. The single life and the secular world is the only place men have some marginal authority over their lives. They still hold their religious beliefs, and would like nothing better than to find a tribe in which to practice them, but the *old order* church (now overrun with female imperatives) holds no appeal to them; and a secular world has rendered them powerless in terms of marriage and relating to women. That

those churches are now openly hostile to conventional masculinity presents a real dilemma for *Men's Ministries*. They had to find a way to appeal to former believers and unchurched men alike, all while operating within the confines of a faith and doctrine that is beholden to the Feminine Imperative. They had to be appealing to men while considerate of not being “toxically masculine” to the feminized church. Godly women want ***Real Men***; manly old-school men who feel responsible enough to follow God's rules in spite of a world and a church that denies them the old-school authority women are now in charge of.

## **But where *were* the men?**

Sometime around 2012 to 2014 the *Men's Ministry* personalities found them. They too were all collating their experiences online in this new gathering of men all across the globe. It was called the *Manosphere*, and it was connecting dots, and asking questions, that were challenging the *old order* presumptions about intersexual dynamics. A lot of those connected dots seemed like men just wanting to find an easier way to have sex with women, but others confirmed an undeniable, often scriptural, truth about the nature of women. Here, among many others, were the men who'd abandoned the church, or maybe they were the unchurched, with their eyes opened to intersexual dynamics. Either way, these tribes of the *Manosphere* represented an opportunity for a ministry grift very similar to that of women's *ministries*. In place of a *Red Pill* Game guru, or a get-rich-online positivity hustler, they would apply the same template to appeal to the men still struggling with how to reconcile their new found *Red Pill* awareness in a ***Christian Kosher*** context.

While this new order religious hustle seemed like a natural evolution of *Red Pill* awareness, many of the more unflattering truths revealed about women's nature rubbed the *Men's Ministry* organizers and pastors the wrong way. All these men's pastors were (are) Blue Pill conditioned themselves; brought up in a feminine-primary church experience that, by doctrine, limited their relations and experience with women – sexually and otherwise. In many instances they rejected the *Red Pill* on principle. It was too much to process in terms of their *romantic ideal* influenced faith. Denial was the reflexive response, but there was a more insulting truth the *Men's Ministry* pastors and believers didn't like confronting,... it took Pickup Artists to show them women's visceral natures. It took *Red Pill* writers to demonstrate the influence that the Feminine Imperative had been exercising in their churches for decades. It took the *Manosphere* to give them a new order education about masculinity and women that their fathers never could. They say God uses the most unlikely people to enlighten the masses, and here they were, enlightening.

The Pickup Artists were right about the nature of women. The *Red Pill* was right about the reasons for that nature, and it was right about the deference to Gynocentrism within the church. Yet, here were the men they'd been looking for – all wiser than themselves about intersexual dynamics because they'd never deviated from the *romantic ideal* they'd been taught was an article of faith. The only recourse *Men's Ministry* guys had was to co-opt the aspects of the *Red Pill* that aligned with their faith, even in the face of new order data about men and women for which they had no real counter argument.

“The Bible is the *real* Red Pill.”

“Just look at all the examples of the Red Pill in *Genesis*, *Proverbs*, *Psalms*, etc....”

“Jesus was a true Alpha. He made a whip of cords and drove the money changers out of the temple.”

“Joseph was the first man to step up and take care of a pregnant single mother.”

These are some of the most common rationales I've heard from *Men's Ministry*, Christo-Manosphere pastor/gurus. Not to be outdone by the Christians, many “*Red Pill*” Muslims and Jews will make similar cases for a classical understanding of the nature of men and women that accounts for the *Red Pill* truths that align with their beliefs. If it's not a direct quote from a religious text, then it's often the wisdom of the ancients that is offered up to reconcile *Red Pill* awareness with a personal faith. *Marcus Aurelius* or *St. Thomas Aquinas* are popular quotables. The *Kama Sutra* or the writings of *Chanakya* come from the Hindus. For the *Spiritual-But-Not-Religious* crowd the quasi-religion of *Carl Jung's* Archetypes or Anima-Animus serves as their ‘faith’.

It's not difficult to find some evidence of how the “*great thinkers of antiquity*” already had this “*Red Pill stuff*” figured out long ago. That's the usual graft. Force-fitting *old order* faith into the new order awareness of the



natures of men, women and how they interrelate is not only faith-affirming for the believer, but it makes ***Kosher*** all the aspects of the *Red Pill* that they're comfortable in adopting. Thus, their definition of the *red pill* becomes an amalgam of whatever aspects of the new order data fits into their preexisting belief-set. This is combined with the pretense of what a Gynocentric social order has taught them *should* be in their reproductive best interests to believe about the natures of men, women and intersexual dynamics. They become religious ***Purple Pill*** pushers; applying a *pick and pull* method of accepting only the parts of the *Red Pill* that reinforces their Blue Pill hopes and ideals. And the most industrious (or zealous) of these guys venture to make a business out of this graft.

This isn't to say that these religions and thinkers didn't actually get things right with respect to understanding intersexual dynamics. Many of the proverbs, vedas, quatrains, parables and quotes about the nature of men and women do in fact align with the *Red Pill* dots connected by centuries of evo-psych, evo-bio, anthropology, sociology, etc. research. The problem is the over-emphasis on the *old order* confirmations about what the *faith* got right at the expense of the data that conflicts with beliefs and doctrine. The Truth will set you free, but sometimes the objective truth is bad for business, and sometimes it's bad for faith. The *Red Pill* becomes much easier to swallow when it's made ***Kosher*** and affirms faith; but it becomes something else once it does.

## The God Grift

This chapter would be incomplete if I didn't point out how the online hustle success-template is used to make *Insta-Pastors*. In the *Success Grift Hustle* industry marketing/PR agencies offer a *Guru in a Box* package. It includes services such as ghost writers to "self-publish" a book, cookie-cutter *WordPress* blog templates to drive e-mail list building, and YouTube channel development with purchased subscribers, views and comments. This is the basic template many niche-based online marketers follow to build e-mail list, promotional offer online businesses. However, the niches for this template can be practically anything.

Sometime over the past decade Christian church *planters* saw the utility in applying this template to the church franchise business. While I don't want to disparage the sincerity of the motivating beliefs behind wanting to get into the *ministry* hustle, I have to point out that the *Pastor/Church in a Box* success-template follows the same *Success Guru* program. Today, anyone who feels *called to ministry* can find numerous resources for "*Christian Entrepreneurship*". In fact the latest hustle is to sell the outlines to the hustle. Christian Audience User Personas, 12 Marketing Tools for Christian Writers, What Makes a Writing Brand "Christian"? How to develop a Christian Podcast, and "definitive guides to developing your Christian writing platform" are just a few elements of the *Ministry in a Box* package. Stuck for what message to deliver to your *seed* church congregation this Sunday? No problem. There are dozens of sermon template resources available in the package too.

There was a time when I used to believe that a man who got up to speak the "Word of God" had to do so because he was compelled by his convictions. I remember learning that the definition of taking the Lord's name in vain was less about saying "*Goddammit*" and more about pretentiously speaking on God's behalf to promote one's interests. Is that not the main reason *Martin Luther* risked his life in protesting the Roman Catholic Church in the wake of the advent of the Gutenberg Press? Whatever your religion, I would presume that a sincere connection to your faith is what prompts the conviction to act, practice and live in concordance

with it; but today I think we have to consider the machines behind contemporary religion. In the 80s it was easy to poke fun at the likes of televangelists like *Jim* and *Tammy Faye Baker*. But they were just *old order* charlatans who made for easy targets to ridicule. Even the *Prosperity Doctrine* preachers of the early to mid 2000s (*Creflow Dollar?*) had nothing on the streamlined approach of secular *positivity* preachers of today. Guys like *Tony Robbins* are creating the new order template for pastors like *Joel Osteen* to follow in this decade. And all of it only works if it can somehow be made *Kosher*.





## BOOK II

## RELIGION AND THE RED PILL





## GODS LIKE MEN

*“If oxen and horses and lions had hands and were able to draw with their hands and do the same things as men, horses would draw the shapes of gods to look like horses and oxen to look like oxen and each would have made the gods’ bodies to have the same shapes as they themselves had.”*

*– Xenophanes (570-478 BC)*

**I**n May of 2019 I did a group workshop talk with motivational guru *Elliott Hulse*. It was part of a convention curricula I helped create. I saw a desire among men to have real-time discussions in a roundtable format apart from just seeing other men giving 1-hour speeches in a dark room. I wanted to get my hands dirty, so to speak, and these workshops were the right classroom format. My topic for this workshop was the theme for this book, *“Can we reconcile God with the Red Pill?”* The room was standing-room only for this first-time roundtable.

I began the discussion with a proposition: The only way human beings can interpret the nature of God was through the lens of human experience. The result of that imperfect lens is the root of a lot of confusion about the nature of faith, a belief in *any* God and religion. Our senses are limited to sight, touch, sound, smell and taste. It’s through these senses that we interpret our world, other people, and we depend upon them for our basic survival. It makes sense that we would interpret and relate to our ‘Gods’ based on the fundamental experiences of human beings living on planet earth. Air, water, earth, fire, gravity, the sun, the moon, day, night, passing time, instinct, emotion, reason, hunger, libido, male, female, and countless more basics we take for granted as the experience of humans living one life cycle on this planet are the limited set of paints we have to create an image of a human God. It would follow that our Gods would “*walk* among us” on legs. They would pass their *hands* over their creation. They would feel powerful human emotions like *jealousy*, *anger* and *love*. The desire for *revenge* would be in their list of needs. Eventually, they would be individuals we could relate to, but also forces of nature, or embodiments of more ephemeral *energies* that we used to be ignorant of. Every human

concept of God had to pass through the human-earth experience for us to wrap our heads around it. We would necessarily have to be *made in God's image* for us to have a rudimentary concept of what a god might be.

If some day we make contact with extraterrestrial beings of similar intelligence, I would expect their own metaphysical beliefs to be rooted in the realities of their own experiences and environments. Later in this book I'll explain my own faith, but how I come to it is with a full knowledge that my own experience as a human limits my understanding of the *meta*-physical. A metaphysical God, power, force, whatever, by definition exists outside the physical and therefore outside the five senses human beings use to interpret their existence. But humans are relatively smart. We can experience forms of energies that exist outside what our natural senses would be sensitive to. Dogs can hear at frequencies beyond the human range of perception, but humans figured out that dogs could be trained with whistles that humans cannot hear. We also figured out that dogs only see in shades of blue and yellow (not exactly black & white) and are sensitive to scent in the parts per trillion range. Color would be a metaphysical concept to the average dog, while human's *seeing* in the infrared or ultra-green spectrums (night vision) would've been a metaphysical concept to humans just 120 years ago. We're pretty smart, or at least deductively curious animals. We figured out that there are forms of energy that are beyond our faculties to perceive; but what about *metaphysical* forms of energy that we simply lack the organs to even guess at? I'm not talking *woo woo* magical thinking, Chakras or healing crystal energies. I mean actual material energies in the same reality as light, sound, force, etc. that can be measured, qualified and quantified that we simply have no evolved organ to be sensitive to. How do we form a concept of something outside our abilities to be sensitive to it, or even imagine it? For a long time splitting the atom, much less using it as a weapon, was purely theoretical. We figured it out with the theory and science available to us in the 1940s. Atomic energy existed outside our ability to directly sense it, but figuratively, mathematically, the supposition was sound. Nuclear power was one more apple to fall from the Tree of Knowledge. Human beings have the uncanny knack of making the *meta*-physical, physical – for better or worse. Albert Einstein once said:

*Imagination is more important than knowledge. For knowledge is limited, whereas imagination embraces the entire world, stimulating progress, giving birth to evolution.*

I don't totally agree with this. I would argue that imagination is at least as important as knowledge. Human imagining is definitely one of our species' core strengths, but using it knowledgeably, or having imagination stimulated by knowledge, is what leads to innovation. The interplay between knowledge and imagination is what's made us pretty good problem solvers. This quote makes for a feel-good trope, but knowledge is only limited by imagination, curiosity and deductive reasoning. Imagination is limited by knowledge to be pragmatic or effective.

## The Evolution of Belief

It's been suggested that there is an innate part of the human psyche that predisposes us to *belief*. Evolutionary psychologists, neurologists, anthropologists, and a few more '-ologists' have studied this apparent *need* for humans to believe in something beyond the physical. Usually this is a belief in a unitary monotheistic god, or possibly a god-force – karma, nirvana, the holy spirit, samsara, etc. Humans have some inherent firmware (or maybe hardware) that predisposes us to consider something “bigger than ourselves” is at work in our lives when circumstances seemingly beyond our control are exerted in our experience. Where some see coincidence others see providence. The concepts of fate or luck are applied by even the most irreligious people when it comes to things they're emotionally invested in, but feel out of control over. And solving the reproductive problem is something most every human is invested in.

Fear of the unknown, or fear of mortality, are usually the starting point for the evolutionary study of belief in the supernatural. The basis of a belief in the supernatural, metaphysical or superstition can be traced back to human's survival instinct. It served human survivability if we erred on the side of superstition or a belief in something supernatural if that belief kept us alive long enough to pass our *believer's* genes on to the next generation. Author *Bret Weinstein* sums this concept up as ***Metaphorical Truth***<sup>1</sup>; something that is objectively false, but metaphorically true. For example, ***porcupines can throw their quills*** is folklore and objectively false because porcupines cannot, in fact, throw their quills at you. But it is *metaphorically* true because the ***belief*** that porcupines can throw their quills is a survival benefit if it keeps people from getting too close to painful, maybe life threatening, quills. This concept of *metaphorical* truth can then be expanded to a great deal of other applications; some that were survival adaptations (*thou shalt not eat unclean animals*) and others that may be less useful or even detrimental to humans who actually know the objective truths about those previously *metaphorical* beliefs and their associated behaviors.

Over time those *metaphorical truths* become embedded in what I refer to as human's evolved mental firmware. Not all snakes are poisonous, but

it's best for humans to *behave* as if all of them are and to steer clear of them, or kill them. Objectively false, but that *behavior* keeps more humans alive than poisoned by snakes. After thousands of years of human evolution a fear of anything that looks like a snake is embedded into our species' innate firmware. What we think of as an irrational fear now probably had some survival benefit in our ancestral past. The same dynamic applies to mice, rats, spiders and bugs, but also to many more complex *metaphorical truths* with the latent purpose of keeping us alive, helping us breed, and raising the next generation. The step that *Bret Weinstein* seems to avoid in all this is making the connection between behaving according to metaphorical truth and human's inherent need to believe in something. The Placebo effect is a well-documented aspect of human psychology. For better or worse, believing in something has a certain effect on our health or our outlook on life, even when that *belief* is empirically false. This is how you get people dependent on *Magical Thinking* or an ego-satisfying belief in superstitions or *hokum*; but it's also how *belief* can inspire us to greater potentials and make us feel better physically. It's not about the *magic*, it's about the *belief*.

In our ancestral past it was best to behave as if a man-eating panther was waiting to kill you in a dark jungle. Theoretically, the associated fear of dying a messy death in a dark place became a belief in a power that humans in that time had very little control over. The behavior associated with the metaphorical truth required a rationale for being adhered to; that's where belief comes in. The *belief* become the gestalt collection of all the very practical, life-sustaining behaviors that make (made) sense according to metaphorical truth. As such, the fear (an emotion) of the panther in the jungle becomes the *evil spirit* lurking in the dark. Teeth and eyes and claws become the symbols and cues of that fear. The snake becomes symbolic of deception, poison and hidden death waiting for the unwary. Our angels have the white or golden wings of majestic birds, and our demons have unlovely bats' wings, horns, hooves and ferocious teeth similar to all the 'dangerous' animals that could kill us in our ancestral past. All human mysticism, based on metaphorical truths, is still rooted in our species' experience as humans on planet earth.

These beliefs in the supernatural became part of our species' firmware, but they needed some kind of organization if we're to behave in ways that will propagate and progress us. Humans are very good at pattern recognition

and we pass on (via language) a set of “best practices” to future generations in order to help them carry on the gestalt intelligence of the human race. Oral histories became written legends, and legend became archetypal themes – all of which are beholden to human’s *operative state* on planet earth. When we were living in small (less than 150 people) hunter-gatherer tribes our needs for organized metaphorical truth was simple. Thus, nature spirits, animal spirits, larger environmental effects like fire, lightning, thunder, etc. took on supernatural status. Shamanism was about as organized a belief-set as tribal peoples really had use for. It’s also important to note here that metaphorical truth belief-sets were also gendered. *Spirits* that aided in fertility, conception and a successful pregnancy were specific to the female experience, whereas *hunting/war spirits* would be reserved for human males. Reproduction was a very *mystifying* process in our ancestral past. It made sense that *magical thinking* and *metaphorical truths* would be applied to the ‘best practices’ of seeking out mates and gendered responsibilities for family (tribal) cohesion.

*Any sufficiently advanced technology is indistinguishable from magic.*

This is the 3<sup>rd</sup> law of science fiction novelist (arguably futurist), *Arthur C. Clarke*. This is the basis of the next step in the evolution of religion. Don’t worry, I won’t attempt to convince you of an *Ancient Aliens* proposition. Rather, the point is that at some stage of civilization, human beings had need of more advanced belief-sets to account for larger organized tribal populations. The innate male reproductive and ***protector dynamic***, rudimentary Hypergamy, kin affiliation and altruism made for survivable “families”. Those families grew into tribes, those tribes expand into *peoples* and cultures, and then exponentially grow into states and nations. Once a people get to a new level of population the technological base also ‘levels up’. As this happens beloved, time tested, metaphorical truths must compete with newly revealed objective truths. However, this process is by order of degrees, and dependent on the advancements of that civilization. Like anything else, human belief-sets had to adapt to the new environments.

Where nature spirits and shamanism had been useful to smaller, low-tech, relatively isolated populations, larger *peoples* needed something more personally relatable – Gods and Goddesses. Polytheism arose in larger civilizations to fulfill a more advanced need for metaphorical truth and still provide an organizational framework for managing human affairs. Unsurprisingly, indigenous, fairly isolated civilizations all seemed to follow similar themes and roles for each of their gods. The costumes changed per the society in question, but the roles were always similar; a central greater god (always an omnipotent Alpha male) surrounded by lesser gods and goddesses each associated with a particular aspect of human nature or the experience of human beings living on planet earth. Zeus, Odin, Ra, Anu, Dagda, Shang-Ti and half a dozen more central gods all follow the same archetype in various civilizations. Similarly we have the ‘superhero’ male ideal; Thor, Samson, Gilgamesh, Hercules, etc. and the fertility/sex goddesses, wisdom gods, death gods, wine gods, and the list goes on. Many of the Catholic Saints fulfill a similar function for believers even today.

*“Perhaps in your land you have need of only one god, but here we have need of many. I will pray to all of them for your safe passage.”*

*– The 13<sup>th</sup> Warrior*

Finally, we get to a such level of civilizational expansion that polytheism becomes more of a hindrance than a boon to reconciling metaphorical truth with yet more revelations of objective truths. It takes a lot of multi-tasking to keep track of the myriad gods and goddesses of each civilization one can associate themselves with. In the greatest empires and dynasties polytheism was much like the religious franchises we see in modern times. Temples dedicated to various gods were much like team affiliations or denominations of today. When you have that many ‘gods’ all vying for human attention, the objective truth of religion being a racket conflicts with any benefit metaphorical truth might’ve had before the ‘gods’ came along. Still, the major gods, or the official religion sanctioned by the (usually) totalitarian leaders of these peoples, empires and nations would win out if that leader was himself superstitious enough to give credence for his success to a particular god. And he usually found that ruling people was made much

easier if he had a *team god* affiliation. It's around this time that we begin to see the rise of monotheism.

***Thou shalt have no other gods before me.***

The first commandment from the preeminent God of our time (the God of Abraham) was to announce the death of all other 'gods'. When you ask believers how they interpret this commandment today you'll get a variety of answers. So, there are (were) other Gods existent at the time of the ***One True God***? Does that not invalidate *His* claim to be the only God? I'm not being facetious here. This question is essentially a conflict of metaphorical truth versus objective truth. Most believers will interpret this commandment as a law against making anything greater than God in your life. "We all worship *things*", they will say. Whatever we make the primary focus of our lives, whatever we think is most important, we make into our 'god'. Of course, logically this is just presuming a truth and begging the question, but it's satisfying enough for most to invest their faith in.

The way I read this commandment is that it's a turning point from polytheism to a unitary monotheism in the time of Moses. Polytheism had served its metaphorical purpose, but now it was becoming a scam. That belief-set no longer had relevancy because for the majority of people in large nation-states it lost its metaphorical congruency. When you watch or read a fantastical work of fiction there is a degree of believability that must be suspended in order for you to fully enjoy the book or movie. For instance, when you watch popular science fiction the stories almost always play out on earth-like settings or on space ships where artificial gravity and life-support are just a given. In reality, creating artificial gravity in space would be one of the greatest feats of human engineering ever achieved. But we can't carry on the great stories in Star Wars or Star Trek if everyone is floating around weightless in the ship's cabin. Telling relatable science fiction stories in the framework of the realities we're technologically capable of today would be an effort in objective truth – not the emotionally satisfying (far more popular) metaphorical truth. Compelling stories in objective truth can be done, but only if the plot relates to a metaphorical



truth. The good news is that human beings seem to have an evolved ability to suspend our disbelief,...up to a point.

That point is usually defined by the congruency of what we know is, or should be, possible according to objective truth and the imagination necessary to relate to metaphorical truth. If that sounds like Knowledge versus Imagination then you've just made the connection between ancient *Nature Spirits*, *Polytheism*, *Monotheism* and *Pantheism*. A single omniscient/omnipotent God or metaphysical *will* makes more objective sense than any form of metaphorical truth that came before it. Thus, we have the evolution of belief. Atheists will argue it's all human imagination and only objective truth is really valid. I agree with that, but imagination is still important; at least as important as objective knowledge. Suspending our disbelief, within the framework of objective knowledge, still has value to us as a species. And as frustrating as this might be for hardcore empiricists, human beings aren't built for too much "reality" all at once.

## Men Like Gods

*“Organized religion is just sexist, misogynist and Patriarchal!”*

No doubt you’ve read or heard some variation of this sentiment in today’s popular culture. In the wake of hormonal birth control and the unprecedented power it afforded to women, religion was the first social institution targeted by the militant feminism of the late 60s. A nebulous male enemy had to be given a name to focus on, and that would be *Patriarchy*. Religion was an easy target, because it had always been the primary tool of enforcing Patriarchal norms and served to repress the interests of women – or so we were told. Even in light of the unprecedented female empowerment of the past 60 years, this trope is still an easy sell for women in the globalizing new order because it perpetuates the default victimhood that feminist ideology has always depended on. Statistically and organizationally it is women who are more religious than men<sup>2</sup>, and as I outlined earlier, women do almost all of the financial decision making for families; including which churches will be getting their family tithe money. More women serve as missionaries, and in 2015 the number of Catholic women becoming Nuns reached a 25 year high in England.<sup>3</sup> But for all the feminist braying about religion being patriarchal, they are in fact correct: polytheistic and monotheistic religion has largely been by men for men, and made relatable from a masculine perspective.

The God of Abraham is *He*. Not *She*, not *it*, but Father, Son and Holy Ghost. Abraham, Jesus, Mohammed as well as many other now-defunct gods and demigod heroes were men. With rare exception the old goddesses and *Godly Women* of the Old and New Testament behaved, believed and served God, as a masculine ideal, in ways that served as bad or good examples of what was expected of women in a masculine-primary context. Yes, you can show me instances of faiths where an eastern religion’s pantheistic god-force is genderless, or you can drag out the rare matriarchy of Gaelic paganism, but evolved human gender dynamics has been the context in which we have understood metaphorical truths for thousands of

years. Religion has been Patriarchal because patriarchy has been what's worked best for us as a species since we were living in tribes. When it comes to metaphorical truths and gender, the evolved interests of conventional masculinity have always been the lens through which we relate to our gods. God *is* male – or at least that's been the easiest context in which to relate our human, earthly, existence to as a concept that lives outside our physical scope to imagine it. Patriarchy is the *natural* order. I know this statement will grate on feminists, egalitarians and evolutionary psychologists reluctant to admit what should be obvious to them; but the conventional aspects of masculinity and evolved gender interdependency make “*patriarchy*” the obvious, dominant interest for our species. For thousands of years the evolutionary imperatives of human males have set the framework for human civilizations. Before you lose your equalist-trained mind over this, let me clarify; I am in no way asserting male superiority, nor am I advocating for male chauvinism. I am pointing out that in our ancestral past it has been the masculine context that has been the predominant one and the most beneficial to get us where we are today. Dominance hierarchies, qualifications of competence and prowess, the *Burden of Performance*, the male protector instinct and men's innate mating strategies have all contributed to what we are today. It follows that our *old order* context of understanding God would be informed by a human male existential experience. God is understood from the masculine imperative.

Author and evolutionary psychologist, *Dr. Hector A. Garcia* makes the case that God is made in man's image. In particular, that image is one of the apex examples of uncontested, dominant maleness – God's persona is literally defined by the interests and evolutionary imperatives of an Alpha Male human. In what I consider his seminal book, *Alpha God, The Psychology of Religious Violence and Oppression*, *Dr. Garcia* defines the characteristics of an Abrahamic God in terms of four primary male imperatives:

- Dominance and Intimidation
- Territorial Acquisition
- Sexual (Reproductive) Control
- Violence to enforce will

To add a bit of contrast here, *Dr. Garcia* approaches his research from an egalitarian-conditioned bias. The main thrust of the book, in my opinion, is directed at proving religion false and reinforcing the same egalitarian ideal that feminists have been using as a cover story since the time of the Suffragettes. Patriarchy, bad; female supremacism posing as “equality”, good.

That bias is kind of a shame because his research and reasoning are otherwise rock solid. The Abrahamic God is every bit the Alpha male *Garcia* builds **Him** up to be. If you’re going to personify an omniscient, omnipotent being, and your only frame of reference for individuated power over the course of human evolution has been the apex examples of the apex species on earth, odds are you’re going to be looking at an Alpha male human as your basic template. *Alpha God* rightly identifies the basic imperatives of Allah, Yahweh, Jehovah, Zeus and pretty much every greater god in any polytheistic pantheon. Concerns of dominance, submission, and conviction to aligning with His imperatives, often unquestioningly (faith), are parallel concerns for Alpha male humans (and most primates). The Old Testament God is very interested in acquiring, securing and defending the resources and territories of his *tribes*. Displacing rival tribes, specifically killing off all the men and boys, but reserving the unspoiled virgins for His people, is precisely the evolutionary *War Brides Dynamic* I outlined in my first book.

So, yes, the template of a personal, relatable God would logically follow a dominant human male archetype. But does this constitute *God* being *created* in man’s image, or does it mean God is only understandable in terms of successive generations of humans limited to what we can experience on a planet like earth? Modern feminist ideology would have us believe patriarchy is a deliberate methodology of male oppressive authority. I would argue that patriarchy is an extension of evolved imperatives that have been beneficial to our species since the time we existed in hunter-gatherer tribes. The idea that human beings’ idealized state *should* be some egalitarian utopia doesn’t align with our evolved imperatives, history or innate natures. This is not an endorsement of determinism. Yes, we can choose to behave and think in ways that conflict with our innate proclivities – we do it all the time – but that software overriding our firmware is not without its costs.

Masculinity can be ugly. Male physical dominance, bloodshed, warfare, etc., is all part of that evolved equation. I'm sure people are fully aware of the atrocities and injustices attributable to men throughout the course of history. I read this question all the time; wouldn't it be better if women were the rulers of humanity? If women ruled the world there would be no wars, right? Even the *Dali Lama* Tweets about his dreams of a 200 nation world ruled by women. I'm going to address this in the next chapter, but the uncomfortable truth is, no, we wouldn't be better off. For all the damning of 'toxic' masculinity, what researchers don't like to acknowledge is that women's evolved nature contributes to the very Patriarchy they claim to hate. Women's innate mating strategy, Hypergamy, is what adjudicates the prowess, competence and dominance hierarchies among men that *patriarchy* is predicated on. You don't get the necessary protection instinct, parental investment and provisioning that masculinity brings to women without the dominance, potential violence, risk taking bravado and paternal-investment jealousy inherent to the nature of masculinity. Separating and qualifying these necessary aspects of masculinity has been a failed experiment of female-primacy for far too long. You don't get one without the other. The perceived good, comes with the perceived bad; and really, women wouldn't want it any other way.

Through evolution, or by design, men and women, the masculine and the feminine, are natural complements to one another. But more so, our complementarity is symbiotic: the innate aspects of one sex drives the responsive aspects in the other. The strengths of the masculine account for the weaknesses in the feminine and vice versa. There are beneficial and detrimental aspects to both men and women's natures. Human advancement and human suffering are both directly and indirectly attributable to either sex's innate drives and the free (or compelled) choices we make in accordance with them. I have argued in the past that popular notions of gender 'equality' or aspirations of societal gender parity are at odds with humans' evolved natures, as well as the innate differences of men and women. Our natural state is one of disequilibrium. The notion of an idealized *equality* depends on two presumed states: Our environment being a consistent, predictable vacuum and the presumption that men and women are functionally equal Blank Slate. Both of these presumptions are empirically and provably false by new order data.

In our popular science fiction, fantasy and mythological stories, imaginations of the fantastical, the otherworldly, is usually dependent on analogies we can relate to on this planet. The *Xenomorph* in the movie *Alien* was terrifying for audiences in 1979. The movie masterfully played on all human beings' most rudimentary fears; claustrophobia, darkness, the unknown, feral hostility, powerlessness and certain death. It was one of the most significant movies and stories ever told – albeit a terrifying one – no one had seen anything so shocking at this point in history. But for all of the innate, evolved, terror the *Alien* was still something we could relate with. Despite the unearthly elongated head, its form was still bipedal – two arms, two legs. It has a spine-like tail and double (extendable) jaws with razor teeth, not unlike the natural predators early humans had a healthy, imaginative, fear of. It literally existed only to kill, but ultimately the *monster* was effective at scaring us because its form was something we have a species-specific frame of reference for.

As human's, we can only imagine things within the scope of what we can relate to from our species' existential experience – our *Operative State*. Imagining things outside that scope is next to impossible for us, so we apply what we do know as metaphors for things that exist outside our existential understanding. As such, the template for an omni-powerful, yet personally relatable, *God* is an Alpha Male human being. What else in human experience could *He* possibly be? Equally relatable, that *God* would have the same interests, benefits, wrath, punishments, jealousies, compassion, protection and kin affiliation as the most powerful of men; from tribal chiefs to God-Emperors. In our present-day anti-masculine social order, it's as easy to ridicule or debase the idea of an *Alpha God* as it is the average man. God is sexist and misogynist, focusing only on the imperatives of men, and therefore the whole idea of a metaphysical “*god*” becomes about Patriarchy. Instead of an interpretive template for understanding God as a metaphorical truth, or a genuinely divine unintelligible power existing outside our awareness, the focus is only on men using *God* as a means of perpetuating social control. This is how feminism and the Feminine Imperative have made (and are still making) easy work of *old order* religion. For the greater part they're correct; men *have* used religion as a means of social cohesion as well as justification for course-of-empire, slavery, human atrocities and self-serving tyranny. It's what we are as a species; equally deserving of being

called “*maggots and worms*”, but also “*a little beneath the angels*”. This is one more paradox of the *old order* that the new order is sorting out. Historical religious violence and oppression are not unique to human males, but men’s evolutionary nature makes them the sex most prone to resort to religion as a means to effect their interests. God and *His* will has always been experienced through the lens of the male experience.

From our earliest days humans have understood our world through our five senses. We process what our senses tell us through instinct, emotion and reason. We then apply metaphorical, and later objective, truth to what we can understand from these processes, pass that *knowledge* on to successive generations, hope they live incrementally better lives as a result, and civilization advances. Up until recently this process was understood via a male perspective. But since the time of the Sexual Revolution, women’s emancipation from men’s imperatives (through unilateral control of the reproductive process) has triggered new social and metaphysical power dynamics from a uniquely feminine set of evolutionary imperatives. In the past, religion was by men, for men. *God* was a reflection of men’s relatable imperatives, but in the new order *God*, quite literally, *is* a woman. In the next chapter we’ll explore what a religion by women, for women looks like and how we’re coming to it.





# **THE GODDESS MOVEMENT**

## Chick Crack

**O**f all the strippers I ‘dated’ in my 20s every one subscribed to some form of non-mainstream spiritualism. One girl, “*Angie*”, kept tarot cards in her pink-cover, lady’s devotional Bible. Another girl professed to be a psychic. In fact, the only people I’ve ever known who self-seriously wanted me to believe they were psychic have been women. These *types* tend to look for that mystical connection in a guy. For instance, I once bought a little silver yin-yang ring when I was in college. I don’t really have any eastern mystic beliefs; I just bought it from a street vendor when I felt I needed a reminder to keep balance in my life. But damned if I didn’t have more women point it out and ask me about it, and have it be some karmic conversation starter since I got it. The thing is tiny, but that’s what I found women would gravitate to.

In the early 2000s, pickup artist, *Mystery*, encouraged his students to wear ‘*props*’ when they went into the field to approach women. *Props* were different from *Peacocking* in that these were usually trinkets or “stylistic flair” that served as conversation starters for *opening* potential women. There was a particular art to choosing a prop that worked for an individual guy, but the most reliably attractive ones were items that convey some superstitious or religious significance. This pattern was so predictable it was identified by early PUAs and given the name *Chick Crack*: women seem to have an inborn attraction to all things *mystical*.

For the stripper set, this seemed to be par for the course, but I wish I could say this chick-crack phenomenon was limited to just women who had some spiritual-emotional hole in their lives to fill. No, *all* women (yes, I said *all*) seem predisposed to the intrigue that metaphysical imaginings sparks in them. If it smacks of secret, covert knowledge, privy only to a chosen few, then you’ve got an attentive listener in most women. UFOs, palm reading (a classic opener), psychic premonition, ‘*gifts of prophecy*’, really anything that hints of knowledge beyond the ordinary is fair game. This *Chick Crack* is not just limited to off-brand, new age spiritualisms either. You’ll find that women will conveniently develop an affinity for, and are more invested in, religion than men. I realize this may

seem a little counterintuitive for readers who still think organized religion is synonymous with *Patriarchy*, or just nonsensical, but this is about women's innate proclivities, not their organizational skills. From our ancestral, past both men and women have recognized (and exploited) the utility in human's emotional connection to the metaphysical.

## Feminine Mythology

Women's natural attraction to the mysterious and metaphysical is manifested in the sex's historical characterizations. The associations of women's *unknowability* and *feminine mystique* have always proved useful to women. As the vulnerable sex women have always sought power (and security) through covert means. It follows then that a degree of mystery and the supernatural associated with the feminine would be infused into our social narratives about women. We find most mythologized representations of women and femininity cast as brooding, fickle, random or rapacious, often as a temptress, possessing secret womanly knowledge that foolish men (the mere mortals) are neither capable nor encouraged to understand. Sometimes childlike, often eroticized, women are literally cast as forces of nature, very similar to the spiritualized forces deified by early tribal humans. Whether sexualized nymphs or tempestuous witches, each characterization relies on women possessing some form of secret or forbidden connection to the metaphysical. Pythia, named after the mythical snake carcass that formed the conduit to the gods, the *Oracle of Delphi* was always a woman. Even the commanding presence of *Joan of Arc*, while leading the armies of France, had a connection to something otherworldly. By their nature, feminine mythology presumes women are more in tune with the true unknowable nature of metaphysical 'reality', while surpassing the ignorance of brutish men.

For women, the mysterious is a means to covert power. It's likely that women's evolved vulnerabilities (pregnancy powerlessness) and innate proclivities for communication made this evolved gender narrative an obvious social strategy. Where brute force was the domain of men, "feminine wiles" was the domain of women. It is this '*secret power*' dynamic that makes metaphysical associations so attractive (religion, superstition, intuition, etc.) for women. Look no further than women's innate love of gossip to understand this; There's power in secrets for women. It's hardly a surprise that connections with witchcraft have been associated with the feminine for so long. In historically male dominated cultures it follows that the power of secrecy and mysticism would need to be cultivated

into the feminine as a resource for influencing the men in control of it. Sometimes that may have ended with a woman burned at the stake, but more often it was a means to becoming the '*power behind the throne*' by order of degree, and depending upon the status of the man she could *enchant*. Combine that mysticism with sexuality, and you've got the feminine mystique – the most useful tool the Feminine Imperative possesses in its quest for optimal Hypergamy.

Still today women revel in their mythology. Since covert forms of communication are the preferred language of women, their affinity for secret information is a natural fit. They *get* what men don't when it comes to sub-communication. Take away the Vampires and Werewolves – the metaphysical component – from the *Twilight* book/movie series and what you're left with is a relatively bland romance novel. Add the otherworldly and you have a runaway hit, popular with every female demographic, from tweens to octogenarians. In women's evolutionary past, concealment meant everything – and the networking of information amongst the ***Sisterhood*** of tribal females would've been a necessity for ensuring optimal Hypergamy. Confusing a man as to the true genetic paternity of his children was often a matter of life or death. Pursuing a pluralistic sexual strategy (Hypergamy) depended upon creating a characterization of women as legitimately unknowable – thus reinforcing the *feminine mystique* in a social order is needed. Over the course of millennia a cross-cultural, sociological PR campaign has been sustained to perpetuate the *mystery of woman*. The feminine mystique is both a survival adaptation, and later, a means to covert power. While men are ignorant of women's nature, women have more power in sexual selection, decision making, duplicitous mating strategies and a greater degree of control over optimizing Hypergamy in the long term.

Today, what used to be an *old order* covert empowerment strategy has been replaced by more direct, overt narratives of female empowerment. Since the Sexual Revolution women no longer need to rely on the subtle or mysterious woman trope for control; it's simply afforded to them in a Gynocentric social structure. However, the appeal of the mysterious and fanciful, ego-affirming myths are something women lovingly embrace when the archetype seems flattering or empowering to womankind. Women innately process and prioritize emotion differently than men, and it's this emotionality that predisposes women to believing their Hypergamous

filtering is a supernatural *Feminine Intuition*. It's fascinating to see the parallel of the *strong independent woman* narrative force fit into what's still useful of the *old order* feminine mystique ideal.

Again, it's ironic that one of the first useful *Game* observations Pickup Artists made about female nature was their tendency to entertain *magical thinking* to varying degrees. It wasn't too hard to figure out that women could be engaged more easily, and rapport could be set, if you started an approach topic (at least playfully) with some secretly held metaphysical belief. The association is one where (albeit disingenuously) a man would seem to be '*in the know*' about something a woman has a curious belief about. This establishes a point of identification that both he and her would otherwise want to keep secret, thus establishing rapport with her. He *Just Gets It* and is relatable. The *Chick Crack* phenomenon, once a covert means of power for women, was cleverly subverted to men's sexual strategy.

## Awakening the Goddesses

From an evolutionary perspective it makes sense that physically weaker tribal women would seek some sort of mastery over the men in their lives who could punish or kill them, and their offspring at will. Women are biologically and psychologically more attuned to deeper communication and the emotive states of other people. According to *Dr. Stephen Pinker*, men tend to be more interested in things and women tend to be more interested in people. Women have an innate sensitivity to understanding sub-communications, and sub-communicate themselves among their own sex. Men and women's brains are different<sup>1</sup>.

*Sex differences in human behavior show adaptive complementarity: Males have better motor and spatial abilities, whereas females have superior memory and social cognition skills.*

To the blunt, overt, relatively nuance-less, interpretive processes of men this sub-communication can be both frustrating and mysterious. It's the mysterious part that women learned to reinforce and exploit in their dealings with men long ago. This is where we get the idea of the seductress or the 'keeper of mysterious secrets' archetype (witch, midwife, nature goddess) for women. It's less important that women would actually *be* more in tune with the supernatural, but rather it's more important that they *believe* it's a general truth about all women. Men might be skeptical, or they may buy into that mystique, revere it, and encourage other men to believe something similar. Usually how a man adopts or rejects that archetype is determined by his own self-understanding and his *Game* according to it and his sexual market value. The classic *metaphorical truth* about women is that it's best to behave as if they do possess some otherworldly spiritual connection to appease their innate sense of powerlessness.

There are a lot of derivative character archetypes that stem from the basic 'mysterious woman' root. That might be anything from a healer, nurturer, *mother-type* associated with what used to be the mystery of women's life-giving capacity, to the force of nature sorceress, to the

eroticized sexual seductress (nymph, siren) or even the high-priestess of the holy temple of prostitution (an ancient brothel madame). Over the course of history, since our hunter-gatherer beginnings, this means to influence and power for women has coalesced into what we popularly imagine about women's mysterious nature. Only today we call it a '*woman's intuition*' and we make appeals to fortune and fate when a guy gets "**lucky**" and a woman favors him with her sexuality. It's all socialized solutions to evolutionary problems, but if we add an element of 'magic' to the equation it makes explaining failures and appreciating successes that much easier.

Today, the belief in this mystical nature of women is still reinforced in society. We have women subscribing to what amounts to a collective pathology – they are encouraged to believe in their 'magical' sensitivities to spirits and forces beyond the simplistic sensitivities of "powerful" men. To fight the mythological *Patriarchy* women rely on a mythological tool. I made mention above of a stripper I used to have as a friend-with-benefits who was very attuned to the "spirit world". As such the whole gamut of the supernatural was free game for her to use. She'd read my Tarot cards, read my palm. Throw in some eastern mysticism and wash it all down with a read through her pink ladies' devotional Bible. Granted, '*Angie*' was an extreme case, but *all* women are in some way, or say they are in some way, privy to supernatural understandings which men are not. Advance this belief-set to today and we listen to male leaders in mainstream religions adopt and parrot back this "**women are closer to God than men**" mantra which is directly linked to the 'spiritual women' mystique.<sup>2</sup>

*"For years I struggled when it came to praying with my wife. Why? Because she is light years ahead of me when it comes to getting in touch with God. And I'm a pastor!"*

*– Pastor Sam Ingrassia, Just Say the Word*

The old trope of a *Woman's Intuition* is an example of this belief in something beyond the ken of men. And this is also an important aspect of boys' Blue Pill conditioning; Girls/women possess some unearthly connection to God or something supernatural which further cements the idea that they *should* defer authority to girls and women if they want to



*“please God”*. You might think this hard to believe in the age of our new order technology, but only the context of the supernatural has shifted. Even the most objectively rational young men strongly believe in the ‘***Soul Mate Myth***’ despite atheism or agnosticism. This belief of the faithless is directly related to the unknowability of the female. Even modern atheists have a tendency to fall prey to the “someone for everyone” religion when it comes to connecting with the opposite sex. They got *lucky* or they can’t believe their *good fortune* that a gal like her would choose a schmuck like him.

This presumption of a greater sensitivity to the supernatural is an aspect of women’s evolved mental firmware. Obviously this presumption is also socially reinforced, but regardless of how false it may be, a woman with the disposition to encourage men to believe that she has some otherworldly connection, that would lead men to venerate her in the long term, would’ve been a powerful social adaptation in ensuring her own and her children’s long term security. No doubt women readers will trot out the reflexive “*Well, men have been shamans and soothsayers and the patriarchal leaders of churches too*”, and this is true, but those men lacked the female elemental advantage in their believability. Even their own belief sets encompassed the ‘spiritual woman’ tropes for better or worse. The wise old male wizard is definitely an archetype, but that wizard lacks the feminine mystique and the sexual components only women possess in exercising that power.

## Modern Witchcraft

Today, we see a distinct falling away from the *old order* of acknowledging the supernatural. Less and less people subscribe to religion in its conventional sense. The Millennial generation wants nothing to do with “organized religion”, yet they still seek the structure to life it used to provide us. So instead we hear the compromise about being “*spiritual, but not religious*” as if accepting the possibility of the metaphysical is something expected, but the taint of the “*religious*” is left for older generations. Even in what passes for contemporary religion the influence of the Feminine Imperative is ever-present. The spiritual, the metaphysical, the religious, all are still useful tools for women to consolidate power with. As men abdicate more authority to the feminine, as they themselves are the products of a continuous social feminization, we see a wholesale handover of the spiritual to the direction of women. The male leadership of mainstream religion is itself compromised with the imperatives and priorities of women who are already presumed to be “more in tune with God or the supernatural”. As such they exercise the Feminine Imperative and assimilate women’s stake on the spiritual by being proxy agents for women’s authority.

I was linked a story about how Episcopalians have begun to *Remove the Man* from their religion. Apparently this marks the beginning of rewriting the doctrine of this religion by *erasing all masculine pronouns for God*<sup>3</sup>. Of course, I expect the predictable retorts that Episcopalians aren’t *real* Christians, but theirs is just one of the more glaring examples of how the feminization of religion progresses. **The latent purpose is a wholesale removal of anything conventionally masculine from religion, and/or placing the feminine as the primary connection with the supernatural.** Whether it’s mainstream religion or psychic readings, a woman is at the center of that mysticism. If you want a perspective into the things to come for a female-led Mega-Religion look no further than the teaching of *Rev. Shannon Johnson Kershner*. *God is not male* <sup>[4]</sup> is the clarion call of the priestesses (and their male ‘ally’ priests) of this new religion.

Why should we view God as female? Well, it's so that little girls can become pastors, *with Kershner saying:*

*"I wanted to make sure that little girls knew that God could call them to be pastors, too."*

For the *#MeToo* generation, God *is* female, and the supernatural is more aligned with the feminine. I made this observation before the *#MeToo* moral panic arrived, but there's been a growing push on the part of men to relinquish any spiritual authority from a masculine perspective for decades now. The largely secular impetus of the *#MeToo* women's movement is now finding its way into a religious environment that has been primed and ready for it (largely due to acquiescing, complicit, Blue Pill male leadership) for a long time. Modern Feminism was a natural fit for a feminine-primary church that needed its push to consolidate power even in the most patriarchal of religions. *The Future is Female* social narrative gave women license to finally be overt in their designs on religion and spirituality. And not unlike Open Hypergamy, this gynocentric spiritual push into all religions has been embraced in the mainstream.

In celebration of this conversion of religion to feminine-primacy we get the feminist *Beyoncé "worship"* services in formerly traditional cathedrals. In April of 2018, San Francisco's *Grace Cathedral* drew a crowd of over 900 people for the "Beyoncé Mass". The sermon, *Beyoncé and the Hebrew Bible*, was delivered by Rev. Yolanda Norton using the music and social philosophy of pop star and militant feminist, *Beyoncé*.<sup>4</sup> Millennials may be falling away from the old church, but they fill the new church to overflow-capacity when 'god' is female. The take home message is this; womankind has been intimately aware of the complicity of men in granting them a default connection to the supernatural. While we may not profess a formal belief in such, men are eager to accommodate female power in this supernatural arena – especially if in doing so it endears women to the men who play along with it. While *virtuousness* is anti-seductive, professing a belief in supernatural *Chick Crack* is simply good *Game*. The early PUAs picked up on this and used it to their advantage. However, this abdication of moral authority – an authority founded in masculine pretenses – goes far

beyond getting your palm read by an earthy stripper you want to have sex with. This compromising of moral authority to the feminine by men is just the next phase in conceding all social and political authority to the Feminine Imperative. If God or a 'higher power' is the foundation of metaphorical truth and moral authority, and women are universally presumed to be more in touch with that *higher power*, the next step is to cede that authority to the sex that has a more direct line to that power. In a Gynocentric social order men don't *do* God anymore.

The Jewish *Pharisees* of the Old Testament, the Roman Catholic Church and many other religious groups throughout history have used an "exclusive" line to God to consolidate power. Theocracy was easy for men to do in an *old order* because information about the metaphysical was controlled by men; and access to it was limited by technology (i.e. printing press). Men were the arbiters of access to God. Even *Jesus* was the intermediary between God and man:

*Jesus answered, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the **Father except through Me.**"*

John 14: 6

I believe Christ was much more than a conduit to God, but this access control is the template that men have used as a means of power since long before the time of Christ. Establishing oneself as the arbiter of access to metaphorical truths – particularly ones where the fear of mortality are concerned – is a pretty straightforward path to social power. From hunter-gatherer tribal shamans to the Pope, access to gods, and communing with them on behalf of others (usually via *sacrifice*) was just male deductive logic. So it should come as no shock that a Gynocentric social order, founded on female-primacy, would have a similar strategy when it comes to its own globalizing *state* religion. The difference in this case is that the pretense is not solely a theological one as it has been with *male* religions. Gynocentrism consolidates religious power on *old order* religions via women's innate feminine mystique. In secular mythology we already presume the metaphorical truth that women are divinely empowered; women have some innate connection to the supernatural. In the new order it

follows that women would use this millennia-old impression to consolidate power in a new religion by women, for women, in a world shaped by the Feminine Imperative. Whether thrust upon women by the social narrative, or actively curated in mainstream religion, women today are using the default impression of being *more spiritual than men* as a similar means to power.

What prompted me to consider this was an article I was sent in response to a story about women's involvement in modern day *Wicca*. I listened to a bit of a podcast by author/blogger *Vox Day* in which he was asked his thoughts about modern paganism. He said, and I paraphrase:

*“Paganism today is just kids LARPing (live action roleplaying) to the idea of old world religions. They’re role playing something akin to Dungeons and Dragons with no real belief.”*

I thought this was interesting in contrast to another article I was sent on Neo-Paganism and the *Feminist Spirituality Movement*:

*However, some women were not willing to identify themselves as “witches”, and there arose a form of Goddess worship without any of the trappings of witchcraft. As Nevill Drury explains, “Although some Goddess-worshippers continued to refer to themselves as witches, others abandoned the term altogether, preferring to regard their neopagan practice as a universal feminist religion, drawing on mythologies from many different ancient cultures.” This has been called “Goddess worship” and the “Goddess movement”. These terms are frequently used interchangeably with, but should be distinguished from, “**feminist spirituality**”, which includes the Goddess movement, but also feminist Christianity, feminist Judaism, etc. [...]*

*The principal beliefs of the Goddess movement are that the Goddess is a radically immanent deity and she can be experienced directly. The Earth is seen as the body of the Goddess and women are understood to connect to the Goddess through their experience of their own bodies, as well as the “body” of the earth. Goddess*

*feminists also believe that the Goddess is constantly changing, manifest in the changing of the seasons and the human life-cycle, and perpetually self-renewed.*

*The Goddess movement offers women a new self-image and facilitates women finding their own innate goodness and natural divinity. It enables women to redeem and revalue the “feminine principle” and offers them positive images and symbols of female empowerment.*

It's easy to dismiss the influence of the feminine on what is re-evolving into a new feminine-world order of spirituality, but it would be foolish to dismiss the influences of the Feminine Imperative – the Goddess Movement – that is manifesting incrementally in the power vacuum left by men's abdication of masculine moral authority to the feminine. We read that Millennials may not be “*as religious*” as previous generations, but that doesn't mean they don't seek out ‘*spiritual, but not religious*’ metaphysical connections. They seek direction, and connection in religion, but they seek it in the secular, gynocentric terms they've been conditioned to believe they should define themselves by. A similar parallel exists on the masculine side too. Recall that one of the reasons for *Dr. Jordan Peterson's* popularity was his ‘ministering’ to a generation of “lost boys” seeking direction in life. He is every bit one of the Lords of the New Church in the same way that the Goddess Movement speaks to another demographic of lost souls who seek absolution in the “divine feminine” – also a term *Peterson* is fond of.

What then does a religion by women, for women look like? Maybe more importantly, what does that religion look like on a globalized scale? What does the *Goddess* look like? To outline this we'll need to return to the *Alpha God* template that *Dr. Hector Garcia* proposed in the last chapter. Male Gods look like men and behave according to human male (and primates) imperatives. As mentioned, that usually includes reserved sexual access, reproductive power, tribal obedience to an Alpha male headship, territorial acquisition, violence, etc. What serves an evolved masculine imperative is what serves God. *He* is always the referential for God. The same dominance and competence hierarchies, and *Burden of Performance* that naturally

evolved among men in our ancestral past were reflected in our impression of what a God we could relate with looked like. Whether God made man in *His* image, or man required a metaphor for a God that looked like him, the point is man and God are reflections of the other. *God made man in his own image*. It follows that our best interests on this planet would be *His* best interests for men.

Human females, however, have a much different existential experience on this planet than men. While men were the hunters and warriors, women were the gatherers and nurturers. When you read about feminist angst over gender inequality and division of labor most of what we think of as *traditional* gender roles find its basis in evolutionary necessity, not social constructionism. It made pragmatic sense that the vulnerable incubators of the next generation would evolve innate proclivities that put them into different roles. Women tend to have an innately greater degree of empathy (if not sympathy) than do men. Neurologically, women process emotions differently than men and they interpret and respond differently to emotional cues. Women innately have a greater facility with communication than men. While men prioritize content (information) in conversation, women prioritize context (feelings). Men tend to be more interested in things, and women tend to be more interested in people (*Pinker*). Not only is this historically apparent in women's archetypal roles, but it's also evidenced in their choice of college major and their preferred career paths.

Men and women are physiologically and psychologically different. These differences develop in the womb.<sup>5</sup> As a result of these differences, and the evolutionary circumstances that prompted them, women were primed for collectivism. Over the millennia of human evolution, the stresses of men's reproductive strategies and environmental realities has become hardwired into the male mental firmware, and as such it has selected-for men having a more competitive, aggressive and less agreeable nature than women. I would go so far as to suggest that competitiveness *is* a primary aspect of conventional masculinity – and one that has required a constant effort to socialize out of modern males today.

On the female side we have to consider how women evolved, socially and psychologically, in hunter-gatherer, foraging tribes, and how the environmental stress of maintaining a social collective shaped women's

mental firmware. Being the *vulnerable* sex, women's intense need for long term security is directly descended from the need to hedge against the environmental uncertainties of our evolutionary past. The rigors of gestation, carrying a child to term, child birth and then rearing that child to puberty – all while gathering food and resources and defending that child and the collective against external (and sometime internal) threats selected-for women with a communitarian mental firmware. While the men of the tribal society were off hunting game or defending the tribe, it follows that women would develop a more unitary, collectivist social order of intra-sexual cooperation in order to survive and ensure that the genetic material of the men they selected (or were selected by) survived for posterity.



## The Sisterhood Über Alles

In several past essays I describe women's natural social order as the *Sisterhood Über Alles*. That is, 'women above all else', and from an evolved psychological perspective this solidarity, collectivism and cooperative bent is the mental vestige of an evolution that demanded women be intra-dependent on other women in order to survive, and secure and nurture future generations. Evolution doesn't care how women breed and survive, just *that* women breed and survive. Flash forward to modern times and we see women of any and every social, political, religious and racial stripe preempt the conviction inspired by those beliefs with the concerns of womankind. Communitarianism is a characteristic of women's mental firmware. When presented with the distribution of a common wealth (or resource) it's women's predisposition to mete out those resources to the familial, feminine-primary social group (tribe) in as even a distribution as possible, or by an individual's most pressing needs. Whereas for men, distribution of resources is primarily merit based. Men tend to mete out resources based on performance in keeping with men's hierarchal socialization and the value of the performance he provides to the tribe. We can observe parallels of these gendered differences in the modern workplace. Businesses, indeed capitalism, were conventionally *Male Spaces*. But as women have moved into the workplace corporate culture has shifted from a merit-reward focus to a communal benefit focus. Creating work environments, and policies, that prioritize the comfort and needs of women before the overall profit and sustainability of those businesses has been a progressive shift in American corporate culture since women entered the workforce wholesale in the mid-70s.

This fundamental prioritizing of the survival needs and best interests of women as a collective is what forms the basis of, and drives, what I've commonly referred to as the *Feminine Imperative*. From the Feminine Imperative, combined with a permissive male social structure, we have largely developed into a feminine-primary *Gynocentric* social order. This order is founded on the evolved, collectivist social structure that women's evolved mental firmware naturally predisposes them to. Collectivism and, by

extension, *socialism*, are fundamental aspects of the female psyche. In a social order that prioritizes female interests above all else we see the rise and perpetuation of an egalitarian *equalism* that finds its roots in women's natural predisposition for a survival-based collectivism. I would argue here that the idealized egalitarianism we contend with in globalized society today is really a convenient cover-story for female social primacy – one that is a result of women's innately collectivist nature and a newfound social power to effect it.

This *Sisterhood* also arises from the reality that most human tribes were patrilocal and not matrilineal. That is, the core of the tribe was a group of males bonded by kin, and they brought in females from other tribes (trade/conquest) routinely for mating. I cover this dynamic in the chapter *War Brides* in my first book. Males had relatively high levels of cooperation due to being kin-bonded. These were not perfect levels of cooperation – rivalries always exist, violence happens in kin bonds as well, but much higher than among non-kin-bonded males. However, inter-tribe females had to adapt to cooperate with the other out-group females despite the lack of kin bonds between them as a kind of counterweight to the innate solidarity that the kin-bonded males had. The kind of female sisterhood/collectivism that we see in women now evolved from the need to counteract male solidarity in patrilocal tribes. Women evolved to cooperate with other *strange* women in the face of this male solidarity which was based on kin affiliation. This is a key element to bear in mind when we look at how a *Goddess* religion spreads to a worldwide *Sisterhood*.

An important point of this – and something which explains much of the behavior of women *politically* in the last 200 years or so – is that the context in which this *Sisterhood* evolved was specifically to counterweigh male power. Because females would otherwise have remained vulnerable and isolated in the face of a tribe of kin-bonded males, they evolved this global sisterhood/collective mentality specifically to provide a counterweight to overwhelming kin-bonded male power. This is important, because it's this specific context in which this *Sisterhood* mentality comes to the fore most prominently in women, even today. Women can fight and scratch and claw with each other and be *bitches* with each other incessantly, but when one of them comes into conflict with a man or “*with men*”, the sisterhood/collective mindset kicks into high gear, precisely because this is the specific context it

emerged to counter. In other words, it's specifically evolved to offset male power, or counterbalance male power, by forging solidarity between females who otherwise would not have any reason to act like a sisterhood – and who may even dislike each other intensely. I should also note that Hypergamy necessitates an interdependence on a collective of women for socially approved mate choice of men. The biological realities of women being the incubators of the next generation and a relatively short period of viable, peak fertility age made an interdependence on mate assessments among women another factor that cemented the *Sisterhood* into women's innate mental firmware.

Contemporary feminism is the most obvious form of this *Sisterhood*, but it isn't the only one. A pronounced female in-group preference is another. In any case, a key point to understand is that the *Sisterhood* isn't neutral — it's evolved to counterbalance *any* kind of male power that threatens women's interests as a group. This is the case even though women haven't lived in patrilocal conditions for a long time; and even though contemporary men have no solidarity to speak of at all which could possibly threaten women's interest as a group. That evolutionary history casts long shadows. The tendency for women to see men as a cabal acting to control women – when in fact we're kind of the exact opposite of that – arises from the collective evolutionary memory of adaptations to deal with the very real male solidarity females faced when they were *imported* into patrilocal tribes of kin-bonded males. To be sure, women can be very vindictive and competitive amongst their in-group peers. This needs to be considered from the perspective of how our evolved past influences our present day impulses. Much as they do today, women in a tribal collective no doubt had intra-sexual competition amongst themselves, and likely a propensity to attack other women in the psychological-sociological sense (gossip, ostracizing, etc.) and all generally to gain access to men with whom they could breed '*sexy sons*'. Yet for all of it, women still needed to ensure the security of the community against threats, thus this internecine in-fighting was buffered by a more pressing need for survival of the whole. Thus evolved the communitarian aspect of women's psyches. In the modern day female dominant work culture the tribal concerns for survival are no longer present, but the psychological vestiges of women's infighting and communitarian natures still persists in the workplace.

Before we get to the image of the *Goddess* we have to consider a few more aspects of female nature. I've already covered the duality of Hypergamy and its influence on women's behavior, but we've also got to factor in how this affects the overall ideal of a female-centric religion. Since the Sexual Revolution, as women attained political power, their primary use of that power has been to assure the future security of womankind. It's unsurprising then that in the wake of unilaterally female-controlled birth control (and a *Free Love* movement) we see an increase in women's social and political capital. With that capital we see legalized abortion, no fault divorce, the *Duluth* model of feminism, *Title IX* laws, the decline of a nuclear family, and several ambiguous varieties of sexual consent (*Yes Means Yes*, *No Means No*, *retroactive and Enthusiastic Consent*, et. al.) just to name the most obvious social shifts. Women's rise to political power has been defined by their using it to legislatively ensure women's innate reproductive insecurities and/or absolve women of the liabilities for poor reproductive decisions that used to have life-threatening consequence for women in our evolved past. As the more *vulnerable* sex, this use of power reflects the obsessive importance of their evolved insecurities. Furthermore, the solidarity of the global *Sisterhood* is also a means of assuring that same security. Covert power is traded for overt sociopolitical control, but the underlying goals of that power remain what they've always been for women. The evolutionary compulsion for female-primary security, and optimizing Hypergamy in a chaotic world is a key element of the image of the *Goddess*.

Lastly, we must consider women's innate solipsism. I detailed women's solipsistic nature and the evolutionary implications of it in my third book *Positive Masculinity*, but a brief recap is in order. As the *vulnerable* sex, evolution selected-for women with a psychological ability to externalize and compartmentalize circumstances and people outside their direct control who threatened their personal safety and the potential safety of their offspring. As such, women evolved an innate form of solipsism as part of their mental firmware. The logic is this; women with a capacity to prioritize their own concerns, to the exception of all external interests, tended to optimize reproduction and ensure the safety of their children. This solipsism is root level, instinctual and reinforced over millennia by human societies that prioritized women's security and protection through the sacrifice of men (the disposable sex). This may seem at odds with the communitarian aspect

of women's natures, but this solipsism, by order of degree, coexists with that collectivist support system. Solipsism is about individual survival/security, while collectivism is about group survival/security. The primary reason the *Sisterhood* is so effective as a global influence is that it appeals to both the collectivist gender-tribalism of women and simultaneously their individual self-importance. Acknowledging this cognitive dissonance, in fact female-specific cognitive dissonance itself, is a celebrated aspect of the *Goddess*' image. Our new *Goddess* is self-concerned and self-empowering while simultaneously communitarian and nurturing of the solidarity of the *Sisterhood* — and all unencumbered by any cognitive dissonance.

## Goddesses Like Women

In this new order we have an unprecedented opportunity to mix all this data about female nature into a de facto *deity*. And the great thing is, it's already been done for us if we know where to look. On the August 2018 cover of *Elle* magazine we have a well-processed shot of singer *Ariana Grande* with only the title of her new song below her name – “*God is a Woman*”. The lyrics of which extoll the power and sexual agency of being a woman, but the popular sentiment of combining female power with the supernatural is what makes the song a *Fempowerment* anthem. Three months later, on the December 2018 cover of *Elle* we were treated to a similar portrait of Oprah Winfrey with a pull quote from the feature article; “*The new generation of boys should be raised to **believe** that girls are their equals, and sometimes, their superiors.*”

Before we can wrap our heads around what a contemporary religion by women, for women, would look like today, we have to step back and look at how *goddesses* were venerated by masculine-centric beliefs in the past. Doing the research for this I came across article after article emphasizing how goddesses were the *original* gods of ancient humanity. According to feminist theologians, misogynist male-primary gods forcibly supplanted the *original* matriarchal goddesses of the Paleolithic eras. Much of this is the speculation of the *Fempowerment* writers of the militant-feminist 70s, but in them there are some clues to how a modern Gynocentric religion might take shape. In her 1976 book *When God was a Woman*,<sup>6</sup> historian *Merlin Stone* states “...development of the religion of the female deity in this area [Near and Middle East] was intertwined with the earliest beginnings of religion so far discovered anywhere on earth.” A female Goddess was ‘unquestionably’ the supreme deity to rule the rest of a pantheon; “...creator and law-maker of the universe, prophetess, provider of human destinies, inventor, healer, hunter and valiant leader in battle.” Essentially, the earliest female deities were effigies of the ideals of apex humanity. Again, bear in mind, this interpretation of the *divine feminine* is largely a product of 20<sup>th</sup> century feminism. Feminists claiming women did religion first seems to be a stake on which sex has *authentic* beliefs.

More importantly is the impression of the *divine feminine* as the ‘life giver’, nurturer or healer. In making a case for ancient, beneficent Matriarchy, *Stone* also points out, “...the concept of the creator of all human life may have been formulated by the clan’s image of the woman who had been their most ancient, primal ancestor.” To our tribal male ancestors, women may’ve been a commodity to fight over, but they could do something no man could – give birth to a new human being. No doubt this aspect of women was a mysterious (supernatural?) phenomenon to early men. Sex, fertility, pregnancy, birthing and nurturing of the next generation was definitely something requiring a *metaphorical truth* about women for men to believe. That this belief also aligned with men’s evolved *protector dynamic* for women and children only solidified the ancient feminine mystique. From there it’s a short step from ‘life giver’ to *divine creator of the universe*, to *Mother Earth*.

Even in the mid-stages of religion, when a polytheistic ideal better served humans, *goddesses* still retained the gendered attributes and virtues of an idealized feminine. Zeus may have been the primary god of the Greek pantheon, but the goddesses still resembled and behaved according to the individuated, evolved natures of human females. Yet, in all of this, the perception of the *divine feminine* was filtered through the lens of a masculine-primary experience. The apex ideals that the *goddesses* represented were what best served a masculine imperative. Sex, lust, passion, fertility, loyalty, wisdom, nurturing, companionship, empathy, complementarity, and dozens more female-specific, gendered ideals for women were exemplified in men’s religion.

*A wife of noble character who can find?*

*She is worth far more than rubies.*

*Her husband has full confidence in her and lacks nothing of value.*

*She brings him good, not harm, all the days of her life.*

*– Proverbs 31:10-12*

There’s more to this scripture, as most Christian women’s **Proverbs 31 Ministry** speakers will let you know, but it lists all the aspects of female nature that are most beneficial to a male-primary experience. Are they

generally good, admirable qualities in women? Absolutely. But how a male-centric religion comes to value these attributes is what I'm getting at. The *goddesses* men create, define and worship are specific to *his* experience. What made for a *goddess*, and what makes for a mythic *Quality Woman*, is what best facilitates his own imperatives. *She* becomes something that's worthy of his inherent idealism. Men have literally put womankind "*on a pedestal*" for millennia.

The *goddesses* women fashion of themselves align with their own nature according to their own female experience. Women's religion serves female-specific imperatives as dictated by their evolved natures. Male worshipers of this new order *divine feminine* assume the accessory role of fulfilling those imperatives as acts of spiritual devotion. The men who worship women today have become the gender-swapped reflection of the *Quality Woman*. Male feminists and *Equalist* Trad-Cons both worship the divine feminine by acceding to female-primacy. The *Simp* or *Pay Pig* pays tithes and offers sacrifices of money to curry favor with his cam-girl *goddesses* on OnlyFans. This spiritual devotion to the *goddess* also coincides with men's innate protector instincts and their *Burden of Performance*.

*"Men are more interested in things; women are more interested in people."*

– Dr. Stephen Pinker, Human Gender Differences

From the masculine perspective, men are the idealists. We want to know what is possible. For better or worse, it's generally man's nature to want to effect his will upon his world. Men are innately deductive problem solvers. Whether that's exploring or creating, or destroying a rival and taking his resources, or cooperating with *kin* to create civilizations, man is interested in things outside himself. Because of this, men are the risk-takers; in fact, nature tends to take more chances with the males of all species. The clever, the strong or the fortunate have their *will* extended into later generations, but that comes at the price of existential risk. Male gods, in various ways, appeal to this same force of will. Male gods enforce male imperatives, according to male experiences.



For all the pretense of mystical power, women's nature makes their religion about themselves, security and community. Just as the Feminine Imperative is the overriding priority for women afforded political or social power, so too is it the priority for a globalizing Gynocentric religion. As the *vulnerable* sex, women's compulsive drive for security in protection and optimizing reproductive choices is a prime directive of the *Goddess Movement*. A modern example of this is our new order attitudes towards legalized abortion. The ideal of "*Safe, Legal and Rare*" that came in the wake of *Roe vs. Wade* in the U.S. in the 70s has transformed "a woman's *right* to choose" into a worldwide ***Human Right***. Today, abortion is largely viewed as empowering for women, emphasized as a point of pride, and a cause for celebration when a previously resistant country legalizes it. Nothing highlights the *Goddess Movement's* global influence more than Western women of another country celebrating a previously religious country's decision to legalize abortion. As the American *founding fathers* knew, a ***right*** carries a lot more weight when it's presumed to be imbued by a divine creator. A religion by women, for women, must necessarily make women's imperatives *God's* will. We can see this transference – *God's* sex-change – taking shape in our contemporary *old order* religions as secular feminism, female-primacy and female issues become increasingly *Kosher*. When a previously religious country adopts abortion as a *right* of women, what you're witnessing is a society submitting to the moral ascendancy of the *Goddess Movement*.

Women's innate security-seeking collectivism, that defines the *Sisterhood Über Alles*, is a key driver of the *Goddess Movement*. A new order female religion spiritualizes the communitarian aspects of women's nature. The tribal *gatherers*, the interdependency of the female collective for security, the matrilineal *sisterhood*, and womankind's shared victimhood (that transcends politics, religion and race) are the basis of a new syncretic religion of Gynocentrism. The matrilineal solidarity that served women's survival interests in our ancestral past now serves as the basis for an expanding, inclusionary, unitarian global religion that will supplant *old order* disparate religions very soon.

**Syncretism:** *the amalgamation or attempted amalgamation of different religions, cultures, or schools of thought.*

Wikipedia defines *Syncretism* thusly:

Religious Syncretism is the blending of two or more religious belief systems into a new system, or the incorporation into a religious tradition of beliefs from unrelated traditions.

This can occur for many reasons, and the latter scenario happens quite commonly in areas where multiple religious traditions exist in proximity and function actively in the culture, or when a culture is conquered, and the conquerors bring their religious beliefs with them, but do not succeed in entirely eradicating the old beliefs or, especially, practices.

Religions may have syncretic elements to their beliefs or history, but adherents of so-labeled systems often frown on applying the label, especially adherents who belong to "revealed" religious systems, such as the Abrahamic religions, or any system that exhibits an exclusivist approach. Such adherents sometimes see syncretism as a betrayal of their pure truth. By this reasoning, adding an incompatible belief corrupts the original religion, rendering it no longer true. Indeed, critics of a specific syncretistic trend may sometimes use the word "syncretism" as a disparaging epithet, as a charge implying that those who seek to incorporate a new view, belief, or practice into a religious system actually distort the original faith. The consequence, according to *Keith Ferdinando*, is a fatal compromise of the dominant religion's integrity. Non-exclusivist systems of belief, on the other hand, may feel quite free to incorporate other traditions into their own.

The *Goddess Movement*; a globalized communitarian religion, by women, for women, is inherently syncretic. When we look at events like the *Beyoncé* interfaith worship service we can get a glimpse of how the *Sisterhood* does religion. Women's religion is inclusionary and collectivist, whereas as men's is exclusionary, *revealed* faith and based on merit and performance. Both of these are reflective of each sex's evolved (or divinely imbued) imperatives and their respective natures. As ideological feminism and Gynocentrism is exported across the globe, disparate religious, cultural

and national identities are erased in favor of a one-world syncretic religion for which women's collectivism is a natural fit. The *Goddess Movement*, like the Sisterhood Über Alles, transcends national, religious and political identity. In fact, setting itself apart from exclusionary *Patriarchal*-based *old order* identities of race, religion and politics is the major element of its appeal. A globalized, unitary religion looks a lot like the solidarity of the sisterhood that evolved among women of differing tribes taken as spoils of men's wars.

## Assimilation

Feminism has, or is in the process of, assimilating every mainstream faith and their subcultures. Yes, even the faiths that are founded on *Patriarchy* are subject too. I understand that's a bold statement. When I've asserted this in essays and online conversations I'm usually met with the rebuttals of religious men assuring me that *their* orthodox religion is immune to the *Goddess Movement's* influence. But the process of assimilation is similar for every faith. To be sure, some are being assimilated at a slower rate than others, but all mainstream religions have been compromised, or are being compromised. Men enable it, but women fundamentally alter the faith via church culture. They move into positions of leadership because the secular culture of *Fempowerment* eventually becomes *Kosher* so long as it retains the brand of that religion. Those brands, those franchises, aren't making a lot of business sense when they're based on fundamentally exclusionary doctrines. Even Islam, which by all appearances is a patriarchal holdout amongst other religions, is being gradually turned to a feminine-primary purpose.

Secular Gynocentrism becomes an approved part of the host religion as long as women profess to be a practicing believer. Then the structural changes begin. The religious feminist reimagines their altering the faith as a genuine *God-Spoken* need for progression from the old faith. The few men remaining in the congregation are incentivized to support doctrinal changes that 1-2 generations prior would have been called '*heresy*'. That, or they reimagine their own messages to align with the '*progress*' instituted by the ideological shift feminist ideology has worked into the faith. After almost five decades of social feminization, men see identifying with the feminine as not only a means to solving their reproductive problem, but also as a virtue mandated to men by God. If *Momma* ain't happy, *God* ain't happy. Gynocentrism effectively supplants male servitude to God with servitude to wife, and by extension the Feminine Imperative.

This is the lesson: Every Christian-, Jewish-, Muslim-, Hindu-, Buddhist-Feminist earnestly believes they are doing good by altering that faith to align with Gynocentrism. If you ask them they'll say they believe

they are moving the faith in a better direction or they will say their shift is what the *real* religion was always about. They will tell you the old faith was really about women's narratives and you are clinging to '*ideological purity*' that's an obstacle to their new version of your old beliefs. The new faith can contradict everything that defined the old faith, but they still claim the old 'branding' of the old faith. The old logo of the religion still has marketing value (for the time), but the doctrine is more appealing to feminine sensibilities. The advertising is "Try the new Christianity! Now with zero judgment, sin is only for men and more forgiveness for women."

When they (men and women) are confronted with the inconsistencies and contradictions of their redefining *progressive* ideology – when they are told that they aren't a "true [insert religion]" by the old faith – the response becomes an acceptable shaming of the old doctrine. As I mentioned in the introduction of this book, the new order Gynocentric doctrine runs afoul of the *Orthodox Paradox*. Shaming the *old order* believers for their outdated exclusionary faith is the reflexive, emotional, first resort for a feminizing religion. For the *true believers* who won't be shamed, isolation and ostracism work best. The *haters* are no longer welcome in their progressing religion, and in a few generations their ilk will die out. This then is the progression:

- Secular culture influences church/religious culture.
- Secular influences are made *Kosher* and adopted by that culture to be *relevant* or attractive to new *believers* (clientele).
- Church culture influences religious doctrine – the identifying way a religion practices faith.
- Secularized doctrine reinterprets articles of faith to align with prevailing social climates (now globalized climates).
- Faith, the underlying belief-set, alters to accommodate the *new doctrine*.
- 1-2 generations later the doctrine-altered *faith* becomes the True Faith and the *old order* faith dies out.

That's the mechanics of the assimilation we're currently experiencing in the new order. Granted, this process can be interrupted, slowed or

accelerated by war, social unrest and technological innovation. However, effectively, the Gynocentric ideology never really changes, it just uses that religion as its host, as its vehicle, to advance its narrative to pre-established religious groups. We can see a similar parallel to this in how the *Social Justice* narrative readily uses old, successful movie franchises as a vehicle for their ideological agenda. “**Woke**” ideology doesn’t resonate enough on its own to create or develop an engaging movie, game or story, so *Social Justice* adherents acquire and revive old, familiar franchises to rewrite its ideological messages into. Look no further than the last three *Star Wars* movies for an example of this. The beloved *old order* religion is bastardized in order to implement the new ideology.

Once female (or feminized male) religious leaders have full control of the messaging of the *old order* religion, they invariably reform that religion to a communitarian syncretic doctrine based on collectivism, inclusiveness and feminism that throws out any articles of the former faith that would contradict it, while retaining the elements that prove useful for sustaining it. As sinister as all this sounds the women (and men) engaged in this assimilation are doing so as a matter of course. They sincerely believe that advancing the *Goddess Movement* is a mission of faith and “*God’s plan for a better Church*”. Ironically the *Orthodox Paradox* applies to women rewriting gender-neutral translations of the Bible, as much as women moving into religious roles of authority previously held by men according to old doctrine. They believe in what they’re doing. They believe they’re doing the *Lord’s* work in destroying a faith by progressing it away from the beliefs that it was founded upon. And when men in the church believe that *mysterious* women are “lightyears closer to God”, it only reinforces the *correctness* of female-primacy in the secular world and in church.

### **The World in Her image**

*Dear Church,*

*Jesus protected women.*

*Empowered women.*

*Honored women publicly.*

*Released the voice of women.*

*Confided in women.*

*Was funded by women.  
Celebrated women by name.  
Learned from women.  
Respected women.  
And spoke of women as examples to follow.  
- Carlos A. Rodríguez (Tweeted February 10, 2018)*

December 24, 2019 human rights group Franciscans International defended a Christmas greeting depicting the *Virgin Mary* alongside the Andean earth-goddess *Pachamama*:

*In this picture you see Mary, who we honor as the ‘new Eve’ or Mother of Life, together with Pachamama, who some indigenous peoples honor as the ‘earth mother’. Francis of Assisi too describes the earth as our mother in the Canticle.*

Earlier on October 4, 2019 *Pope Francis* blessed a *Pachamama* statue at a tree-planting ritual in the Vatican gardens. Several *Pachamama* statues were also displayed inside *Santa Maria in Traspontina* church near the Vatican.<sup>7</sup>

*I urge young women to accept leadership roles. We need you to promote love and compassion. Realize my dream—that the 200 nations of the world be governed by women. There’ll be less war, violence, and economic and social injustice because strength is rooted in love and compassion.*

The Dalai Lama – @DalaiLama, March 8, 2019 (*International Women’s Day*)

*A few things about Christlike manhood: It is fierce enough to fight for women. Bold enough to want a woman in Bible class. Safe enough to be alone with a woman. Muscular enough to scatter a crowd of men ready to stone a sinful woman. Brazen enough to send a woman with good news.*

*For those wondering what I meant by a Christlike man being safe for a woman to find herself alone with, I was thinking about the woman at the well not having to fear that Jesus would come onto her or abuse her.*

Beth Moore – tweeted February 28, 2020

“There's a lot of folks who are pro-choice or support reproductive dignity and freedom because of their faith and not in spite of it. [...] We're trying to disrupt the idea that religion equals anti-choice.”

Rev. Katey Zeh – Baptist minister, CEO of the *Religious Coalition for Reproductive Choice*.

According to the *Pew Research Center, Religion and Public Life*<sup>8</sup> 83% of Jewish Americans agree that abortion should be legal in all/most cases.

*A woman who was having trouble giving birth, they cut up the fetus inside her and take it out limb by limb, because her life comes before its life. – Oholot 7:6*

Much of the feminine-primary Jewish rationales for abortion originate from this Talmudic scripture.

“There are a lot of even ultra-Orthodox decisors that say if this pregnancy is going to cause the woman pain, suffering of some kind—and there's understanding that sometimes suffering is material, sometimes suffering is mental—that is something that our tradition says is a reason to have an abortion...”

Rabbi Danya Ruttenberg – Author/Editor *Yentl's Revenge: The Next Wave of Jewish Feminism*

Arguably no other religious issue reflects the state of feminine-primacy within *old order* religion than abortion. Amongst all mainstream religions today abortion is almost exclusively addressed and delegated by female *believers*. Just as in secular society, men are effectively locked out of the



discussion and decision making when it comes to reproduction. As we'll see in *Responsibility vs. Authority*, men are expected to *Man Up, Shut Up* and accept the manly responsibility a female-defined god with no actual authority or influence over the reproductive process. The sea change in religious attitudes (and rationales) about abortion is a prime indicator of how mainstream religion has been influenced by Gynocentrism. Not only has abortion been made *Kosher*, but it's also become an article of faith in the *Goddess Movement*. In 2017 podcast, prominent Presbyterian pastor Rev. Shannon Johnson Kershner was asked by the Chicago Sun-Times, "Is Christianity the only way to heaven?"

"God's not a Christian. I mean, we are ... For me, the Christian tradition is the way to understand God and my relationship with the world and other humans and it's for the way for me to move into that relationship but I'm not about to say what God can and cannot do in other ways and with other spiritual experiences..."

When asked what she thought about Hell, she said she "doesn't think the God she knows from the Bible will be sending anyone there." In the same interview she was asked about her wish to reform the church from the inside out, "we should get beyond this idol of maleness that we've constructed both for the divine as well as for clergy." In researching this shift to the divine feminine I ran Rev. Kershner's comments by my religious colleagues and almost to the man they jumped to the *Orthodox Paradox* – "She's not a Christian" or "Well, she's Presbyterian and they're not *real* Christians anyway" were the common defenses. For most religious men, there is an obsessive need to qualify this feminist '*Heresy*' as illegitimate. It may seem like I'm cherry-picking the instances of women breaking from the faith to, in various ways, follow the *Goddess Movement*, but in the internet age finding these illustrations is overwhelming easy. Too easy. But *believing* men's disqualification and dismissal of these instances is just as telling. The refusal to acknowledge the feminism in their religion, or the staunch "*God will not be mocked!*" rejection of what I think should be obvious, is just as damning as the men within these religions who are going along with the Gynocentric transformation.

In all of the instances of the *Goddess Movement* I've been tracking for this book, in every case, there is a female religious authority in place that moves that religion to a uniform, gynocentric unitarian syncretism. The

gender dynamics of that religion turn first to a doctrinal shift of *Fempowerment* and then move towards a *Secular-Kosher*, all-is-one, judgement-free communitarian spirituality. The religion of women becomes an organized version of “spiritual-but-not-religious” founded on women emotionalism, sisterhood and an evolved need for security and certainty in a chaotic world.



# MARRIAGE

## Marriage sells, but who's buying?

What happened to marriage?

In my years of writing in the *Manosphere* there have been many repetitions of controversial topics that come and go. What makes a guy *Alpha*? Is it really all about *Looks*? Is Game effective? Does *Hypergamy* mean I'm doomed to celibacy? But no other topic generates more controversy than whether or not a man should *ever* consider marriage given its current state. Ask any tribe of the *Manosphere* and they'll probably have a detailed explanation as to why marriage today is the single worst decision a man can make in his life. The *Red Pill*, MGTOW, 'Doomers', MRAs; hell, even a substantial portion of Trad-Cons (traditional conservatives) who've grudgingly accepted *Red Pill* awareness are compelled to agree with the assessment – marriage is an all-downside risk for men today. Most men in the new order, *Red Pilled* or not, realize the potentially life-destroying racket that marriage has become since the time of the Sexual Revolution. What these factions disagree on is often just a debate of how men might best mitigate that risk, **if** they decided it's the only way for them to form a family.

Even for the diehard, Blue Pill conditioned, pro-marriage religious man current marriage statistics are inarguably bleak. According to the 2020 report from the *National Center for Health and Statistics*, in 2018 the U.S. marriage rate fell 6%. Only 6.5 new marriages were formed per 1,000 people; the lowest rate of marriage since stats were recorded in 1867. I wish I could say there was some shock associated with these numbers, but this decline has been in a steady descent for some time now. While doing my homework for this chapter I came across identical articles about the marriage rate decline from 2007, 2011, 2015 and 2020. All of them ask the same questions and all came to the same *old order* conclusions as to why this decline is so endemic. The *death of marriage* isn't just an American phenomenon. According to *UN Women, Families in a Changing World 2019-2020*<sup>1</sup>, worldwide marriage is in decline and single living is on the rise. The report gathered statistics on the percentage of women who reach their late forties without ever having married (increasing), the average age at which people marry for the first time (increasing), and the proportion of

people in their late forties who are divorced or separated (increasing). Global averages were reported for eight regions of the world. As of this writing, worldwide, 4.3% of women get to their late forties without ever marrying.

In 2011 *Pew Research Center* estimated<sup>2</sup> that by the time today's young adults in the U.S. reach the age of 50, 25% of them will have never been married. To have a cohort of 50-year-olds in which 1 in 4 has never been married will transform social, political, and economic landscapes in ways we can't imagine. According to a study titled "*Rise of the SHEconomy*"<sup>3</sup> by investment bank *Morgan Stanley*, by 2030, 45% of prime-working-age women between 25 and 44 in the U.S. will be single; the largest share in history. The population of single-women will grow by an average annual rate of 1.2% through 2030, to 77.5 million. Among the total female population over the age of 15, the rate of single women by 2030 will outpace that of married women, rising to 52%. Lastly, according to the U.S. Census Bureau, 2019, only 20% of people 25-year-olds live with a spouse. In 1970, 69% of people did. Of *Millennials* aged 23-38, more than 4 in 10 (45%) do not live in a family of their own (*Pew Research, 2019*).

I can go on with the bleak statistics, but if you're reading this book, or are in any way familiar with the *Red Pill*, you don't need convincing when I say the state of marriage is in crisis today, as it has been since starting in the early 1970s. By virtually every metric one can measure marriage as an institution by, the sharp decline in *all* areas begins immediately after the advent of hormonal birth control and the Sexual Revolution. For every new damning report about marriage there are dozens of follow-on articles written about the reasons why; and every one will be premised on *old order* thinking – thinking that is perpetually mired in gynocentric and *Blank Slate* presuppositions that still sound *truthy* today. When these reasons are not contradictory, those explanations for the death of marriage (and declining fertility rates) almost universally center on men not measuring up to the classic *old order*, old social contract, masculine responsibilities that are still useful as a means of control to a new order Feminine Imperative.

While one study claims "*Single and Childless Women are the Happiest*" another shows that "*Women are Prescribed Antidepressants at Record Rates.*" One article praises *forward-thinking* companies for including ovum

freezing as part of the benefits package for their growing female careerists; another bemoans the lack of “*economically attractive*”, eligible men who are *deserving* as women’s financial and intellectual ‘*equals*’. In the midst of all this female entitlement are the men, young and old alike, disillusioned by women’s hubris, swearing never to sign their names to a marriage contract that is effectively the worst business arrangement ever conceived for men. In fact, that’s the most apt description of modern marriage for men ‘*going their own way*’ today. Marriage today is an ***Unconscionable Contract*** that no sane man would ever enter into were the terms offered to him by a potential business partner in any endeavor other than marriage.

*"Never enter a contract with someone who's rewarded for breaking it."*

The contract looks something like this: You will put in 90% of the equity to the business while your partners will be responsible for only 10%. You will enter into the terms of this partnership wherein you will forfeit any controlling interest of this company to your partner at any time. All business decisions of this company will be subject to your partner’s approval, and any decisions initiated by your partner do not require your implicit approval. If either of you decide to dissolve the business (which your partner is 70% more likely to do) your partner immediately receives half the business equity. Any and all future profits earned by you after the dissolution of the partnership will also be subject to your former partner’s controlling interests. By all measures, contemporary marriage is essentially what’s known as an *Unconscionable Contract*. *Unconscionability* is a doctrine in contract law that describes terms that are so extremely unjust, or overwhelmingly one-sided in favor of the party who has the superior bargaining power, that they are contrary to good conscience. Typically, an unconscionable contract is held to be unenforceable because no reasonable or informed person would otherwise agree to it. The perpetrator of the conduct is not allowed to benefit, because the consideration offered is lacking, or is so obviously inadequate, that to enforce the contract would be unfair to the party seeking to escape the contract. Spelled out, no sane man

would agree to the terms of a modern marriage contract if it were a business proposal.

This is by design.

In most Western societies, modern marriage is still rooted in *old order* liabilities with new order consequences for men. For most mainstream religions, marriage is sold as a rite of passage into *manhood*. In all the eras leading up to the Sexual Revolution a man “*taking a wife*” was a milestone that he’d transitioned to a new chapter of his life. Granted, marriages occurred much earlier in men’s lives during these times, but marriage was a rite of passage amongst many others. Socially, men marrying was symbolic of maturity, status, respectability and a sign of conventional manhood. These qualities, and the pretense of how valuable they ought to be to the men of the past four generations, are now the romanticized ideals *old order* moralists use to sell the new order way of marriage. The past 2 generations of *Lost Boys* – deliberately confused about, or self-loathing of, masculinity – are pitched marriage as a path to *Manhood*. They’re told “**Real Men**” get married, and damn the consequences or any of the naysayers’ new order statistics warning against it. God will insure you against the repercussions of the *unconscionable contract*. If you want to be a **Man**, you have to get married – but more importantly, if you ever want to have sex, in any *meaningful* sense, you have no other choice but to take your chances in the *unconscionable contract* of new order marriage.



## Covenant vs. Contractual Marriage

When I began the research for this book I got in the habit of comparing notes with various religious personalities who I thought might give me a better perspective into how aspects of the *Red Pill* often dovetails into religious doctrine. Everyone from a Jewish Rabbi (*Rabbi Kaba*) to Greek Orthodox ministers, to the Muslim faithful, to Evangelical pastors were on my discussion list for 3 years. One notable was *Dr. Everett Piper*, conservative commentator and recently retired president of *Oklahoma Wesleyan University*. *Dr. Piper* has a regular segment on my good friend *Pat Campbell's* radio show that came on a half hour before my segment with *Pat* every Friday morning. My habit was to get up at 4am to prep for a 6am spot with *Pat*, but I found myself getting more familiar with *Dr. Piper's* perspective every week as a result. One Friday I was invited to discuss the state of modern marriage with *Everett*. I'm loathe to call it a proper "debate" because there's a lot he and I agreed on with respect to the *value* of marriage for men and women – at least, the *value* of what marriage *had* in the past and *should* mean to men and women going forward. Marriage is always going to be a persistent hot button issue in the *Manosphere*. Depending on what your personal, moral and/or rational beliefs are, marriage is something to be actively avoided, or something only to enter into with the utmost degree of vetting and precaution. Today, marriage is defined by the personal dangers it poses to men. Unfortunately, this caution is rarely a consideration for most Blue Pill conditioned men.

Another area that *Dr. Piper* and I (and the *Manosphere*) agree on is the '*feels before reals*' priority our feminine-primary social order has embedded in our social consciousness. Today, the "correct" way to address a decision is to lead with our emotions, but it's exactly this '*feelings first*' idea that brings men to disregard the life-damaging potential that modern marriage poses to them. I took the pro-avoidance side of this discussion. As usual, I had to qualify my doing so first. So let's clarify again now; yes, I'll be married for at least 25 years by the time you read this book. Yes, I'm still happily married to the same woman and have never been divorced, nor have I, nor my wife, ever considered divorce. My marriage's success is directly

attributable to our shared faith, understanding our gender roles, and my putting *Red Pill* awareness into practice. *Mrs. Tomassi* and I are still very much in love, we've raised a gorgeous and smart daughter to adulthood, and I think my marriage is as close to most people's ideal as can be.

What confounds my Trad-Con readers today is when I say that I would still never remarry were I to find myself single tomorrow. I simply cannot endorse marriage, *as it exists today*, as a good idea for any young man. I regret that I have to take this position, because social enforced monogamous marriage, based on conventional gender roles, has been a foundation of societal stability for centuries. Remember, this is coming from a guy with a damn good marriage. As MGTOWs are fond of saying, endorsing marriage today is leading the lambs to slaughter. I agree. It has statistically, become the worst decision a man can make in his life at present, yet so many men want to believe they won't be one of those statistics. This confuses a lot of people. Fundamentally, I think the institution of socially enforced, monogamous marriage has been one of the bedrocks of success for Western civilization. Marriage is a good *idea*; it's how we execute it in the late 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries that makes it one of the worst prospects imaginable for men. This was my position going in to this talk with *Dr. Piper*. What we distilled it down to is the idea of a ***Covenant Marriage*** vs. a ***Contractual Marriage***. This was the premise used to describe the divide between marriage how it *should* be done – religiously, personally, devotionally – as how it was done in the past – and the way marriage is done now; the worst legal contractual liability a man can enter into. Needless to say a lot of qualifications followed this.

A *Covenant* marriage presumes a mutually accepted religious deference between husband and wife, and an understanding of what is expected of that man and woman before they enter into marriage. For Muslims, a *Covenant* marriage, where there is no consideration of the state's interest, this still the case. It is founded on the agreement of two (or more) individuals who believe they are better together than they are apart. On paper this sounds good, however, it presupposes quite a bit – particularly on the part of that woman today. I take the *Covenant* definition of marriage to mean there's a mutual understanding between the man and woman that they are marrying for a mutual love and shared investment in accordance with what they

believe are their religious and monogamous obligations. Fine. We've got a model for marriage that is set apart from the *Contractual* model.

The *Contractual* marriage is one based on mutual support and an insurance that this support will continue even if the marriage itself dissolves. The *Manosphere* generally likens this to the bad business contract idea; were it not marriage, no right-thinking man would ever agree to sign on. *Contractual* marriage is the standard for today. *Dr. Piper* sees this model as the “*what can I get from my partner marriage*”. This is common *old order* thinking, but I think this is a bit disingenuous since it implies that men's only consideration for agreeing to what amounts to a bad business contract would in any way make sense due to a desire for *getting what he can* out of what's already a bad deal. Why marry at all if what you're taking away from it is nothing you can't get outside of marriage without the risk? It's almost impossible to argue this point however – even with over 30+ years of data – because the *concept* of marriage still relies on *old order* ideals. If men are bearing the life-damaging brunt caused by *Contractual* marriage the default reasoning is that it's men's manipulateness (to *get what he wants*) that causes it. Remember, men are ridiculous, incompetent or potential abusers today.

In essence, *Contractual* marriage is the ***marriage-divorce-support*** structure that men are understandably hesitant about today. *Dalrock* once made this observation:

*“Sometime after the Sexual Revolution we moved away from the Marriage model of child rearing and into the Child-Support model of child rearing.”*

The *Contractual* model of marriage becoming the default was an integral part of this shift. If you've ever watched the 2012 documentary *Divorce Incorporated* you can see the machinations of the *Contractual* form of marriage at work. This documentary is just a taste of some of the real world consequences that accompany *Contractual* marriage's liabilities. In fact, so endemic are the liabilities of contractual state-based marriage that billion dollar industries sprung up around how we process marriage and divorce since the time no-

fault divorce became the standard in the 1970s. However, despite all this risk – and with our modern emphasis on *leading with our feelings* – most men still hold idealistic, *Covenant* marriage, expectations for their *Contractual* marriages. An *old order* marriage, to a *Quality Woman* archetype, based on the *romantic ideal* still sounds pretty good to men. At the time of this writing, and depending on the survey, the U.S. divorce rate stands anywhere between 40% to 52.2%. You can add that into your calculations when you consider marriage as a business partnership; but for the average Blue Pill conditioned *believing* young man, his faith will ensure he defies the odds. Or that's what he's told will be the case if he's holding up God's *romantic ideal* side of the marriage bargain.

For the ***no-sex-before-marriage*** mindset, marriage is the *only* legitimate means to sexual access. So, it serves a purpose to convince oneself that a man's spouse is necessarily on the same page as they are with respect to his ***idealistic concept of love*** (versus a woman's ***opportunistic concept of love***). This is where most *believing* Beta men get themselves into trouble. They presume their 'Bride'-to-be shares his concept of mutually idealized of love. Combined with a potent cocktail of dopamine and endorphins, he leads with his ***Emotional Process*** rather than his ***Rational Process***. In fact, pragmatic rationalism about mate choice is usually a hindrance to men seeing marriage as their legitimate means to sex. Toss in a belief in the *romantic ideal* and now that man's decision to marry becomes a test of his faith.

## Off the Books Marriage

While *Dr. Piper* and I discussed the issue of *Responsibility vs. Authority* in marriage, what got me was his marching back the question about separating a ‘*Covenant*’ marriage from the ‘*Contractual*’ marriage. This is something I’ve discussed with more traditional minded MGTOW occasionally. Would marriage work if you removed the state and any entitlement to the potential cash & prizes liabilities from the divorce equation? Could marriage be something worthwhile for a man if you removed the state-controlled assurances and incentives that motivate women to initiate 70% of all divorces and entirely removes men’s authority in modern marriage? Maybe a private, religious ceremony based on the *old order* covenant standards virtually all marriages prior to the 19<sup>th</sup>-20<sup>th</sup> century were founded upon? This would mean women would have to assume some of the inherent risks men do based on the same faith in God men are told is their reason to get married in a *contractual* marriage.

I was genuinely surprised to hear *Dr. Piper* disagree with the idea of separating the marriage models we’d discussed at the time – but to have him say he wasn’t willing to give up on the heroic fight to reform the ‘*Contractual*’ marriage was kind of disingenuous. In both instances, with respect to headship and authority, and the reluctance to let go of the contractual definition of marriage (especially after making such an impassioned case for a covenant marriage) I can only come to the conclusion that *Dr. Piper’s* position on marriage is influenced (unwittingly?) by the feminist undercurrent prevalent in church culture today. Again, the fiscal considerations of not offending women’s (feminist influenced) sensibilities comes to the fore in another religious leader; a constant theme among the Pastors and church leaders I’ve interviewed. As mentioned, churches are franchises today. If you want to keep the tithe checks coming, and keep the lights on, pastors and church leaders need to prioritize the sensibilities of the *primary consumer in the western world* – women. It’s gotten to the point now that church leaders have internalized that women’s eyes and ears will be judging their words in sermons and public appearances to ensure their religious representative is on ‘*team woman*’. On no other

topic are women listening more intently than on issues of marriage. This is why opposing a separation of *Covenant* marriage from *Contractual* marriage is literally a ‘*no brainer*’ for *believing* men. It never occurs to them to think about it any other way because they’ve already adopted the Gynocentric undercurrent that’s been assimilating their churches. To endorse that separation is to deny women their need of potential long-term security if a man displeases God by making them unhappy. As we make women the intermediaries between men and God, we also make women’s satisfaction with men the metric for God’s will or His displeasure with men.

## Imperfect Men Vet Imperfect Women for Imperfect Marriages

*“You should’ve vetted better”*

*“You should’ve married a ‘real’ Christian woman”*

These rationales are common among Christian church leaders. They represent the religious version of the *Quality Woman* dilemma. In theory, no true *believer* would marry a woman, despite all inherent risks, if he didn’t in some way think she was the *quality woman* preordained and set apart for him by God. This is also the spiritualized version of the *Soulmate Myth*. Later, if that *quality woman* God gave you proves to be less than ideal, well, you should’ve known better before you committed to tie the knot...now *go work on yourself*. I’ve always found it ironic that the same *believers* who rail against evolution’s biological determinism, and reject the idea of predestination, are also enamored with the popularized notion of a *soulmate*; the perfect mate God set aside for them before they were born. New order *Women’s Ministry* writers/speakers have found the *Godly Soulmate* idea a fertile niche to cater to among an increasing number of divorced, never-married and single mothers in the church today.

Again, we encounter the *Orthodox Paradox* in these rationales. Apparently no *‘real’* Christian woman would ever initiate divorce. If men were only Godly and wise enough to discern from the outset of *‘Courting’* (as in *courtly love*) that their *“bride”* wasn’t a fully devoted woman, then it’s their fault for marrying her – or their fault for screwing up God’s perfect plan for his married life later in the marriage. It’s a self-damning circular logic. This is an *ex post facto* rationalization that reinforces moralistic beliefs, but it also justifies the reaming you’re going to take in divorce court for not being a wise and Godly man. It’s basically another play on the *No True Scotsman* logical fallacy. If she’s unhappy with you, it’s your fault and the sin is on you. If you’re unhappy with her, likewise it’s your fault and the sin is on you.

When it comes to debating church leaders I cannot win the “*God says so*” clause. This is another obstacle to discussing *Red Pill* ideas about marriage in a religious context. It’s an appeal to faith that is always the go-to response to issues I bring up that they have no real answer for. Either that, or they don’t want to answer for fear of offending the Feminine Imperative in the church today. “*Contractual*” marriage is an all-downside proposition for men today. I tried to make my best case for why men shun it in the discussion. Naturally, there’s a common impulse for *Publicity Pastors* to seem pro-masculine from the pulpit. They shame men for avoiding marriage, but they can’t argue against the marriage data and the life-destroying fallout of divorce for men. It’s all too verifiable. The marriage-divorce rates today are unignorable, so men deductively go with the pragmatic response and avoid marriage, but maintain women non-exclusively,...or they *go their own way*. But all that means nothing to the faithful religious mindset. “It doesn’t matter if *Contractual* marriage is one of the worst decisions a man can make today:

“*God says you should marry. God said no sex before marriage.*”

“*What about the incentives of cash & prizes women have in divorce?*”

“*Doesn’t matter, God said get married*”

I can’t argue with the divine creator of the universe. God says jump, so you jump. That’s the absolutist-moralist win button for any rational argument to the contrary.

All that said, what would ideally be the implications of *Covenant-only* marriages on the issues currently dealt with by family courts for *Contractual* marriages? Is there no divorce allowed whatsoever? Is sexual immorality/infidelity still grounds? What about child custody and property distribution? What would happen under a covenant marriage model that does not involve the state? Getting the state out of the marriage business is not necessarily as easy as it sounds. Even without a contract marriage, what’s to stop a wife in a Gynocentric social order from suing for cash and



prizes in family court even without the marriage certificate? Right now, you don't even have to be the biological father of a child to be forced to pay child support. There's no easy answer to the problem of the *hardening of hearts* that led God to give us divorce in the first place. Hardened hearts will find a way to screw up even the most pragmatic system ever devised. In this new order I'm not optimistic about either solution. Pastors want to hold out hope because they think we ought to fight for state sanctioned marriage *as* part of the covenant. This is really naive. *Contractual* marriage is destroying the institution of marriage; and in the *old order* that institution made good sense. But the advocates of *Covenant-only* marriage are naive as well. The state is screwing up marriage because of the influence of secular culture. As a result of making secular influences *Kosher*, church cultures are screwed up about marriage and not following the *Covenant* model. The system is a product of messed up theology, secular influenced doctrine, and misguided people. Fixing the system doesn't necessarily fix the people.

## Covenant Marriage vs. The Romantic Ideal Marriage

The *romantic ideal's* definition of “**love**” is an important distinction we’ll need to consider in the coming chapter, *God is Love*, but in the new order’s future of marriage we need to consider it here first. There is a new sexual morality which modern, mainstream religions, have embraced in the place of *Covenant* marriage; and, no, it isn’t centered around overt hedonism. The new sexual morality is centered around *romantic love*. This is a result of a secular-*Kosher* influence modern religions having placed (or are in the process of placing) *romantic love* above marriage.

**Instead of seeing marriage as the moral context in which to pursue romantic love and sex, romantic love is now seen as the moral place to experience sex and marriage.**

This is only one example of how endemic the *romantic ideal* has become in our new order. I should add that the *romantic ideal* is in no way just a “Christian thing”. As westernized feminism and Gynocentrism has spread globally, so too have other religions become, or are becoming more beholden to the *romantic ideal* as the metric by which a ‘good’ marriage is measured. In time, *old order* faiths will be converted to making the romantic ideal a central article of that new order faith.

The romantic-chivalric ideal of *courtly love* has exercised significant, if indirect, power over intersexual dynamics for centuries. In the new order, in an era defined by Gynocentrism, the *romantic ideal* **is** the basis for all legitimate experiences of ‘**love**’. This deified form of love, premised on the feminine-primary *romantic ideal*, is now the metric by which we measure ***all*** marriage today. And I do mean *all*. From same-sex marriage to the growing popularity of “**Poly**” (polyamory) marriages, one monocultural basis for the legitimacy of those unions remains consistent – the *romantic ideal* defines what is and isn’t *love*. “***Love wins!***” was the slogan printed on signs and t-shirts when same-sex marriage was recognized by the US government in 2015, and is echoed by *Relevant* church cultures today. “Who cares who someone sleeps with so long as they’re “***in love***”?” was another mantra repeated then and now. Love, as defined by the *romantic ideal*, is the

litmus test of all intersexual dynamics in our post *New Enlightenment* global social order.

With the rise of the *Fempowerment* narrative in modern church culture, so too has the *romantic ideal* redefined what *Covenant* and *Contractual* marriage ought to be. All of the conditions that make for a legitimate ‘marriage’ within a religious context are now defined by how well a man satisfies the needs of his wife according to popularized Gynocentric perceptions of the *romantic ideal*. This ideal has a much broader reach than just in Christian (“Churchian”) culture – it’s expanded to other religions and cultures as a result of the communication age. This raising of romantic love to the highest order of legitimacy is more punctuated in a religious context because, doctrinally, it should be the reverse. In an objective secular context this reversal is all but taken for granted. Romanticism is just *always the way we’ve defined love*. However, in an age defined by feminine social primacy, women’s *feelings* of romance are at a premium. Emotionality as defined by women is the metric for the *romantic ideal*. We matter of factly presume that it’s a man’s inherent responsibility to invest in himself, provide resources for his wife and children’s wellbeing, but it’s also included in his *Burden of Performance* to stimulate and maintain his wife’s romantic interests. In fact, most religion has gone so far as to pair a husband’s responsibility to his wife’s entitlement to the *romantic ideal* with the doctrinal responsibility he has to his God.

*If Momma ain't happy, God ain't happy, and it's her husband's 'sin' for not living up to that responsibility of the romantic ideal.*

Presently, we live in a time where *old order* masculine responsibility is still an absolute, but the masculine *authority* that used to be a benefit of that responsibility is equated with misogyny, abuse and repressive Patriarchy according to the now-*Kosher* secular influences assimilating mainstream religions. All that most secularized mainstream religions are willing to see are young women doing well – looking good, doing well in school, getting good jobs, etc. God’s glory is manifest in women’s successes. Young men, not so much. So they think it’s just an issue among the young men. What

they overlook is that not only is the educational system skewed towards female performance, but the motivations of girls and boys are different.

From an evolutionary perspective, girls/women are more concerned about their security than boys/men are. In the *old order* that female concern for security was solved by marrying a suitable man, whereas today women are told the solution is found in themselves. Women chase their own security, because innately, as the vulnerable sex, security is a big concern for women. The drive for assured security is part of women's evolved mental firmware. But because the popular impression of men/husbands/fathers is some combination of ridiculous, abusive or pathetic, women's recourse is to develop the capacity to provide what they, and potentially a child(ren), need themselves without a man involved. Feminist doctrine only reaffirms this in generation after generation of women. *That* is what drives many women forward — not the brass-ring seekers, but the masses of women who are in middle positions in corporate America, for example, which is what people notice. It seems like careerism, or evidence of women's empowerment via God's plan, when in fact it's driven by the same circular logic that mainstream religion is perpetuating about men online and in the pulpit.

They notice that the young men are “*not keeping up*”. What they don't understand is why. The reason is, in the past, men were motivated to work and advance themselves in order to become a good candidate for marriage to secure sexual access to an acceptably attractive woman in a *localized* sexual marketplace. In the *old order* and the new, men are not as motivated by security and financial independence, like women are. They are primarily motivated by sex. This used to be the way average guys got access to sex, so they worked for it. They increased sexual market value by developing all the attributes that made them good long term security prospects. This is the *Beta Bucks* side of Hypergamy and it is still what naive *believers* focus on as the **only** reason a woman would find a man at all attractive.

In the new order, this doesn't get average men anywhere. From the time they are 14 they see that the girls are *giving* sex away to a relatively small subset of the boys and young men, and that this continues through college and beyond. And now, several generations of men have had access to a worldwide database of social media, related experiences and hard research for so long that this aspect of women's natures is confirmed for them on a daily basis. *Old order* moralists still cling to the old social contract that

being a good bet for *her* future is the only *legitimate* way to get to the sex part of the exchange. Transactional sex is the only frame of reference they have, so considerations of women's desire for *enthusiastic* Validational sex confounds the religious presumptions about why women have sex at all. As a result, Blue Pill conditioned *believers*, knowingly or unknowingly, ignore the *Alpha Seed* (short term sexual) side of women's Hypergamous nature. In fact, to acknowledge it would mean risking their being perceived as *judgmental* of women – something the modern church has made a cardinal sin for men.

## Modern Choices for Religious Men

Average religious men in this era basically have three choices when it comes to the sexual marketplace:

1. Learn to become one of the select guys who are desired for sex during women's peak-sexual years.
2. Opting out and *going their own way*, embracing nihilism and joining the *Lost Boys* generation in pensive confusion.
3. Waiting patiently until they are in their late 20s and are grudgingly chosen by women who are shifting their priorities from the hot/fun men to dependable, parentally invested men (i.e. *The Epiphany Phase*).

*Old Order* religious observers wonder why increasingly fewer young men are opting for choice 3. The answer is obvious – young men are motivated by sex. If they are motivated enough, they go for choice 1. Most fail at choice 1 for various reasons, or don't want to be bothered with the efforts involved with that choice, so they opt for choice 2. Increasingly, young men are going with either 1 or 2, and not 3, because the rewards for that patience are rarely worth the *return-on-investment* cost, and which only occur well into the future (if at all) and carry life-altering risk. When the average age of first marriage is 29.8 for men, the *no premarital sex* convictions of the *old order* are untenable. The more men read online about women “lane changing”, the *Epiphany Phase*, and the more they see women like Facebook CEO, Sheryl Sandberg, openly advise young women to chase fun “*bad*” boys until they are 30 – the less men are motivated to play that game. The juice literally isn't worth the squeeze. Men still want the juice, but the squeeze of today has consequences and liabilities that men of the *old order* don't have any accurate understanding of.

However, there are still a fixed percentage of men who are self-driven and ambitious regardless of the current global sexual marketplace – they *are* still around today. But that ambitiousness was never the basis of *old order* civilization – the basis was motivating the average guy by giving him a fair

shot at sex by working to make something of himself. That model of marriage was predicated on men understanding their conventional masculinity and their *Burden of Performance* – women just *are*, men must *become*. The security that masculine performance and competency provided was an attraction basis for women in a time when women were dependent on men for that security. Whenever you see the old feminist trope of the *Strong Independent Woman* spelled out, remember, that *independence* is the ‘*independence from men*’, not a declaration of self-evincing autonomy. The provisioning side of the Hypergamous equation – the aspect that represents women’s evolved need for long term security, protection, resource sharing, parental investment and emotional investment – is now accounted for by women’s performance, or resource transfers from men today. By new order standards there is little need (or perceived need) for a young woman to even consider marriage until around 29-31 years old– and only then if she acknowledges her sexual market value is in decay. Anything else is viewed as a woman wasting the potential of her peak years (18-28).

## Strong Independent Women

According to the *U.S. Census Bureau*, the average age of first marriage in 2018 was 29.8 for men and 27.8 for women. In 1965, at the time of the Sexual Revolution, it was 22.5 and 20.5 respectively. Since this time a female-primary social order has made efforts in westernizing cultures to condition women to fit a new social contract, while demanding men obey an *old order* social contract. Feminism and the *Fempowerment* narrative is just one aspect of this *Blue Pill* for women. This narrative can be distilled to one message. It is the prime-directive that *Fempowerment* teaches women:

***Never do anything for the express pleasure of a man.***

Women's *Blue Pill* conditioning is founded on the late 1960s feminist notion of the *Strong Independent Woman* meme. "She don't need no man." She is *independent* – independent of what? She is not dependent on any man, and anything she might do to specifically please a man is antithetical to that independence. To please a man is to participate in her own "oppression" by the *Patriarchy*. That's the origin of a meme we now think of as common sense. From the time they are five-year-old girls this *independence of men* message is hammered into their collective psyche by everything from popular culture, to schooling, to religion, to the affirmation of single mothers and their Blue Pill conditioned fathers. The present-day social segregation of the sexes is a direct result of this *independence* meme being baked into women's souls for generations now.

For religious-minded men of the last 3 generations, the reward for that *old order* approach (choice 3) of remaining chaste until 30 is to get a woman who (on average) has been with 2-3 times the sexual partners he has, have her be sexually disappointed with him, and are largely marrying them for their potential of long term security. And precisely when that man is marrying to *finally* get religiously legitimate regular sex, the woman he marries is putting her "fun" years behind her, and opting for "*responsibility*", so she marries and is much less interested in sex (with



him) than she was when she was dating fun/hot/sexy men and not thinking about marriage.

To effect this, women rely on pandering to *believing* men's religious duty to forgive women of their past indiscretions. Christianity's central tenet of *forgiveness of sin* is a primary reason women tend to gravitate back to religion in their *Epiphany Phase*. That isn't to say that women don't genuinely feel the need to "get right with God" as they are approaching 30, but it is to say that the timing of this *epiphany* is predictable for reasons they may not be aware of. This illustrates the compass women have with regard to moral interpretations of their ideas and behaviors. If something gratifies, optimizes or benefits a woman's driving impulse of Hypergamy, it sets a rationale for moral interpretation by her. In other words, if it's good for what optimizes Hypergamy, it's moral for women. This self-righteous, prodigal daughter rationalization is made all the easier in a religion that's been assimilated to cater to women's experiences.

As men we want the easy answer to be the best answer. Thus, it seems obvious that a woman making 'new' rules for intimacy with her would-be suitors would follow some *epiphany* where she comes to her senses, realizes the error of her ways and strives to be some new '*quality woman*'. As such, her *quality* should be matched by a man's *quality*. And logically his quality should take some time to determine. This is women's self and public rationale for making a 'quality' man wait for her sexually when in the past she had no such rules for the *hawt* guy she met on spring break in a Cancun foam cannon party. Women make rules for dutiful Betas and break rules for the opportunity to have sex with the fun Alphas. Selling dutiful Betas on their responsibility to obey her rules is made much easier when he believes respecting her boundaries (for him) are God's rules.

*Believing* men want to believe a woman's transformation is genuine because we're taught to expect these reasons will eventually come from a girl who now, at 29, wants to get right with God or "*start doing things the right way*" with guys. Social conventions abound that condition us to expect that women's "*Journey of Self-Discovery*" always ends with her returning to, or finding, God. This is the archetypal parable of the ***Prodigal Son*** updated for modernized religions that have been assimilated by a Gynocentric social order. The story of the Prodigal Son is one that is faith-affirming for both the *believer* and the wayward son/daughter returning to the faith. For the

*believer* it is incumbent upon him to accept the wayward's repentant return to the *family* as an affirmation of the faith's true validity. In this case she'll realize the errors of her youthful indiscretion and magically transform into the "*Quality Woman*" preordained for him. We want to believe it, but it's in women's best interests that we *do* believe it.

Most Beta men (and not a few *Red Pill* aware men) *want* to believe in the earnestness of a woman's *Epiphany* about herself. They love nothing better than the idea of a reformed porn star who's finally "*grown up*" and come to her senses about the error of her youth's indiscretions with the guys they grew up to hate. Better still, they'll feed that rationale/fantasy in the hope that her Epiphany will include her *saving her best sex* for him, since now she's come to understand that it's been the '*nice guys*' all along she ought to have been getting with if not for 'society' or those "manipulative *Players*" convincing her otherwise. The *reformed-slut-with-epiphany* archetype is a trope men *want* to forgive because it represents a vindication of their self-image, their convictions and their perseverance (they never gave up on her); and of course the prospect of hot porn-style sex with an experienced woman. Women with *pasts*, that make them good candidates for eliciting this rationale, usually know men well enough to see the utility it has in securing *believing* men's resources, parental investment and long term security. Faithful *Betas in Waiting* make for easy marks.

The death of the old "self", or dying to oneself, to be *born again*, has similar parallels in unplugging from the Matrix; that old analogy we use in *Red Pill* spheres. Forgiveness is the centerpiece of Christianity and it's the most attractive part of the religion for women today. Women are far more easily forgiven than men because *old order* thinking sees men's *Burden of Performance* as a qualifier for his convictions of faith. When women "sin" they fail themselves. When men sin they fail themselves and the others dependent on their performance (wife, kids, family). The new order paradox is that *believing* men are not allowed to correct (rebuke?) or even analyze women's sin, but are still expected to be responsible for that sin. "*If men were just better men, then women wouldn't do what they do.*" This fallacy of *Our Sister's Keeper* is one I hear a lot from Trad-Con women looking for a late-game marriage before they turn 40. It's also popular in '*be better men*' sermons you hear around Father's Day. The rationale is that women's past indiscretions were the result of doing what they believed irresponsible men

wanted from them at the time. Men are responsible for women's sins, but lack any authority to actually correct (or even discuss) those sins.

As marriage and life progresses this sets up divorce and so on as we all know. The more that scenario gets out to young men by means of the internet, the less likely they are to pick choice 3 and instead opt for either 1 or 2 – neither of which makes them a good marriage candidate at any stage of the process. So, really, the religious observers of this phenomenon don't understand what is happening. This is either because they are laboring under the *old order* illusion that the motivations of young men and young women are the same, or that sex has only a tangential impact on male motivation. Both are squarely wrong, but both sound like *old order* wisdom being passed on today. They see young men underperforming, but they don't understand at all why or how to fix it, even though the answers are right in front of them. Those answers are “unacceptable answers” and are therefore completely off the table. When society was ordered around lifetime marriage, the way for a young man to pursue sex was to focus on becoming an attractive potential husband. With our embrace of female promiscuity and disdain for traditional marriage, we have created a system where, from a practical perspective, men are foolish to seek marriage as their path to sex.

## Respect My Authority

There are other factors contributing to the abysmal state of western marriage, but the main reason is an 800 lbs. gorilla in the room that no mainstream religious leader has had the will to address for over 40 years now. The new order's Hustle Economy pastors have found it far more profitable, and church-sustainable, to rely on impassioned appeals for a return to *old order* masculine responsibility as a course correction for marriage. From organizations like the *Heritage Foundation* to *Prager University* the story is always the same; the only way to save Western society from degeneracy and socioeconomic collapse is for men to ***Man Up!*** and assume (more) masculine responsibility. Appeals for acknowledging the *old order* masculine ***authority*** that used to be a balance to all that responsibility hasn't entered their thinking for decades now. Furthermore, any consideration of women's influence in the state of modern marriage is also redirected to being the moral responsibilities of men. Men who today lack any incentive to sign on to *Contractual* marriage liabilities.

Given the current state of ideological assimilation of church culture, it's now offensive for a man to think about rebuking a woman's sin, much less a man presume to instruct a woman in female-specific aspects of faith. That's what *Women's Ministry* 'speakers' are for, remember? Modern male religious leaders (and not just Christians) are visibly uncomfortable when they have to address women specifically for fear of offending female sensibilities. In the last 20 years religious leaders have taken up the practice of bringing their wives on stage to ensure that she gives her nod of female approval to what he's saying, thus adding the stamp of female-*Kosher* approval to the message. This is the authority that the Feminine Imperative now tacitly or implicitly exercises in most contemporary religions. It's just *the way things are done now*. Presuming any masculine authority over women in secularized religion isn't even an afterthought.

*Old order* moralists sell marriage and fatherhood as a rite of passage into manhood, and specifically as a vehicle for men to attain respectability. Recall what I said in *Crisis Masculinity*. Successive generations of men have been deliberately confused about what masculinity should mean to them.

Like feminists, Traditionalists have also assumed the ownership of a brand of *authentic masculinity* much in the same way that the Feminine Imperative would have men believe they hold the *manhood* merit badge. “*Real Men*” do what women, as well as *old order* moralists beholden to women, would have them do. Trad-Cons sell marriage as a means to a better life, authentic manhood and duty to moral obligation by assuming responsibility with no consideration of actionable, authentic authority over the marriage, his wife or children. The secular presumption of an egalitarian, equal partnership, marriage – combined with the *unconscionable contract* – is now part of the doctrinal obligations of marriage. But *Real Men*, Godly Men of God, should get married despite the all-downside risks inherent in how we do marriage today. What this presumption reinforces is that only *elite* men are worthy of marriage by accepting the responsibilities and risks with no consideration of actual authority – religious or otherwise.

Respect is presumed to be another primary motivator for men. Trad-Cons would have us believe *respectability* is a more powerful motivator than money and sex. I disagree with that idea, but masculine respectability was a selling point for marriage in the *old order*. This is why *believers* continue to sell responsibility (and men having to work much harder when married) as a **benefit** of marriage. This used to be an incentive because in a healthy, *old order*, society based on Patriarchy, male **responsibility** was balanced by implied and actionable male **authority** and **respect**. Men used to understand this instinctively. The problem with today’s implication of *married respectability* is that a Gynocentric social order is careful never to offer authority or respect to married men, and especially married fathers. Husbands and fathers are at times respected and honored, but this is despite the best efforts of the law and our moral and cultural leaders. To the extent that men are the ones avoiding marriage, the problem is that young men are responding to easily accessible realities about the downside risks and are less likely to believe that marriage is a path to respect. In the *old order* a married man, a family man, was a better bet as a reliable employee. Today’s respectability (if valued at all) comes from Hustle Economy ideals of “*entrepreneurship*”, quick-but-smart money, and aspirations to maverick independence.

If marriage is in any part a young man’s religious convictions, marriage as a path to sex is far more persuasive than marriage as a path to

respectability in the new order. The *old order* notion that a married man is more hireable, or makes a better, dedicated, employee are just *old order* anachronisms now. The archetypal father, diligently working to keep food on the table, his kids going to college and his pretty feminine wife in a loving mood, makes for the perfect *romantic ideal*. But in the era of persistent new order awareness of marriage realities, that ideal is at best a Sisyphean rationale to keep men in a controllable qualifying servitude. Once his effectiveness wanes, even if he's done everything according the old set of rules, he can look forward to being *Zeroed Out* between the ages of 45-60 and join the prime demographic male suicide statistics.

## Responsibility vs. Authority

In the *Manosphere* we've often discussed the realities of men holding the burden of 100% responsibility, yet are conferred 0% authority when it comes to intersexual relationships. This wasn't always the case. There was a kind of default authority imbued in men that was part of simply being a male under the old social contract. Much of western society still presumes this is the case. It's one reason Social Justice culture presumes such a thing as '*male privilege*' lingers today. They may even have a case with respect to the *old order* – just being a "*man*" used to imply that a male had some degree of power, authority and decision making capacity over the course his life would take, as well as the lives of any women or children or extended family members who were dependent upon him being that "man". This disempowering of male authority, while maintaining the false idea of patriarchal male privilege, has been a powerful instrument in removing fathers' influence in subsequent generations of their children. Remove male authority on all levels, and convince generations of men to police themselves over any claim to that authority, and you remove men's ability to instill their personal and religious *values* into their children.

Responsibility is still what defines men to this day, but the utility in this being hammered into the psyches of men has become something the Feminine Imperative has found useful in consolidating power into the hands of women. We're ceaselessly told that responsibility is something men need to assume, but in the *old order* the incentive for a man assuming that responsibility came with a commensurate portion of authority (*actionable power*). That was what used to earn a man the title of "*manhood*"; men were expected to possess the competency to produce surplus resources; enough to ensure the security and survival of his immediate and extended family, and then his tribe, his clan, his nation, etc. We still call this "*being a productive member of society*", but the incentives of authority that made assuming responsibility a good exchange have been stripped away – along with all the grounding that a family name or a 'tribal' identity used to mean for men. In their place is all the same expectation of responsibility, but not even the pretense of male authority that stems from it.

*“Real Power is the degree to which a person has control over their own circumstances. Real Power is the degree to which we control the directions of our lives.”*

*– Truth to Power, The Rational Male*

How many men today have real *power*; power to direct the course of their own lives? As we commit ourselves to various aspects of life, marriage, family, business, the military, we incrementally exchange power for responsibility. Wealth enforces will, but unless we're one of the moneyed outliers in life there is no true authority granted to men in exchange for that responsibility. A man who would even presume to use a perceived masculine authority is labeled a tyrant; a vestige of a Patriarchy that's now painted as a net negative to society. And that's just the societal level. In a legal sense that man has no authority with respect to his power over virtually every aspect of his interactions with women or a wife. A Gynocentric social order's prime directive has been to remove all vested male authority and by extension almost all power the man has to direct the course of his own life.

There are numerous ways a feminine-primary social order removes the teeth from male authority today. First and foremost is the social pretense of Blank Slate equalism. A default presumption that men and women are coequal agents in every aspect – physical, emotional, psychological, intellectual – is the cover story necessary to remove the authority that was based on conventional differences between the sexes in the past. To the equalist, gender is a social construct, but gender is only a starting point for a social constructionist belief set. Social constructionism is the foundation upon which blank-slate equalism is built, but ultimately it's a means of control. By denying each sex its innate differences social constructionism denies men their innate advantages and strengths. Once social constructionism became the social framework it was a simple step to remove male authority. For all but the most dominant, competent, and Alpha men, any inherent claim to male authority is equated with systemic misogyny.



## Complementarity vs. Equal Partnerships

The movie, *Outlaw King* on Netflix is a great dramatization of the life and events surrounding *Robert the Bruce*. There's a part in it where his wife says,

*"Power is making decisions, and whatever course you are charting, I choose you, my husband"*

It struck me that my own wife had said almost these same words to me in 2005 when I decided to take a job in another state that would uproot us from family and friends. There was no *"...but what about my friends, career, etc.?"* from her and I had no hesitation to consider anything but taking the position. She said, *"You are my husband, I go where you go."*

How many men today hold a default **Frame** in their marriage? Women are ever-more reluctant to even accept their husband's last name today. There's a lot of made-up reasons for this, but the core truth is that women have no confidence in their man in the long term. They don't trust his 'course'. There's holding Frame, and then there's establishing a long term Frame, a life paradigm, a reality of his own, that defines a man's authority in his marriage and family relationships. Women today still want marriage, but few want to defer to their husband's 'course' in life. They don't trust him with *her* life. And why would they? For the past four generations men have been portrayed in popular culture as untrustworthy. Either they are Beta buffoons in need of women's uniquely female 'reasoning' (which is really male reasoning with breasts) to save them from themselves, or they're malicious Alpha malcontents (or perverts) also in need of female correction to bring them to female approved justice. It's the retribution fantasy of feminism played out in popular media, but the societal result is generations of women who have no inherent respect of men and even less trust in any beneficial course they might plot out for them as their future wives.

There's also the male perspective to consider in this. Men also approach marriage and long term relationships from what is ostensibly an egalitarian perspective. "Equality", playing fair, being an *"equal partner"* a pretense of

egalitarianism, is all a cover story for a power dynamic that is based on transactional resource exchanges. In a ‘modern marriage’, male authority, even just the idea of it, is ceded by default to the woman. Today’s marriage stats and the socioeconomic variables within marriage point to a very cold truth; if you make less money than your wife, statistically, your marriage is far more likely to dissolve. In couples where a woman out-earns her husband *divorce rates increase*.<sup>4</sup> Virtually every article written about this power dynamic attempts to paint the men involved as ‘*feeling threatened*’ by their wives’ success, but the visceral truth can be distilled through the process of women’s Hypergamy. In an “egalitarian” marriage it is actually financial considerations that imbalance that idealistic fantasy of a “coequal partnership” more than any other factor. Women cannot trust a man with her life because a majority of men are ridiculous buffoons, no better than big children, and now we add that almost 40% of them are out-earned by their wives.

Is it any wonder women have no default respect for a man’s course for their lives? In fact, given these modern circumstances, fantasies of an egalitarian marriage being the ideal notion are really the only way to justify marriage at all for women. Thus, we’ve crafted a new ideal of marriage that furnishes women with legal and social failsafes to make what looks like a really horrible, life-long attachment to a buffoon or an abuser just palatable enough to have women believe things might work out for them. The law is on women’s side, and the pretense of an egalitarian marriage frees women from ever having to go along with one of her husband’s half-baked life plans for the both of them. In fact, as long as women out-earn their husbands, women will almost surely be doing the ‘**course**’ setting – and all we need do is look at the well documented control over family spending and overall wealth women have come into since the time of the Sexual Revolution. Needless to say this is not conducive to women entertaining a default deference to men’s authority. If women’s baseline impression of men is one of incompetence, ridiculousness and distrust, and then you combine it with the fact that over a third of them won’t be earning the same money, we begin to see the reasons for the decline in marriage today. If the default perception of men is one of expected incompetence, why would a woman ever want to get married?

***A woman cannot look up to a man who is her equal.***

In marriage today, a man's authority only extends to this monetary wealth – there is no inherent authority associated with being male despite feminists bleating about '*male privilege*'. Wealth enforces will, but women still seek to find ways around accepting that authority by assuming control of that wealth. This is why "*financial abuse*" has been fashioned into a new form of spousal abuse, but there are other means of emotional control that mitigates male authority-by-wealth. Even when a man is the primary breadwinner his means to authority in his marriage is still mitigated. A man's provisioning for his wife and family has always been considered a 'manly duty'. Even the most masculinity-confused of men are still conditioned to assume providership – as opposed to *headship* – as a masculine trait that is 'non-toxic' and approved by their teachers.

By *old order* thinking, a man isn't to be considered a "man" unless he can prove his competence in generating more resources than he needs for himself. The direction of every aspiration he has must be applied to providing for a future wife, their children, likely their (her) extended family and then extended to society. By the old set of books a man can't even be given the title of "man" (or "a real man") unless he can prove he's prepared himself to be a good husband, father and community leader. This is where Traditional Conservatives adopt the same grift of brokering *manhood* to the Lost Boys generation that the Feminine Imperative has found effective for so long. Ironically, that appeal to *old order* responsibilities in marriage is actively embraced by new order gynocentrism because it encourages men to absolve women of any liabilities they might incur for pursuing Hypergamy. While there's nothing inherently wrong with a strong desire to fulfill this provisioning agenda, the men who do accept this as their "manly duty" are conditioned to only see their sacrifices as their expected, obligated, responsibility. They are actively discouraged from ever assuming any authority might be forthcoming in exchange for their sacrifices. Not even a man's wealth is a guarantee of authority; certainly not if he's been conditioned to believe that an egalitarian marriage is an ideal, much less a possibility. Paraphrasing comedian *Patrice O' Neil*, women are entitled to a man who's taller, stronger, richer, more educated, is higher status, more

entertaining and more intelligent than herself who thinks of he's her "*equal*".

And now we come full circle – the reinforcing of an egalitarian ideal in marriage, in gender equity, and in the retribution and restitution that feminism is based on. The latent purpose of this is acceptably stripping men of any concept of authority, while enforcing the ideal of male responsibility. In my book, *Preventive Medicine*, I made the case that (Beta) men today live by, or would like to live by, an old social contract that, on the surface, seems noble. They believe in an antiquated system that promises them honor, duty, chivalry and a default respect of women will, sooner or later, be appreciated by a woman – then show that appreciation by accepting him for her intimate attentions. Only later they come to realize their dedication to that anachronism is misplaced. The exchange of duty for authority is not only erased, but he's perceived as a "toxic" monster, or a ridiculous "macho" fool, forever expecting that exchange. The world is actually playing by a second set of rules that expects all his 'honor-bound' beliefs are his responsibility, but nothing he sacrifices grants him any authority. He's never *owed* anything, least of all sex.

Trad-Con and Feminist toe the same line. If men would just "*do better*" then women/wives would submit to them and *allow* their husbands some perceived authority – usually just enough to pander to his *manhood* merit badge. An *equal partnership* replaces *headship* in marriage, and if a man's wife isn't submitting her default authority (granted to her by the state) to him it's a sign that God is displeased with his *walk in the faith*, and he must repent and *do better*. Until Christian, Muslim, Jewish, etc., traditionalists can come to terms with the imbalance of masculine responsibility and masculine authority in marriage, they will continue to see their religions eroded by the assimilation and influences of the Feminine Imperative.

Responsibility without authority is *slavery*.

## Threat Point

The biggest, most deliberate, misconception of *Patriarchy* is that it is fundamentally an *androcentric* system. Feminism has ***never*** been about equality. By definition, feminism is gynocentric and female-primary. Patriarchy is balanced. As an organizational social system, it is the logical outcome of our gendered evolutionary paths as men and women. On a societal level patriarchy recognizes that women require men to be responsible for them, and their children, (protection, provisioning, parental investment) yet it affords men a necessary authority over them. We see this dynamic installed in *every* patriarchal religion. A prerequisite for ‘manhood’ is that a man must be responsible for wife, child and family; but a commensurate authority – a ***headship*** founded on metaphorical truth – is needed to effect the process to be responsible for them. Women *need* men to be responsible for them, so the dynamic is little different than that of a parent and a child, or a caretaker of a disabled person. I’m not saying women are literally children, but this is the dynamic we observe when we consider the evolved realities of the *Big Head Babies* theory mentioned in *Crisis Masculinity*. We assign such people authority over those in their charge because we recognize that to be responsible for someone requires authority over that same person. Such is no less true within the dynamic of men and women.

Today, the idea of male *headship* is synonymous with misogyny, but only insofar as it applies to male authority. When *headship* is associated with masculine responsibility it becomes a litmus test for the *Real Man* merit badge. Thus, today’s *believing* men, are bombarded with a secular-*Kosher* messaging imploring them to *Do Better*. The only solution to modern social and religious malaise is for men to *Man Up* and accept (more) responsibility with no expectation of any authority necessary to effect that responsibility. When *Dr. Piper* and I discussed the topic of ***headship*** (*Corinthians*) he began with pre-qualifying men’s Biblical headship vs. being a domineering abuser. This appeal to extremes is a common logical fallacy that women in many religions use to justify their claim to the failsafe of divorce. For all the self-righteous declarations of,

“*Divorce is never on the table*” I hear from *believing* women, in the new order divorce is *always* on the table. I’ve now come to expect this from a female-primary church that demands *Godly* masculine responsibility, but deemphasizes *Godly* male authority. Today’s *old order* moralism redefines that ‘*Authority*’ as Responsibility before you get to discuss any other aspect of what women might *allow* as “headship”. In a feminized church, male *headship* is a concept women only embrace when it salves their egos over the questionable status of the man they married.

This concept is what *Dalrock* once referred to as ***Threat Point***. It’s an important idea that all *believing* men need to wrap their heads around before they consider marriage today. When we talk about the reasons not to marry today, both men and women tend to overemphasize *divorce theft*. This is the go-to rationale that most male pastors presume is the only reason men are hesitant to marry because it’s easy to answer. Men are “*scared*” to lose “*half my stuff*” because divorce is so prevalent in today’s world. It’s a simple step to conflate this concern with the *masculine insecurity* shaming narrative that’s now part of religious culture. And it fits with scripture too. Marriage shouldn’t be about “*getting/keeping stuff*”, especially in Christianity. It also ties in with the *leap of faith* principle; if you *really* trusted God you wouldn’t care about the all-downside risks, divorce statistics or the *unconscionable contract* that is marriage. If you have true faith you shouldn’t be worried about losing half your stuff.

But *Threat Point* isn’t that simple. Economists *Stevenson* and *Wolfers* describe this in their paper *Bargaining in the Shadow of the Law: Divorce Laws and Family Distress*<sup>5</sup>:

*In the literature on the economics of the family there has been growing consensus on the need to take bargaining and distribution within marriage seriously. Such models of the family rely on a threat point to determine distribution within the household. The switch to a unilateral divorce regime redistributes power in a marriage, giving power to the person who wants out, and reducing the power previously held by the partner interested in preserving the marriage.*

In the new order, marriage and divorce is about *redistributing power* from the spouse who wants to honor the marriage vows to the spouse who doesn't. Don't be confused by the gender neutral terms here; when women initiate 70% of divorce [Stanford University, 2019]; today, women are overwhelmingly the ones who don't want to honor the marriage contract (vows). Putting this together, new order marriage is about the threat point of divorce. It is largely an equation of redistributing authority from the husband who wants to honor the marriage vows to the wife who doesn't. There are many popularized reasons about why women initiate divorce more often – financial incentives, 'abusiveness', independence, status shifts – but the numbers are what they are. In new order marriage, *Threat Point* is the 800 lbs. gorilla in the home. As I said, *divorce is always on the table* for women, and they overwhelmingly choose divorce before men.

Although “*abuse*” is the prime rationale women will cite as justification for initiating 70% of divorces *Threat Point* isn't about women previously being “trapped” in abusive or dangerous marriages, but rather it's about how putting husbands in fear of divorce might tame potentially abusive husbands. Again, *Stevenson* and *Wolfers* explain:

***Under unilateral divorce the value of the exit threat increases for the unsatisfied spouse, as the right to remarry is retained regardless of the position of one's spouse. Thus, the exit threat model predicts that changes in divorce regimes will have real effects. If the divorce threat is sufficiently credible, it may directly affect intrafamily bargaining outcomes without the option ever being exercised.***

***[...] we interpret the evidence collected here as an empirical endorsement of the idea that family law provides a potent tool for affecting outcomes within families.***

Bear in mind, they weren't looking for evidence that divorce allowed wives to escape abusive husbands. They were looking for, and found, that changes in family law served as a marital sword of *Damocles* dangling over husbands, causing them to intuitively assume their wife's authority in marriage out of fear of unilateral divorce. It is also worth noting that while

academic studies couch this in the feminist narrative of checking what would otherwise be an army of sadistic husbands, this is really about husbands living in fear of their wife becoming unhappy and pulling the pin on their family. In fact, so endemic is this *Threat Point* that counseling, therapy and entertainment businesses have been developed on it. One of the most prominent themes in women's entertainment is the *Divorce Porn* concept of the empowerment women experience from frivolously divorcing (*Eat, Pray, Love*). And like everything else made Christian *Kosher*, we can find these *Divorce Porn* themes in faith-based entertainment and *Women's Ministry* messages.

It doesn't take a theologian to see how *Threat Point* in marriage flies in the face of the Biblical concept of male headship. Although I'm focusing on Christian marriages here, *Threat Point* is equally applicable in Islam, Judaism and really any faith-based concept of marriage wherein husbands and fathers are expected to assume conventionally masculine responsibility as a duty of manhood. Scriptural *Headship* in marriage and family was both a responsibility and an authority bestowed upon men by God. In the new order faith-based marriages are presumed to be an egalitarian, "equal partnership" in practice, but presented with the veneer of male *headship* so as to appear faithful to their Holy book's guiding principles on intersexual dynamics. This is why you'll hear *Women's Ministry* speakers appeal to wives to **allow** their husbands to "lead in their marriages". *Threat Point* has become so internalized as an article of faith for women that they can't conceive of a marriage arrangement wherein they wouldn't presume to be the prime authority in it. But the *Good Book* said men are supposed to be in charge so women avoid the perception of being "rebellious" and disobedient to God, but at the same time retain the power of *contractual* marriage. *Threat Point* is a failsafe for women's Hypergamous discontent, but when paired with a reinterpreted part of religious doctrine 'god' bestows *headship* on the wife while making masculine responsibility for men a form of (now doctrinally sound) submission to her.

Modern Christians have radically reframed marriage from the way the Bible does. Where the Bible shows the husband in headship and the wife as submissive, modern Christians have turned this upside down. The re-framing is so pervasive that most Christians have no idea it has even



occurred. There are three fundamental changes which are at the core of the radical reframing of marriage:

1. The command to husbands to love their wives has been transformed into a command that he make his wife *feel* loved. This subtle transformation turns a straightforward biblical command into a Sisyphean task. The wife herself is the only one who can pronounce whether she *feels* sufficiently loved. Additionally only she can define the very meaning of the word **love** in this context. As a result, Christian husbands become hostage to the emotions of their wives. They must forever jump through whatever *romantic ideal* hoops their wives hold up to gain her approval. There is no escape from this rule once you accept the subtle change, as logically only *she* can tell him *how she feels*.
2. The command that neither should deny sex to the other is now seen as only applying to husbands denying sex to their wives. Wives aren't to be expected to follow this command unless they feel sufficiently loved or men are *faithful* enough to put her in the mood. Even if this were to apply, there is the added exception that the wife shouldn't follow this command if it makes her uncomfortable. If he doesn't follow her leadership she can deny him sex for as long as it takes to bring him to submission, and the Holy *Threat Point* is her ace card.
3. A wife holding her husband hostage to her emotions and employing denial of sex will eventually wear down the will of even the most determined husband. An additional *Threat Point* is needed to further enhance the wife's undisputed authority and if needed provide an exit strategy. This is the threat of unilateral divorce, with the accompanying expulsion of the husband from the home, of his children, and the appropriation of the majority of his income. However, for this to be effective religion had to be morphed from a force standing in the way of divorce to one which provides moral justification for divorce.

These three changes put wives in the position of absolute headship in modern marriage, in an inversion of the biblical concept of headship. Moreover, while claiming to fear the ever threatened tyranny of husbandly headship, the new model puts the husband in a far more subservient position to his wife than a mere inversion would accomplish. No reading of the Bible would make the husband's emotional state the final arbiter of wifely submission and obedience. She isn't commanded to ensure that he never feels any sort of dissatisfaction. A husband who berated his wife simply because he wasn't happy would be seen as abusing his position of *headship*. The same goes for a husband who would deny his wife sex and/or threatened her with divorce for the same reason. Yet armies of faith-based "*relationship experts*" now make their living writing books and articles and holding workshops advising Christian wives on the proper way to do exactly this. In fact, these books, articles, and workshops are packaged as "supporting Christian marriage".

It's important to bear in mind that *Threat Point* has a meta-scale psychological and sociological effect on intersexual dynamics before marriage is even a consideration for men and women. *Threat Point* has been baked into the new order, Blue Pill conditioning of boys and men since the early 1970s. *Fempowerment* in western (and now globalizing) culture has used *Threat Point* as an underpinning for making deference (default authority) to women the norm. While Beta men are necessitous by default, a feminine-primary social order teaches boys to be *serviceable* by conditioning them to make womankind their *Mental Point of Origin*. This becomes increasingly easier to do with every generation as their fathers and grandfathers unconsciously defer to women's authority as a result of *Threat Point*. Look at any *Facebook* post of a guy announcing his recent engagement and is asking his friends, family or just random followers for advice on how to have a happy marriage. Invariably you'll see his married male friends offer up "*Happy Wife, Happy Life*", "*Always say 'Yes'*", or "*Remember, she's always right*". Deference to the wife's authority is their well-conditioned default understanding of how a good marriage ought to function. Don't rock the boat, don't challenge her, never tell her '*No*'. The foreknowledge is that if a man presumes *headship* his wife will withhold sex; but the unspoken knowledge is that divorce is *always* on the table for

women. Happy wife, happy life is no longer a pithy bit of folk wisdom, now it is an ultimatum.

*Threat Point* is part of men's understanding of intersexual dynamics before he even meets a woman who *might* be his wife someday. They fall right into the same ceaseless qualification they had to display while single in order to get married; only now their marriage and families depend on his performance and obeisance to the *Threat Point*. He must become less so she can become more. This is an essential part of that deference, but it also falls into the secular-*Kosher* idea that a husband is doctrinally bound to support and listen to his wife. Happy wife, happy life becomes happy wife, happy God. This is also why you will hear men – particularly religious men – defer to their wives' authority without a forethought. Reflexive self-deprecation (and a bit of nervous laughter) is the first reaction men default to when they are introducing their wives to others. She's his *better half*.

*“My wife is such a trooper! It must be a God thing, because I don't know how else she'd ever marry a schmuck like me.”*

Religious men revel in this husbandly self-abasement because it's the cheapest way to 'lift her up' as they've been taught they must. What they fail to realize is that women derive a good part of their own self-esteem by having married well. Hypergamy is based on doubt; and that doubt asks one question – **is he the best I can do?** Women want to pair with a man who other men want to be and other women want to have sex with. If a man's first impulse is to self-deprecate when introducing his wife, this is an insult to her ego; it vocally confirms that she married a guy beneath her own sexual market value. He's not the best she could do, he says it every time he abases himself when he talks about how great she is and how worthless he is. And everybody laughs at him. Like the “child-in-a-man's-body” that women caricature men as, most of these *average* husbands are okay with being the butt of the joke. In fact, most are enthusiastic about their self-deprecation because they've been conditioned to think that doing so endears them to the women who married them and proves they're “*secure in their masculinity*”. Religious men take this a step further by dragging God into their self-deprecation. The Holy *Threat Point* demands that men should

feel *blessed* that any woman would ever have them. When Beta men reflexively default to public self-deprecation around their wives or long-term girlfriends we see this confirmed. Men are conditioned to feel “lucky” that a woman lowered her standards to accept him as her mate. *Believing* men, will often replace *luck* with God. It was the Lord who intervened on his behalf, the spirit afflicted her with temporary insanity, and caused his wife to lower her standards enough to accept him as her husband, warts and all. Not a glowing endorsement of her or the creator of the universe they claim a personal relationship with.

Men usually acquiesce to the mindset that they ought to feel fortunate that a woman would ever have them. They also foster this necessitousness in other men. Usually this is a form of Beta Game; policing the thoughts, beliefs and actions of misguided men who might actually have a healthy sense of their own self-worth makes him think he’s *not like other typical guys*. This endemic sense of metaphysical gratitude is what prevents men from even considering having standards for women. It also polices other men from holding standards of themselves. *How dare you be so arrogant as to expect a woman to live up to your demands? Just be glad God took pity on you and granted you a wife*. It’s a cosmic reproductive extortion racket.

Marriage today is a dicey proposition for men. I talk and write a lot about the overwhelmingly high risks of life and livelihood men should consider when it comes to how we do legal marriage today. Most men understand that marriage is basically *for* women now – at least with respect to the legal protections and the win-win incentives that are advertised for women. If all a woman ever did was read about marriage from social media and popular culture one would have to wonder why she would ever want to sign up for a lifetime of dealing with a husband, or the popular caricatures of *average* men, at all. The contempt for men, even in the most good natured, humorous way is palpable on social media – even “Christian” channels. It’s entirely acceptable, even expected, to deprecate the integrity of men in marriage. Men literally cannot do anything right in a ‘female correct’ world based on *Threat Point*.

What modern marriage has become is a gender reversal of the *Coverture Laws* of the 1800s. Long prior to the Sexual Revolution, the English common law doctrine of coverture was established, whereby, upon marriage, a woman's legal rights and obligations were subsumed by those of

her husband, in accordance with the wife's legal status of *feme covert*. An unmarried woman, a *feme sole*, had the right to own property and make contracts in her own name. Coverture arises from the legal presumption that once married a husband and wife were **one** person. After the women's rights (Suffragettes) movement coverture became synonymous with oppression of women, hindering them from exercising ordinary property rights and entering professions, after they were married. Certain aspects of coverture (*mainly concerned with preventing a wife from unilaterally incurring financial obligations for which her husband would be liable*) survived as late as the 1960s.

Modern feminists still harken back to coverture when making their case for hundreds (if not thousands) of years of women's "*bondage*" under an imagined tyrannical patriarchy. But if you do your homework, it's clear to see that women prior to suffrage could in fact own property, accrue wealth, enter into legally binding contracts, and had a limited degree of autonomy – so long as they remained unmarried. Granted, this applied primarily to more affluent women, and women whose families retained generational wealth, but the comparison is this; while women remained *feme sole* (single) they had more authority over their own decisions. Once she got married, that woman sacrificed her authority to that of her husband in exchange for legitimate children, family connections, and the presumed security of his responsibility and headship.

Today, the coverture gender script has been flipped. It is now men who benefit from authority over their own lives so long as they remain single. Once married, they sacrifice that authority to their wives – courtesy of a legally binding *Threat Point*, and a social order that justifies it – while still being held responsible for all the *old order* security and provisioning that was one half of an equitable exchange under Patriarchy. Today's *Strong Independent Woman* is nothing of the sort. Women are still very much dependent upon a direct or indirect resource transfer from men, as well as men's incentivized interest in women's empowerment. In the new order we're still attempting to float the *old order* responsibilities of Patriarchy by men for women, with no pretense of any reciprocation of the authority that used to come with it. This is replaced with the fantasy of an egalitarian "equal partnership" marriage ideal. With each successive generation of men the *juice* becomes less and less *worth the squeeze*. Men simply have more

opportunity and direct control over their lives outside of marriage. When there is no reciprocation, the social (and moral) framework that *old order* balanced Patriarchy built for societies over millennia then decays. Men believe the solution to that decay is to assume more *old order* “masculine” responsibility while ceding more authority to women in the misguided belief that empowered women will save us from the problems this one-sided exchange creates.

## New Order Marriage

I truly wish I had some better solution for you with respect to new order marriage. The most common question I get from *believing* men is this:

*“How do I vet for a wife? My religion only allows sex within the framework of marriage, but marriage is so corrupted now I’d be a fool to participate in it. No woman today meets my religious criteria of conviction and the ones who pretend to are returning to the faith after their Party Years, with the consequences of multiple lovers and one or more children in tow. How can I be expected to remain a virgin, and prepare myself for being a good husband until I’m 30, just to forgive one of these women of the sins they chose to commit? How do I make this work Rollo?”*

There’s really only three options: embrace celibacy, reject contractual marriage or abandon your religion altogether. Statistics indicate that men (and women) are largely opting to abandon religion today. What this new order Gynocentric spin on marriage has done for *old order believers* is force them to make a choice between sinning to solve their reproductive problem – or remaining faithful and marrying into an *unconscionable contract* with a woman who feels entitled to the fewer and fewer *Godly* men who believe it’s their masculine duty to accept 100% responsibility and 0% authority in that contract. *The Goddess Movement’s* influence on women has ensured that men will either sin to reproduce or live sexless and frustrated in their *old order* faith. Furthermore, it also rewards those men’s perseverance in faith with a *fallen* woman who chose to reproduce before he ever came along; and then convince him that *forgiving* her is what his God would want him to do.

Even in Islam and Judaism, new order realities and *Threat Point* make vetting a woman for marriage a tough prospect in the context of faith. One counterargument I get from *believing* men is the reliance upon faith and perseverance as factor in finding a woman to marry. In theory, a strong religious marriage is determined by the faith of the wife. If a woman is a *true believer* she will automatically defer to her husband’s authority because

her religious devotion and upbringing serve as a buffer against her base nature. This actually used to be the case in the *old order*. Religious conviction served as a buffer against the worst aspects of men and women's evolved mating strategies. In conventional Muslim marriages devout wives presume devout Muslim men will uphold the responsibility/authority exchange as an article of faith. Certainly there are socioeconomic reasons for this deference, but the process of vetting a husband or wife begins with the presumption of faith. That's the theory, but in practice *Threat Point* is never truly removed. By power of a gynocentric state *divorce is always on the table*. While it may be comforting to believe that a mutually shared religious conviction affords husbands authority from God, that *authority* is tenuous at best according to global gynocentrism. At worst, that presumed, *God given* authority becomes an *old order* liability when it's convenient for a woman to exercise her state granted authority over him.

Can God, faith and conviction be the basis for a healthy marriage? Absolutely. However, in a Gynocentric social order it is like building a great house on land you don't actually own. Your faith-based marriage is only as strong as your wife's conviction to her faith; and that faith is challenged by a social order that debases, disempowers and obfuscates masculinity. When push comes to shove, your presumption of Godly authority by virtue of being a man, can and will be used against you in a gynocentric court of law. Islam today is viewed as a horribly repressive, misogynistic and patriarchal religion with respect to women. This is primarily due to the globalized, generational, influence of feminism and a default Gynocentric understanding of female-correctness. Islam and a few other orthodox religions are the last vestiges of a balanced form of Patriarchy. It's interesting that even western liberal-progressive women still display a default deference for Islamic marriage while simultaneously decrying its "injustices towards women" today.

No religion has a monopoly on what marriage should or shouldn't be. Men and women we're marrying and forming families in various ways (monogamy and polygamy) in times and places that had nothing to do with the Abrahamic religions and in places nowhere near the places they originated. Human beings are social animals. We are innately tribalistic even when we value individualism, and our first tribe is our family. Intersexual dynamics is ultimately about procreation and family formation; kin



affiliation and promulgating a genetic line. The social conventions we use to organize these “*tribes*” have roots in religion, ethnicity and culture, but their latent purpose is still an extension of our evolved necessities. Men and women’s mating strategies are different and antagonistic of the other, but uniting a man and woman in the interests of sustaining the species means that we must become complements to the other.

Whether you believe men and women were created or evolved to be so, the sexes are complementary; each possessing innate strengths and weaknesses that relatively balance the other’s. We are better together than we are apart, and this reality has been one of the greatest strengths of our species. It is the root of our tribalistic instincts, but it was also an evolutionary necessity. If human males and females were to proliferate they had to evolve into cooperative gendered identities and social roles. We are in no way blank slates, but by today’s social order we’re meant to believe that these roles are a form of tyranny. Social constructionism has effectively destroyed the natural complementarity that made us the apex species on this planet. As a result we watch fertility rates plummet, women’s egos inflate by social media hubris, and men opt out of marriage because it makes no sense. As *Dalrock* alluded, we have shifted from a marriage based model of childrearing to and child support based model, and all because we’ve made heteronormative complementarity an unconscionable contract. And we started from within religion.

I wish I had a better answer. I’ve been married for 25 years at the time of this writing. I’m happily married, my wife and I still enjoy each other sexually, we’ve raised a phenomenally talented and successful daughter, I’ve maximized my personal potential fairly well and I have what I think most men would consider a relatively ideal marriage. I have men ask me, “How do I get what you’ve got?” Then, I have others ask “How can a guy like you be married at all? Only Blue Pill chumps get married!” The best answer I can give them is I’ve made it work for me. Through *Red Pill* awareness and uncompromising masculine polarity I’ve had a good, loving, marriage for some time now. I’ve never used my marriage as a *proof-of-concept* example in any of my essays or talks because I’m hesitant to give men the impression they can have what I do by following some simplistic formula. There is no formula nor prescription so my results will not likely be your results. However, I cannot endorse marriage for men today. I am not against

marriage as a concept or an institution, but I am opposed to how marriage is done today. I hate that I have to write this. I would like nothing better than to expound upon all the tangible benefits of a solid marriage based on conventional gender norms, mutual love and sincere religious doctrine – but I cannot do that at this time. The dangers are too apparent, the risks are too real.

So, what is the solution? You will have to decide that for yourself.

We will continue down the path of abandoning religions because we abandoned the precepts of how we live as (evolved or created) interdependent, complementary sexes. We've abandoned the symbiosis between men and women in favor of a foolish, now easily disproven, belief in the *Blank Slate*. In its place we cling to the idea that men and women have no need of, and marginally less use of, each other. We think we don't *need* each other, but we still *want* each other, then we go about distorting what worked in the *old order* to force fit it into the new order gender power structure. The problem is, at the end of that experiment, we believe we're self-fulfilling, autonomous *things*, with no need for anyone or anything outside ourselves. We can still reproduce in various ways, but you don't build families or tribes in that way. As a result, as we become more disconnected. We look for kin affiliations outside ourselves, but we never really find what our primal ancestors did. This disconnect is the reason why so many people are returning to *spiritual-but-not-religious* forms of earthy, shamanistic, alternative spiritualities.

No man or woman is an island, but ironically, today's Blank Slate egalitarianism attempts to make us so.

We are weaker for it.



## SEX

*“Sexuality, families, and men did not come about because of society. To the contrary, sexuality, families, and men are what made society possible in the first place.”*

– Pook

One of the dichotomies I consistently see in the manosphere is the differences in how men approach the importance (or feigned unimportance) of sex. How men publicly, and privately, prioritize sex is always something that leads to a judgement call about that particular man, how he lives his life, and what it says about his integrity. If you openly make sex a “*big deal*” in your life, or you acknowledge its importance in intersexual relationships, you open yourself up to virtue signaling. The presumption is that if you were a *real* Alpha sex is just something you should have mastery over. If sex is at all important to a man, and he expresses this, that guy runs the risk of being seen as “*obsessed with sex*“, a “*pussy beggar*” or in some way less of a man for allowing sex to control his decisions.

Why is this the popular perception?

In 2018 I had a lively debate with the producer of the *Pat Campbell* morning talk show in Tulsa, Oklahoma. While we did have other topics to hit on that morning, she and I dug in when I mentioned that “Sex is the glue that holds relationships together.” I made a case for the importance of sex and how it was, until recently, something that constituted part of a man’s life experience. Now it seems that being a sexless virgin at age 40 should be considered an accomplishment by the more extreme moralist factions in the manosphere. A common dismissal of *Red Pill* awareness I read from Blue Pill men is this feigned, blasé indifference to sex. Mostly this false-indifference is a conditioned response couched in *Beta Game*. The idea is a Blue Pill guy promotes the public perception that he’s somehow *above* his sexual impulses in the hopes that any girl within earshot

(or reading his comments online) will recognize his uniqueness in not letting his *little head* do his thinking for him. To male deductive logic it makes sense – women have all told him how off-put they are by guys who **only** think about sex, so he'll identify with the women he'd like to get with and “*not be like other guys.*”

“All that *Red Pill*, PUA nonsense is for guy's who obsess over sex. They only go to the lengths they do to get laid and never see the bigger picture. You don't actually **need** sex you know? You won't die from not getting laid.”

That's the *Beta Game* behind the “*you don't need sex*” **Buffer**, but there's more to this rationale. Technically, the Beta reasoning is correct; physically, you're not going to die if you never have sex. You could probably masturbate to relieve yourself or live a sexless existence due to a physical disability and live a productive life as satisfying as you can manage it. If you don't know what you're missing or if a *sexual substitute* does the job, what's the difference? The reasoning is, if it isn't food, water or oxygen it isn't really a necessity for existence.

## Dueling Mating Strategies

Moralistic or otherwise, the Blue Pill teaches men to make virtues of their necessities. It also helps men who fall on the 80% (low value) side of Hypergamy's ***Pareto Principle*** curve to convince themselves that *socially enforced monogamy* – is the **moral** plan for sex; or the logical, *common sense* one when absent the moral context. If you cannot get laid yourself, at least you can make the desire to get laid a pathology or an '*obsession*' for the 20% of men who have an easier time of it. By doing so you encourage the 20% of men, who women have a natural desire for sex with, to police themselves (and *moral* women) by adopting your own, self-superior, one-woman-per-man sexual strategy. For a lot of men, fulfilling the provisioning/parenting/responsibility side of Hypergamy in monogamy is not just *good Game*, but it's an article of faith.

Up to now I've described Hypergamy as women's innate sexual strategy. The Feminine Imperative is rooted in filtering men for quality based on two criteria: ***Alpha Seed*** and ***Beta Need***. Women evolved mating strategies based on optimizing these two sides of the Hypergamous equation. It's the classic *Cads* vs. *Dads* dilemma; short term sexual benefits track with genetic interests, while long-term mating benefits track with protection and provisioning interests. But men have a reproductive problem to solve too. The evolved Masculine Imperative is very simple – ***unlimited access to unlimited sexuality***. Lots of virtuous guys will eagerly try to fight me on this idea; but the reason online, hi-def, streaming pornography is so freely available in the new order is because (albeit virtually) it satisfies unlimited access to unlimited sexuality.

While women have one mating strategy, based on opportunism, men have two. The first, the one in which a higher SMV male can enjoy the sexual experience of many women, is a strategy founded on what our most basic, evolved, biological instinct directs us to. It served ancestral men to '***hit it and quit it***' and move on to the next girl as expediently as possible for a variety of reasons. In an age when mate guarding and kin selection meant that a pair-bonded rival or male family member might kill you for being near a kinswoman, wife or daughter it made evolutionary sense that men's

sexual arousal was immediate, efficient and quick. This is also a reason why women's Hypergamous filtering is the basis of women's sexual selection process today. The life-threatening investment cost of becoming pregnant was so high it became part of women's **evolved mental firmware** to be hypersensitive to reproduction cues as well as parental investment cues to ensure her survival and her offspring's. If you ever wonder why rape is such an existential fear among women, understand, this fear is written deep into women's psyches because men could override their reproductive filtering process by force. Men of our ancestral past instinctively knew this because ensuring paternity, and not wasting reproductive efforts in parenting children not their own, is men's existential imperative.

Left to our own devices, and free from the filtering of women's Hypergamous strategy, men would instinctively opt for unlimited access to unlimited sexuality. And this is what we've relatively achieved in the new order by way of ubiquitous pornography. However, all men are *not*, in fact, created equal. Not all men, and especially not in the modern era, can be one of the top 20% of men whom *all* women seek to pair with. Only a minority of men can actualize unlimited access to unlimited sexuality with willing women. The clever solution of this reproductive problem for the lower 80% of men is actually one of the greatest strengths of the human species, and really, it's the basis of human advancement for millennia.

## You're All Obsessed!

With few exceptions, every *Traditional Conservative*, Men's Rights Activists, and more than a few MGTOW I've read like to qualify men who *can* get laid as being in some way **obsessed** with sex. In so many words they imply how morally (or intellectually) superior they themselves are for essentially, *Thinking with the big head instead of the little one*, and thus confirming their own part in a righteous monogamous sexual strategy. Bastardized *Chivalry*, the *romantic ideal* and the *Soulmate Myth* all lock in with religion to reinforce a very pragmatic (and evolutionary) approach to sex and family creation. Men's second mating strategy is called **Strategic Pluralism Theory**. To understand socially and religiously enforced monogamy as our predominant mating strategy we have to consider **Strategic Pluralism Theory** (emphasis my own):

*According to strategic pluralism theory (Gangestad & Simpson, 2000), men have evolved to pursue reproductive strategies that are contingent upon their value in the mating market. **More attractive men** accrue reproductive benefits from spending more time seeking multiple mating partners and relatively less time investing in offspring. In contrast, the reproductive effort of **less attractive men**, who do not have the same mating opportunities, is better allocated to investing heavily in their mates and offspring and spending relatively less time seeking additional mates.*

*From a woman's perspective, the ideal is to **attract a partner who confers both long-term investment benefits and genetic benefits**. Not all women, however, will be able to attract long-term investing mates who also display heritable fitness cues. Consequently, women face trade-offs in choosing mates because they may be forced to choose between males displaying fitness indicators or those who will assist in offspring care and be good long-term mates (Gangestad & Simpson, 2000). The most straightforward prediction that follows is that women seeking short-term mates, when the man's only*



*contribution to offspring is genetic, should prefer muscularity more than women seeking long-term mates.*

– *Why Is Muscularity Sexy? Tests of the Fitness Indicator Hypothesis*<sup>1</sup>

Low SMV (sexual market value) men are necessarily forced to invest in one woman, or one woman at a time, if they are to successfully reproduce. Lacking in the *Alpha Seed* side of the Hypergamous equation, low SMV men must either develop their physical prowess and competencies to become *Alpha*, or play to whatever strengths they possess to appeal to the *Beta Need* side of the equation in order to reproduce. This is the basis of a socio-sexual order founded on *socially enforced monogamy*. A larger population of men benefit reproductively if the majority of men can be convinced to follow the dictates of a socially accepted, socially reinforced, form of normalized monogamy. In the past this social emphasis on sexual restrictiveness also had a buffering effect on the worst consequences of women's Hypergamous strategy. If *all* men – including the 20% who can enjoy many women – agreed to play by a social contract that encouraged men adopt monogamy as their masculine duty (despite an ability to reproduce outside it) then a larger majority of men would have the opportunity to reproduce. Furthermore, women's Hypergamy would also be forced to accept these lower SMV men's monogamous strategy as a buffer on the worst aspects of their innate strategy. The *old order* tradeoff for that monogamous compromise was that the provisioning/protection/parenting side of the Hypergamous equation was guaranteed by making it men's honorable, masculine responsibility to fulfill.

This then leads us to the ***Cardinal Rule of Mating Strategies***:

***For one gender's mating strategy to succeed the other gender must compromise or abandon their own strategy.***

In the past, religious and social mores used to act as a buffer against the crueler aspects Hypergamy, but the compromise for women was that they could expect to have the *Beta Need* security side of Hypergamy more or less provided for by the majority of men socialized to adopt this strategy. In an evolutionary sense, protection and provisioning are already an integral part

of the male mental firmware. But all of that went out the window after the Sexual Revolution, unilaterally female-controlled HBC and the socio-sexual/socioeconomic landscape that sprang from the *Fempowerment* narrative that followed. Today, there is a radical imbalance between the old social contract upon which *enforced monogamy* was a key element. The new social contract dictated by a female-primary social order places women's mating strategy as the predominant one in global society. So it is that men enthusiastically revert back to 80% of low SMV men insisting on, and shaming, the 20% of high value men to comply with a sexual strategy that women instinctively know isn't in their best interests in this social environment.

If you're a believer in any of the Abrahamic patriarchal religions you already know that polygyny (one man, many women) was the prevailing, socially reinforced, custom of marriage. In the *Old Testament* 'Father Abraham' quite literally began the Tribes of Israel thanks to the polygynous norms of the time. Powerful, *Alpha*, men have always curated harems of fertile women who essentially served as breeding stock to continue his genetic legacy and, hopefully, produce future *Alpha* men. Maintaining a harem of women is what high-value men following their mating imperative simply do – it's an outward sign of preselection and status. A man who enjoys sex (and sometimes reproduces) with many women is seen as a high-value male on an instinctual, hindbrain level. PUAs figured out early on the value of being seen with many attractive women in a club has on female preselection. Women want a man who other men want to be and other women want to have sex with. In a social order rooted in Blank Slate equalism, this seems sorely unfair to women. It forms the basis of the now-clichéd male *Double Standard* generations of women still repeat today, but men and women **are** innately different, and nature itself is necessarily sexist. Sorry, not sorry.

Remember, under the (very) *old order* rules of engagement men who would take more than one wife were presumed to have the ample resources, power and prowess necessary to *keep* them. In Islam a man *may* have up to four concurrent wives provided he has the means to keep them provisioned, protected and provided for, plus any offspring he and his wives are expected by his faith to produce. Remember, responsibility *and* authority were what used to define patriarchal marriage. Even concubines, or *maidservants* if

you prefer, had to be somewhat maintained. *Old Testament Jew*, Muslim men, Mormon men, early church Christian men, even primitive men in hunter-gatherer tribes, all followed a similar reproductive pragmatism – responsibility, authority and a sexual access that allowed them to proliferate according to status. From a reproductive standpoint, a majority of (low SMV) men cannot afford to have *Alpha* men all playing by the rules of *polygyny* if they ever hope to solve their reproductive problem. For all men's fantasies of access to a bevy of concubines, *polygyny*, as a socialized mating strategy, has a lot of downsides. Polygynous societies are directly correlated to more economic hardship, social unrest, war and bloodshed.<sup>2</sup> According to *The Economist*, *The perils of polygamy; The link between polygamy and war*, plural marriage, bred of inequality, begets violence:

***Wherever it is widely practiced, polygamy (specifically polygyny, the taking of multiple wives) destabilizes society, largely because it is a form of inequality which creates an urgent distress in the hearts, and loins, of young men. If a rich man has a Lamborghini, that does not mean that a poor man has to walk, for the supply of cars is not fixed. By contrast, every time a rich man takes an extra wife, another poor man must remain single. If the richest and most powerful 10 percent of men have, say, four wives each, the bottom 30 percent of men cannot marry. Young men will take desperate measures to avoid this state.***

It's not hard to figure out that if one man has four wives to bear him children that means three men won't pass their genes on to the next generation. Three men will either live in crushing sexual frustration – since sex outside marriage is damning *fornication* – or they will channel that sexual angst towards novel or violent ways to solve that reproductive problem. As such, societies whose orthodoxy is founded on polygyny tend to become war torn countries. Cruel as that may be, if there is such a thing as a mutually adhered to mating strategy amongst men and women, our natural, most pragmatic strategy is polygyny – and patriarchy is a natural social extension of that strategy. From an evolutionary perspective human beings are not innately monogamous. In fact true monogamy in the animal

kingdom is a rarity.<sup>3</sup> Human beings are innately promiscuous. Women's Hypergamous mating strategies drive dominance hierarchies (*Alpha Seed*) and competence hierarchies (*Beta Need*) amongst men whose mating strategies center on sexual access and ensuring genetic paternity.

Individually each sex's mating strategy is antagonistic to the interests of the other's, but the continued survival of our species depends on both sex's mutual cooperation. Thus, we are promiscuous by nature, but (relatively) monogamous by necessity. ***For one gender's mating strategy to succeed the other gender must compromise or abandon their own strategy***, and until the time of the Sexual Revolution, a compromise amongst both sexes was what made monogamy a keystone of civilization. What we think of as conventional monogamy, the resulting family structure, and civilizational progress is really in spite of ourselves. The evidence is there in our genomic records. Studies show that only one man for every 17 women reproduced as little as 8,000 years ago (after the advent of agriculture)<sup>4</sup> and that human female ovum can *select* which of two (or more) men's sperm will fertilize it at the point of conception.<sup>5</sup> Biological adaptations like this would not have evolved in human females if promiscuity (*not limited to rape*) weren't the innate, evolved, mating strategies for both men and women.

Our success as a civilization thus far has been due to controlling the feral aspects of both men and women's natural sexual strategies via social conventions, religion and personal conviction. The result of this control was a social contract based on monogamy. If men can compel intra-sexually competing men, and women (whose strategy might be compromised by adopting it), to believe that monogamy is a social and moral imperative, then they increase the odds that they'll successfully circumvent what would otherwise be the natural limitations of their own reproduction. Both sex's mating strategies operate counter to the demands of pair bonded monogamy. For millennia we've adapted social mechanisms to buffer for it (marriage, male protectionism of women, etc.), but the cardinal rule of sexual strategies still informs these institutions and practices. While men and women understand, accept and thrive in their native, gendered, complementary states – in spite of their antagonistic strategies – we have a balance in our social order, fertility rates remain tenable and both sexes are relatively assured to solve their reproductive problem.

## Monogamy is Beta

Monogamy is a *social* norm, if not an evolutionary norm. A lot has been written about how monogamy in its present incarnation – one man, one woman – is really the result of a post-agrarian social order that optimized the sexual strategy of Beta men. In essence socially-enforced monogamy serves the largest population of Beta males. As populations grew, patriarchal monogamy was the most socially stabilizing framework for us. However, the tradeoff for women was long term provisioning, protection (in as far as the man was capable) and parental investment – all things conducive to sustainable futures for women and their children. All that was expected of women was a compromise on the *Alpha Seed* arousal side of Hypergamy. Naturally, Alpha men and a majority of women found ways to circumvent this socio-sexual adaptation that still benefitted women in spite of Beta men's social conventions.

Monogamy serves Beta men best. Broke or not, Alpha men still get sex and appreciation from women. Women's sexual strategy is actually optimized in *ideal* conditions of polygamy (and recently ***Polyamory***), while men's sexual strategy – the Beta's side anyway – is optimized in a condition of socially enforced monogamy. Once all social stigmas and religious buffers were removed from limiting Hypergamy we've seen a rapid shift from a male-beneficial monogamy to a form of *polyandry* that benefits the female sexual strategy. Once hormonal birth control became an option unique to women, men abdicated any claim to directing the human reproductive process. It was at this point that the *old order* monogamous ideal and the patriarchal model for intersexual dynamics effectively died. Granted, the old socio-sexual models didn't die overnight. There was a lot of religious and generational pushback on the *sexual liberation* that followed. But progressively we shifted from a patriarchy in which men's imperatives had a shared influence on reproduction, to unilaterally empowering women in what can only be described as ***gynocentric eugenics***.

Since the time of the Sexual Revolution we have seen a systematic erasure of a patriarchal, monogamous, social order in favor of a polygynous female-primary social order. This order is grounded in women's control of

the reproductive direction of now-globalizing societies. Where before there existed social checks and balances in traditional monogamy, those balances have been replaced with the unfettered, and unquestioned, imperatives of women's sexual strategy – Hypergamy. In just five short decades men ceded any claim to their prior authority, as well as any right to ascertain paternity. Looking at how social trends have shifted with respect to women's sexual selection process we can see the end game more clearly. Ideals of an objective form of *consensual sex* have shifted from 'No Means No' to 'Yes Means Yes' , to itemized permission (and documentation) for every intimate act — and now to an ambiguous notion of “*enthusiastic consent*”.

Today, women's end game is not unlike our original state of male-primary polygyny in that only the highest value Alpha men are desired for breeding rights by women. Today's social contract would virtually *entitle* every woman to the best of the *Alpha Seed* side of Hypergamy. ***Enthusiastic Consent*** is becoming a '*thing*' because, on some evolutionary level, women loathe the idea of being obligated to transactional sex with Beta men by dint of an *old order*, usually religious, social contract. As women's provisioning and security needs are relatively met by the State, and/or men's own direct, or indirect resource transfer, there is no longer any genuine desire for “*sex they're really not that into*” and no longer need to have in order to secure long term provisioning. If not for ubiquitous, free online porn and soft prostitution (*Sugaring, Tinder, Seeking Arrangements, OnlyFans*, etc.) western culture would eventually find itself in a similar situation to the polygamous war-torn countries described by *The Economist*. It's important for *Red Pill* aware men to understand that as women consolidate more power via social conventions that only apply to men (#MeToo, #TimesUp, etc.) the end game is one of polygyny by women, for women. Men's only use in a Gynocentric world is as draft animals or breeding stock.

I've had men ask me where I think we're headed with regards to intersexual social dynamics. What I'm ultimately seeing is an erasure of conventional masculinity and monogamy replaced with a Hypergamous polygyny in which women will hold uncontested control over reproduction. There are similarities occurring with men who drop out of life, and either neglect or refuse to build their lives around supporting a family or entertaining a wife. The guys I talk to want to get married and have kids, but the downsides are so unimaginably dangerous for men it seems hopeless to

them. So, not unlike the young unemployed men in the *Arab Spring* of 2013, today's dropout average guy has very little hope for a monogamous future with a woman. However, this hopeless circumstance is being instituted by western women, not a **religious dogma**. Unrestrained Hypergamy leads us back to our feral, tribalist polygamy, simply because women have no use for Beta men. Sex with Betas is (or soon will be) considered rape, and without porn or some other sexual sedation Beta men would likely resort to violence to solve that problem.

## Validational vs. Transactional Sex

*You cannot negotiate genuine desire.*

This is one of my best known quotes because it resonates with so many men. There was a time in the early 2000s when I was doing peer counseling for men; most of whom were at least a decade my senior. As part of my undergraduate study, one consistent theme I heard from them was how their marriages (or long term relationships) had been so much more sexually satisfying when they were dating their wives or before they'd committed to some kind of exclusivity. That's always the crux of it for guys. They mistakenly believed that the *hot monkey sex* they were having with their women prior to “*doing the right thing*” and getting married (or committed) was something that would be characteristic of their *quality woman* fantasy into a long term relationship with them.

Why was this so common for guys? I can remember coming up with this *desire* quote as part of the advice I was giving while working for one of these men. He, like many of the other guys, had gotten to the point that he would do **anything** to get back to that real desire that convinced him to commit to his wife in the first place. He'd convinced his wife to go to marriage counseling in order to find out what exactly it was that he needed to do to “get her to come around” to wanting sex with him again. Nothing was working. Even after his sessions he was still either sexless or his wife only begrudgingly would have lackluster ‘*starfish*’ sex with him. We called that ‘grudge sex’ back then. It was her obligation to *want* to have sex with him for fulfilling whatever terms she and the therapist came up with. As a student of behavioral psychology my interest was what incentivizes behavior in people. What was it that inspires genuine desire, as opposed to behavior that still has a purpose, but was more motivated by future outcome? You can make a case that genuine desire is also motivated by a perceived outcome, but in this instance I'm making a distinction between a natural, unsolicited desire as opposed to an incentive based on a preconceived outcome – if all goes according to plan.



This guy broke down in tears with me on occasion. He just couldn't understand why what was *supposed* to work (open communication, honest discourse and rational negotiation) wasn't getting her to “*come around*” to having sex with him. It was then I thought, *you cannot negotiate genuine desire*. Either a woman *wants* to have sex with you or she doesn't. There are definitely ways to prompt that genuine desire — most of which are behavioral and conditional — but attraction/arousal is not a choice. The key word there is *choice*. Few men would *choose* to be attractive to an obese woman, and in many ways this choice dynamic is why women promoting the ‘body acceptance’ narrative have a tough time of it. For all the nonsense about beauty being a social construct, arousal for men is very much rooted in evolved biology. Men can't choose to get an erection for a woman they're simply not aroused by. The same holds true for women, but the conditions are different. Women can, and do, have sex for reasons other than genuine desire. Negotiated desire really isn't desire at all, but women (and female primates) readily use sexual access to achieve needed outcomes. When a woman is necessitous of protection, provisioning and parental investment, her sexuality is her first, best, agency to barter with. You don't have to call it prostitution, but *Sugaring, Sex Work, Gold-Diggers, Seeking Arrangements*, and most marriages today are rooted in a transactional exchange of men's performance for women's sexual access. However, negotiated desire only ever leads to obligated compliance. A talented hooker or stripper may be very convincing in her act that she's really into having sex with a man, but the negotiation that takes place before the act can never make a woman *want* to have sex with her client. Attraction is not a choice, but really, **arousal** is not a choice either.

## Validational Sex

When women look for *Alpha Seed* in their peak ovulatory (proliferative) phase, the sex they seek is a desired sex with a man who meets evolutionary criteria. Physically, he's the '**hawt**' guy, or the man who leaves a woman with a perception of danger or excitement. Men who don't meet this criteria have a tendency to over-exaggerate this type of man as the '***Alpha Cad***' and make a ridiculous parody of him as an ego protection for themselves. Let me state for the record here; every aspect and adjective that defines this type of guy is mitigated by conditions and contexts. It is just as likely this conventionally masculine, dominant male is only so in his most immediate social domain. The sex that women **give** "enthusiastic consent" to is rooted in hindbrain validation. Women have a genuine desire to couple with conventionally masculine men who look, live and act the part. There is a visceral, sexual submission women default to with men they perceive as higher sexual value than themselves. That natural arousal inspires an innate admiration in women. This is a man with a perceived capacity for violence that is both comforting and fearfully arousing at the same time.

If you follow the research on the phenomenon of *Ovulatory Shift*, women will both consciously and unconsciously, put themselves into environments where meeting a dominant male is most likely when they are in *estrus* (the proliferative phase of the ovulatory cycle). Openly and discreetly, women look for arousal cues from men who best embody what can only be described as *Alpha Seed*. It's important to focus on the associative feelings women get in and after having sex with that Alpha man during *estrus*. This is the sex women **want** to have. They are **enthusiastic** in both the *hunt* and the act itself. By today's standards this is the sex that men would like to have with their wives-to-be before and after they marry. It's this *validational* sex — the sex that women fantasize about — that men want to get back to (or experience at all) with their wives once they are committed to monogamy, but now have a *Dead Bedroom*. This sex validates a woman's ego in that it proves to her hindbrain that a man of his sexual caliber would *want* to pin her to the bed and have marathon sex with her. Remember, the latent purpose of this sex, on this side of Hypergamy, is to

access genetic benefits from men with high reproductive value. That sexual experience is the reward women seek. **Validational** sex is sex by choice and genuine desire, and is satisfying for a woman on both a psychological level and a visceral level. It is sex based on strong genuine desire. It is sex for the sake of losing herself in the act, and ultimately reproducing with a confirmed high-value male.

## Transactional Sex

One of the benefits of concealed *estrus* is that it allows women a few instinctual luxuries. One of these was the needed ability to confuse men of their paternity. Today this confusion is a little more difficult because we've got genetic testing figured out well enough to make accurate assessments of paternity. However, in our evolutionary past it was adaptively important to trick cuckolded fathers into second guessing whether a child was his or not before he killed it and then impregnated a woman on his own (this is also why men evolved mate guarding behaviors). The other advantage of concealed estrus was, frankly, prostitution. To pretty this up a bit, let's say that women who were sexual with men outside of their fertility window found that sex could be leveraged with non-Alpha men (men they didn't want to have children with) to encourage them to help with a lot of the chores that Alpha men were less willing (but not entirely unwilling) to do. Enter *transactional* sex.

The most overt form of transactional sex is prostitution, but it's impolite to call every woman a whore. In fact, today it's insulting to imply a woman might have sex for any reason other than the validational sex she enjoys. Women are now contemplating whether or not transactional sex is itself rape since it technically meets the latest definition — any sex women don't (or retroactively didn't) *want* to have. This is “grey area sex”. New order women wrestle with the idea of transactional sex in an era when the *Future is Female*, and women should only ever have the (validational) sex they *want* to enthusiastically have. In a Gynocentric social order, anything less than *enthusiasm*, like the “duty sex” women have been religiously obligated to have with their husbands, now meets the criteria for marital rape.

For most men (80% Beta men) transactional sex is where the rubber meets the road. In fact, I'd argue that for Beta men, transactional sex is the **only** mental framework of sex they ever understand. Most men will never experience the unfettered, feral lust of a woman they've chosen to spend the rest of their lives with. There will always be that part of her she reserves for Alpha men. It's important for men today to acknowledge that

it's likely their wives have shared parts of themselves with, and have lost all inhibitions with, men in their sexual pasts they may never know anything about. That's a cold bucket of reality a lot of men who unplug from all this have to confront at some point. New order marriage is almost entirely predicated on the transactional sex side of Hypergamy. I'm not saying it has to be, nor am I saying it always is, but for most married women sex is a reward she uses in the operant conditioning of her husband. The fact that this is effective with most husbands throws the power dynamic and *Frame* of the relationship firmly over to the wife's interests. This has the effect of disqualifying that man from ever (or very rarely) being a candidate for validational sex within that marriage.

## Unnegotiated Desire

Now, in the new order, we come full circle to the men who *did the right thing* and married a woman according to their conviction (relatively speaking) and as a means to *legitimate* sex. Because all they've ever known was sex in a transactional context their deductive male brains try to solve their "sex problem" in the most logistical and pragmatic way – negotiate with her. If all sex ever is for a guy is a transaction – a quid pro quo – then it follows he'll try to find the best way to 'pay' for his wife's sexual access. If she's not having sex with him, or has no genuine desire for validational sex with him, it's because he hasn't figured out how to make her happier in a qualitative sense. This is where we get into inane qualification tests like ***Choreplay***: the baseless, and consistently disproven, notion that a man doing more domestic chores around the home will rekindle his wife's waning sexual desire for him. The negotiation being that she will find him more desirable for services rendered (washing dishes, changing diapers, etc.). *Choreplay* is just the easiest illustration of this transactional context. One thing I've all seen a lot of from young and old Blue Pill *believing* men is a logical tendency to *want* to '***sacrifice their way to happiness with their wives***'. It's as if the more they sacrifice the more they pay for the intimacy they seek, but what they never get is that this only buries their sex lives that much more.

### ***Women make rules for Betas and break rules for Alphas.***

This *Red Pill* maxim is a keystone in understanding how men fit into women's sexual selection process. When men are socially and religiously acculturated to believe they must qualify for a woman's intimate approval to *win* the prize of her sexuality it positions him as a Beta male in her hindbrain. While all men have a *Burden of Performance*, this qualification for women's sexuality after the commitment of marriage keeps him in a perpetual state of servitude. As such, the modern state of sex in marriage becomes a lifetime of husbands trying to appease their wives' secularized sensibilities that have now become part of her belief set. "She's the boss, she

makes the rules” and “Happy wife happy life” become the outward declarations of men who’ve accepted the transactional nature of their marriage. Most of them never know any other context.

One amazing turnaround married and single *Red Pill* guys experience when they first unplug is the attention they receive from women when they switch from a transactional disposition to a validational disposition with regard to sex. When a man cuts himself away from his Blue Pill conditioning he makes a shift from viewing sex as transactional to validational. When men are first learning formal Game, and becoming more aware of women’s nature they don’t recognize this shift in attitude towards sex. When I say men need to make themselves the “prize” with regards to sex, what happens is they go from the “*how can I pay for sex to qualify for it with a woman*” to “*women recognize that I represent an opportunity for validational sex*”. The Blue Pill conditions men to base their understanding of sex on a transactional paradigm. It’s all scarcity, and luck or **divine providence** that any woman would *want* to have sex with them. This is why women get aggravated by the presumption that men might feel they are *owed sex* in exchange for what they do for them. *Owed sex* is an obligation to transactional sex with a Beta male – and that obligation grates against women’s existential fear of breeding with a suboptimal man.

And why wouldn’t men feel that they need to *earn* a woman’s sexuality? They’ve been conditioned for a lifetime to believe the *righteous thing to do* is follow the old social contract and become a man with a lot to offer a woman who’d be a wife. The only side of Hypergamy they know is the *Beta Bucks* provisioning side. Prospects, potential, provisioning, long term security interests is what *should* make her hot for him, right? This is the transactional paradigm; I build my life to better accommodate a woman and she reciprocates with sex. Women know this too, so all pretenses of indignation about it are complete *schadenfreude*. What upsets women is that a Beta man, the one they settled for in marriage, would feel entitled to her sexuality for having accommodated her. Only Alpha men *are* entitled to her sexuality, accommodations be damned, because he’s the man they *want* to have sex with. But that entitlement to her sexuality is written into the Holy texts she’s beholden to by religious conviction. That’s problematic in a new order religion that prioritizes her experiences and empowerment above all else.

***You cannot negotiate genuine desire. Negotiated desire only leads to obligated compliance.***

This quote is something I've been repeating for as long as I've been writing in this sphere. Genuine desire is something of an enigma in *Red Pill* awareness. Desire goes beyond the context of sex; it becomes a question of motivation, incentive, biological impulse and *freewill*. Biblically, women are supposed to submit to their husbands authority and not deny him her sexuality. As a *believer* women are **obligated** to have sex with their husbands. This is a staple in the Abrahamic religions, but the obligation of sex with a husband extends to other cultural norms of marriage throughout history. To deny "duty sex" to a husband was a sin in most patriarchal religions. In ancient Rome a wife could be put to death for denying her husband conjugal relations.

In a Gynocentric social order, scripturally reinterpreting genuine desire versus obligated compliance was the first order of business in restructuring these religions. With the systematic removal of men's authority in marriage, women would no longer be required by God to have sex with a husband on demand. He had to earn it. If a wife wasn't *enthusiastic* about sex with her husband, if she was *unhaaaapy* with him, then her holding out on him was simply a sign that he wasn't measuring up to what God expected of him. A transactional paradigm of sex became what God intended for *believing* men to adhere to. This performance-based negotiated sex within marriage was embraced with gusto by the men in new order church culture. Today it's become a marketing tactic for seed-churches to include workshops for men to become better husbands by finding innovative ways to please their wives so as to restart the sex spigot she turned off because God is displeased with him. Thus, the popular concept becomes — both in the secular and religious sense — wives **hate** sex.

I am amazed that today's Christians manage to reproduce at all.

What guy signs up for this arrangement? It is only the thoroughly Blue Pill conditioned *believing* male who adopts it as his moral duty to placate to his wife's whims to ensure his ever putting his penis in his wife's begrudging vagina. You will never dislodge the feminist saturation in mainstream religion today. Any attempt by men to use scripture (of any holy



book) to build their case that wives need to submit sexually to their husbands will always be met with accusations of twisting scripture to manipulate a wife's spirituality into what essentially amounts to marital rape. The fact that a man would seek to convince his wife that his interpretation of scripture makes wives accountable to the sexual appetites of husbands is itself suspect of sexual manipulation – which is ironically what wives do when they withhold sex for strategic reasons.

By this definition, a *believing* man is only ever a Beta male. The measure of his conviction is founded on a willingness to serve and obey. The modern believer is expected to rely on faith and performance to solve his very human reproductive problem. Therefore *believing* men fall into a transactional mindset based on necessitousness and scarcity when it comes to their understanding of women's nature. And that understanding is steeped in the rapidly secularizing feminine-correctness made *Kosher* by their religions. *Strategic Pluralism Theory* then becomes the only approved sexual strategy for *believing* men. Their faith, their conviction, by necessity makes them the men for whom women **make rules** in order to access their sexuality.

While *50 Shades of Grey* cast an unflattering light on it, few religious men ever understand the sexual natures of their wives. While I might not endorse overt Dread for *believing* men I would advise they become more aware of the opportunities that concept of passive Dread represents in their marriages. Most *believing* men (which is to say 90%+) will proactively try to diffuse the sexual anxiety, tension and urgency necessary to inspire the 'genuine desire', validational sex that would serve to bolster a failing marriage. They believe the pro-feminine lie that rapport, comfort and familiarity is what leads to sexual desire, so they make every attempt to convince their wives that they have no need to worry or feel insecure that any other woman would want them sexually, much less appreciate them for being 'good men'. In fact, to suggest or have it suggested that they might be attractive to another woman is antithetical to the necessitousness that their marriages were formed upon. What they fail to grasp is that passionate sex inspired by genuine desire is the *result* of insecurity, anxiety and sexual tension. Most Christian men are conditioned to bypass this phase in seducing their wives, thinking that comfort and security are what will prompt her to be more sexual, but in doing so they kill the *vibe* before it can

build. Comfort and rapport are post-orgasm, oxytocin effects, but *believing* men believe they are prerequisites for legitimate sex. They are deathly afraid to embrace, much less exaggerate, the uncertainty, spontaneity, anxiety and tension women need to feel sexual urgency.

You make sex another chore for a woman when you negotiate for her desire. Genuine desire **cannot** be negotiated. If you find yourself in a sexless (or passionless sex) relationship with your wife you need to embrace using passive dread opportunities to prompt her imagination. Make your wife unintentionally uncomfortable. Sexuality is spontaneous chemical reaction between two parties, not a process of negotiation. By its very nature passionate, desired sex is a result of being *uncomfortable*, uncertain and urgent. It might be an uncomfortable truth to most Christian men, but the best, most memorable, married sex you have won't be the result of a pre-planned "Date Night" where you stage manage every event and nuance in advance — it will be the rough, hard-core, make-up sex you never thought you'd have after a near breakup inspired by the anxiety of the thought of never having you around anymore.

## Intra-sexual Combat

Outside of the marriage market, the conflict between the sexual ideals of *believing* men has become a sort of escalating arms race with *Red Pill* aware men. When Beta men shame women for wanting to have sex with Alpha men it has the effect of making those Beta men seem more insecure. In a feminine-primary social order one of the highest crimes is to attempt to challenge Hypergamy in any way. In a religious context, to challenge Hypergamy is to be guilty of ***repressing women's sexuality*** — something female-correct reinterpreted religions never want to be aligned with. Just this impression is conflated with ‘toxic’ masculinity. In truth, it would never occur to most low SMV men to shame women for their sexual strategy because they know that in doing so they reduce their own chances of reproduction. Women simply deem them ‘losers’ in the *SMP* (*sexual marketplace*). They become scolds, or worse, they become men who are “*insecure in their masculinity*” because they confirm their low SMV status in doing so.

In today's socio-sexual environment men policing women's Hypergamy is a lost cause. The solution then becomes an effort to disqualify the Alpha men they compete with by changing the rules that “***real men***” are supposed to play by. If you can't win the game, change the rules to better fit your strengths. In order for Beta men to effect this reigning-in of the Alpha men women want to tame and breed with, that high-value man must be demonized and disqualified from the sexual marketplace (SMP) for following his innate sexual/biological imperatives. The most common way to do this is by conflating his strategy with a degenerate hedonism. He must be made to seem as if he lacks control over his sexual nature. So the effort becomes one of building a caricature around the ‘*Playah*’ or the PUA (Pickup Artist) – A man who would be a bad long term bet for women's long-term strategy because he lacks *self-control*. Low SMV men have many contrivances to corral uncooperative Alphas to adopt their sexual strategy.

However, there's also a necessity to convince themselves that their Blue Pill conditioning is the best (*God approved*) sexual strategy that would benefit everyone if we'd all just see its validity as they do. To effect this they

apply a subjective, ephemeral, “*meaningfulness*” to their enforced monogamy and “meaninglessness” to sex that pursues men’s biological imperatives. The result is low SMV men tend to deemphasize the importance sex should have in a man’s life. Why is there a perception that a man who enjoys many women is somehow having sex that is less ‘meaningful’ than a man whose sex life is dependent on his relationship with one woman, or a man who is ostensibly celibate? The tactic involved here is the control over what constitutes meaning in sex. Low SMV men need this control to direct a *Social Framework* that foment their sexual strategy. Sex is only valid if it’s ‘meaningful’ in a way that aligns with an enforced monogamy sexual strategy. Thus, they can disqualify high-SMV men by delegitimizing his sexual experience. The higher the notch count, the less meaningful the sexual experience, and the likelier he can be seen as “*obsessed*” with (meaningless) sex. “*Meaning*” is deliberately ambiguous — a container word — to better salve the egos of low SMV men, but meaning only aligns with what better promotes the enforced monogamy strategy. This strategy conflict actually serves Hypergamy in the long run as well. Women will endorse the importance of meaningful sex since it helps to convince the **r** selected Alphas that they should (eventually) shift to a **K** selected commitment and parental investment with them. To the Beta moralist, any sex that doesn’t implicitly lead to marriage, children and the formation of families it’s always ‘meaningless’. Some Trad-Cons consider *any* recreational sex a “drug addiction.”

For this straw man character having *meaningless* sex, his *little head does the thinking for the big head* making him unreliable as a prospect for parental investment. Remember, the transactional side of Hypergamy, – the need for long term security – is *all* the Trad-Con ideal thinks women’s selection qualifications are about. If enforced monogamy defines the accepted SMP, and women are presumed by the social order to be coequal, co-rational participants in it, the ‘*Playah*’ needs to be cast as the outsider. The latent message is the same intra-sexual combat method women use with ‘*slut shaming*’ other women; the ‘*Playah*’ is a bad bet for long term security even if he is the guy women want to couple with. However, that *Playboy* is a cruel reminder to low SMV men that they’ll never be able to fully exercise their own masculine imperative – unlimited access to unlimited sexuality. The closest the majority of men will ever get to this is online porn; which of

course is why it's so popular. There is a reason why **68% of Christian men watch porn.**<sup>6</sup> They understand that it's the only virtual substitute for their sexual imperative that they're likely to experience in this lifetime.

## Pornographiti

### *Why are so many believing men struggling with pornography 'addictions'?*

When I describe the male biological imperative I tend to get a lot of pushback from 'higher minded' men. When I explain that, unhindered by women's filtering, men's mating strategy defaults to unlimited access to unlimited sexuality, guys naturally want to avoid the characterization that follows. Am I suggesting men are just walking erections, eager to nail any girl available, and border on potential rapists? Militant feminists love to run with that last part. This reflexive response is the binary extreme most guys default to. I mean, it's a bad look, right? It's counterintuitive for guys whose primary mating strategy centers on building a character around self-control and an ability to satisfy women's needs of provisioning, protection and parental investment. When your best bet for solving your reproductive problem rests on presenting the idea that you're dependable, loyal and emotionally invested in one woman, it's just bad press for other men to give women the impression that all *men are dawgs*.

That's just it; any male expressions of sexuality in the *#MeToo* era border on criminal, but in the *old order* men were conditioned to have self-control over these impulses. And rightly so. Our ancestors knew the antisocial (often violent) consequences of men's unrestrained sexual imperatives. This social conditioning was so important that it was wrapped up into the *metaphorical truths* of religious doctrine. The biological truth is that men's sexuality is set to '*always-on*'. In our ancestral past it just made sense for a man to be ready to *get after it* on a moment's notice. The euphemism, *Ejaculate and Evacuate* aptly sums up this survival adaptation. While an Alpha male might invest himself in one or two primary mothers of his offspring, spreading the seed is the more prolific way of ensuring his progeny advance into future generations. And if you can get dutiful Beta males to believe it's their God-spoken duty to take care of those kids, then it's all the better.

In scientific terms this is an *r* selection mating strategy; mate more, invest less. Consider the personage of (arguably) the greatest Alpha male in human history – **Genghis Khan**, who, it's been proven, 1 in every 200 men are direct descendants of.<sup>7</sup> Granted, it's likely that great-grandfather *Genghis* didn't woo or court the majority of his sexual conquests, but from a strictly evolutionary perspective he proves the point — removed from all social restraints, unlimited access to unlimited sexuality *always* beats strategic pluralism as a mating strategy for men. Hit it and quit it. Impregnate and let a Beta male parentally invest himself in his offspring in exchange for some sexual access from the (single) mother. Almost all higher primates have some variation of this mating methodology.

The greatest danger in exercising this strategy came from mate-guarding, and kin-guarding, males who had their own genetic interests in killing an out-group male attempting to *Ejaculate and Evacuate* with one of their kin-bonded/pair-bonded baby incubators. Thus, speed and efficiency in mating became key to *spreading the seed* with extra-paired or out-group females. If you've ever wondered where the idea that men are *visual when it comes to sex* came from, look no further than our evolved need to copulate as expediently, and as discreetly as possible. The males who didn't often died. Men can get an erection with the slightest brush of arousal, and our brains naturally objectify women as sex objects. For all the kvetching about the sexual objectification of women, when men see the sight of a half-naked woman it stimulates the parts our brains associated with tool-use.<sup>8</sup> We see women as parts before we see the whole, and we assess reproductive viability within seconds of viewing a new woman. Whether you adhere to evolution, or it's just the way our creator built us, those are the facts. Men's instant arousal was an evolved necessity to expedite reproduction, and women's Hypergamous filtering (feminine intuition) was a countermeasure to sort the dads from the cads.

Celibacy and monogamy are the antithesis to this evolved order. That's not a judgement call, it's simply an analysis of our condition. Human beings are innately promiscuous, but we are monogamous by necessity. Mystifying sex is often a rationale for reproductive failure. The reason why pornography is so endemic in the digital age is because it, virtually, solves men's basest reproductive instinct – literally, unlimited access to unlimited

sexuality. This instinct is part of men's evolved mental firmware. Can we overcome or suppress that firmware? Absolutely. Just as we can override our survival imperatives by self-starvation or even suicide, we train ourselves to repress our sexual natures to adapt to pro-social cooperation all the time. The problem men have with porn today is that we have no historical precedent for this kind of virtual access to unlimited sexuality. The social buffers were erased by the Sexual Revolution and decades of a radically changed intersexual dynamic between men and women. Magazines, on-screen movies, soft-core to hardcore, VHS tapes, adult cable channels, and then came the internet to revolutionize the distribution of pornography. In the new order an average 9-year-old boy with a smart phone has instant (virtual) access to a sexuality that used to be reserved for Kings and Emperors of the past. Even the harems of the *Forbidden City* in dynastic China, or the orgies of *Caligula's* Rome, don't compare to the global access to free, streaming, high-definition porn that a western teenager can view today. Sex without the hindrance, danger or merit inherent in getting sex in the past is ubiquitous to the last 4 generations of men.

We can hardly remember a time when sexual frustration meant actually doing something to get to sex. As I mentioned in the last chapter, marriage used to be the prime-motivator for men to make something more of themselves in order to get to sexual access. It's been argued that a majority of men's technological advances were motivated by the need to adapt to sexual frustration. *Freud* once said "*All energy is sexual*"; we get creative, innovative and industrious as a means of solving our reproductive problem. I would argue that men's innately idealistic nature is the natural extension of our biological sexual imperatives. We want sex with beautiful enthusiastic women who want to have sex with us. The latent purpose of that drive is making more babies, but the immediate desire is an idealized sexual experience. Today, that sexual experience can be had virtually, at any moment, with no investment of creativity, innovation or industry.

This is what pornography represents in the 21<sup>st</sup> century. It has become a very effective form sedation for a majority of men. These are the 80% *Beta* men who would likely only ever experience transactional sex with women, or invest themselves in *Strategic Pluralism* mating strategies to marry or reproduce. This poses an enormous problem for a globalizing civilization as



it imbalances the base motivation (sexual experience) necessary to drive men – specifically low SMV men – to create and innovate. This is further compounded by generations of women who believe they have no real need for exactly these men, and are primarily interested in short-term sexual experiences with the elite Alpha men Gynocentrism says they're entitled to.

Men's sexual imperatives have always been our most obvious, most predictable *thumbscrew*. Great men are brought low by just the suggestion that they lack sexual self-control. Today, we hold men to a much higher standard of sexual fidelity and control than we do women. Prior to the Sexual Revolution it was women who'd get the *Scarlet Letter* or bring shame on their families for an illegitimate child. In the new order it's men who have their lives *cancelled* for just the suspicion of sexual harassment. Pornography is a low risk sexual salve against men's personal destruction in this kind of social environment. The usefulness of this *thumbscrew* wasn't lost on organized religion. While being the gatekeepers of the afterlife might be useful in the grander scheme of things, being the gatekeepers of solving men's reproductive problem (legitimately) in the now is much more practical.

*“Booty is so strong that there are dudes willing to blow themselves up for the highly unlikely possibility of booty in another dimension. There are no chicks willing to blow themselves up for a penis.”*

— Joe Rogan

Before I go on, let me clarify a misgiving here for my Muslim readers. In my research for this book, nowhere was I able to find a passage in the Quran that stated Muslim men would receive 72 virgins in paradise in exchange for their suicidal martyrdom. Heaven in the Islamic faith does not include 72 wide-eyed virgin pornstars. In fact, the number ‘72’ does not appear anywhere in the Quran. That said, holding the divinely-approved access to *legitimate* sex, especially for hormone-steeped young men, is a powerful incentive for getting them to do what you want them to do. For the 80% Beta men, who would otherwise not be selected as sexual partners for women, sex is already a mystical prospect. We pray to the *great spirit* to bring us a wife – ostensibly for prosperity and children, but mostly, we

*realllly* want to get after it. Tribally, culturally and religiously, encouraging the flock to be fruitful and multiply while ostensibly holding the keys to solving men's' reproductive problem has been a cornerstone of civilization.

This isn't much of a revelation; sex sells, sex motivates and the methods men will employ to get sex are both innate and learned. Next to the insurance of an afterlife, an insurance of legitimate access to sex is the strongest incentive for spiritual *belief*. Even staunch Atheists still cling to the *romantic ideal*, the *Soulmate Myth* and usually some inherent unknowability of women courtesy of the *Feminine Mystique*. There is some inborn desire in men's' idealistic nature that predisposes us to apply some bit of magical thinking to women. It's why men call getting laid, "*Getting Lucky*." If it's not *God* that brought them to the chemical rush of a romantic encounter then fate, chance or luck will certainly support the *magic* associated with it. When 80% of men live in a state of sexual scarcity a *chance* sexual/romantic encounter with a willing woman can seem like an act of God or rare good fortune. For some reason we just don't want to spoil the magic for ourselves. It's likely this is due to an evolutionary need for pair-bonding and parental investment. Most *Involuntary Celibate* (Incels) men aren't seeking a sexual experience when they obsess over the latest *Cam Girl* on the internet. In fact, there's really no such thing as an *Incel* — a guy with \$100 in his pocket can easily pay for *actual* sex today — but what they seek is a connection with a woman that can only come from genuine desire. They seek that same *magic* of a woman's genuine interest in them – and they're willing to pay small fortunes just for the simulation of that genuine appreciation of them. Pray for it or pay for it, the motive impulse is still the same.

With the advent of hormonal birth-control (another innovation prompted by men's sexual impulse) and the Sexual Revolution, this motivating force of intersexual social dynamics has been, or is being, effectively erased. As women became more empowered in western societies this prompted the disempowerment of the men in terms of their influence on the direction human reproduction. In this era Gynocentrism and feminism have inspired one of the most effective eugenics system the world has ever known. When the *Beta Need* side of the Hypergamous equation is relatively solved for women by the social order, what they focus on is the *Alpha Seed* side. The continuing integrity of Gynocentrism necessitates a majority of low-value

*Beta* men be placated and sedated by various distractions lest that pent up motive force of sexual frustration lead the *reproductive losers* to become antisocial. Chief amongst these distractions is ubiquitous, free, streaming online pornography.

### **Porn is sedation for men in the new order.**

As of this writing, 75% of the American population is overweight or obese. Primarily this is attributable to the easy access to high calorie food we enjoy today. We no longer need to hunt, gather or otherwise work for a delicious meal, nor do we worry about predatory animals hunting us while we get a burger. For most of the first-world sustenance is easily had, but our physiologies are still the same ones we evolved into from the Paleolithic era forward. Modern food convenience becomes a liability to our survival-honed biologies and we get fatter every year as a result. Pornography is a similar *fast food* in this respect, and overwhelming so to the reproductive *losers* who find themselves being sexually satiated by it. There are too many studies, both inconclusive and convincing, to mention in this book which indicate that continual exposure to convenient hardcore pornography changes men's innate sexual response. Some go as far as to claim that porn "rewires men's brains" and demotivates them to seek out actual physical sex, or destroys their sexual response with their sexually inadequate wives. At this point the jury is still out with respect to the *rewiring* part, but it's no surprise that convenient hardcore porn is a far more preferable virtual experience for men today than dealing with women's hubris and entitlement issues to get to actual sex. And that *actual sex* that is likely to be mitigated by transaction/performance/service rather than based on genuine desire. Porn never gets a headache, and the variety is endless. As such, the easy escapism of online porn becomes preferable to the reality of becoming what men believe is necessary for them to be genuinely, sexually, desirable to women in the new order. Call it "addiction" if you must, but it certainly develops into a habit — and as **St. Augustine** said, "*Habit, if not resisted, soon becomes necessity.*"

Although all major religions have historically built doctrines around buffering sexual impulse and expression, today's gynocentric religion has

made shaming men for their sexual “addictions” a very profitable social convention. In fact, pornography is synonymous with the word “addiction” in church culture today. Twenty years ago, when addiction was mentioned in a sermon it could’ve meant alcoholism or drug abuse. Today, just the casual mention of *addiction* covertly means pornography and men’s’ lack of self-control with it. Savvy pastors *know* the few men remaining in the seats are at least 68% likely to be “struggling with porn”. They form men’s groups based on overcoming porn. Even online men’s *gurus* in the Hustle Economy have picked up on this masturbatory shame. They offer solutions of *NoFap* (no masturbation) or *Semen Retention* programs to help men get back to their *Godly* inner masculinity. Both the religious and nonreligious rely on the same *magical* thinking men often apply to coping with solving their reproductive problem. Stop playing with yourself to gain access to mystical *Chi* powers or something. Where in the *old order* access to sex was a prime-motivator for controlling men, in the new Gynocentric order pathologizing the male sex response is a more effective form of control.

Personally, I think the ‘moral’ dictates about sex follows evolutionarily pragmatic reasons for male shame in masturbation. Female masturbation is an arousal cue and seen as a positive. Female masturbation is a cue for sexual availability while male masturbation is essentially a shameful *Beta Tell*. That’s the nuts and bolts of it from the evo-bio perspective, but as with all other inherently male *thumbscrews*, the Feminine Imperative has long exploited the sociological implications of men’s need for sex. One thing that slips by relatively unnoticed is that the same presumptions that would serve a masculine (in this case sexual) imperative are always shamed or stereotyped – that is until they come into a context that *is* useful to the feminine.

## Sex Sells What?

“Sex sells” is a cliché that can be used in the positive for women, but it is always a negative for men. For women, ***sold*** sex in advertising, romantic literature, the meteoric popularity of ‘*divorce porn*’ (*Eat. Pray, Love*) for married women, or any media that stimulates women’s sexual interests, is always seen as positive, empowering and transforming. Remember the popularity of *50 Shades of Grey*? Even if what they’re being sold is seedy or has potentially negative consequences, in a feminine-primary social order women ‘**own**’ sex in a social perspective. In other words, society at large is expected to defer to women on issues of sex and, by association, romance, love, dating, relationships, etc. It’s one reason pastors will drag their wives on stage with them when delivering a message about sex, dating or intersexual topics. They instinctively know they need a female overseer to endorse (make *Kosher*) any man claiming to speak on behalf of God when it comes to these topics.

Women can still be *sold* something. Whether induced to buy a product or to adopt a mindset, the article or the message that’s meant to be internalized is associated with the ‘positive’ of a sexual inference with women. Women’s only *real* agency in life is her sexuality; it’s why women’s reflexively strip naked when they want to ensure everyone will pay attention to their messages. So, the associations of sex with power is a natural fit for women. For men, male sexuality is always a negative association unless that sexuality is expressed in a way that complements women’s sexual strategy. Something being sold via sex to men is either seen as preying upon an inherent weakness (or dependency) for sex, or it’s paired with ridicule for men being typical ‘*pigs*’, unable to dissociate sex from the objectification of women. So ingrained is this shame-association that men have adapted sexual competition strategies around it in order to identify better with women in the hopes they will be perceived as “*not like other, typical, sex hungry men*”, and that their intimate interests are motivated by something more ephemeral, Godly or ***meaningful*** than sex.

There are no feminine parallels in pathologizing the female sex response because those would simply be hindrances to women optimizing their

Hypergamous imperatives. Why are there no “*yourbrainonporn.com*” websites for women? Why are there no **XXXChurch** equivalents for the ladies? Why are there no support groups for women ‘addicted’ to social media or divorce porn movies? Because pathologizing the male response is beneficial to the female sexual strategy. This is the depth of control that the female-primary imperative seeks over men. Our most base biological, existential need should be distorted and psychologically molded by shame to the point of instilling lifelong neurosis and conditioning fear-based gender self-loathing to effect women’s sexual strategy above all other considerations. The *Cardinal Rule of Sexual Strategies*: for one sex’s strategy to succeed the other’s must either be compromised or abandoned. Whether subtly instilled or publicly shame-conditioned, associating men’s sexuality with sickness or perversion, weakness, and disability, the underlying purpose is an effort in convincing men to abandon any claim to their own sexual imperative in favor of women’s imperatives.

## Alpha Widows and Premarital Sex

Odd as this may seem, I'm totally in favor of *no sex before marriage*. I can also see the merit in prearranged marriages where the parents involved are invested in the wellbeing of their son or daughter. From a *Red Pill* perspective, if you understand the interplay between the nature of men and women's sexual strategies, then restricting men and women from sexual intercourse before a formal, committed, relationship is established makes perfect sense. The ideal of a virgin bride works in men's strategic interests in the long term. The *Existential Fear* for men is to be cuckolded. If a man's biological imperative is unlimited access to unlimited sexuality, then pair-bonding with a woman to invest in offspring represents a huge opportunity cost risk. If that woman tricks him into investing in a child that's not his own, not only does he waste his resource investments, he wastes his opportunity to breed with more women. Paternity is a root level, evolutionary imperative for men. It's why we mate guard, it's why we feel jealousy, and it's why we get suspicious when wives want permission to go on a *Girls' Night Out* in Las Vegas. It's also why we feel a natural revulsion for the *slut*, the whore or the single mother. All represent bad bets for certainty of paternity. The men of our ancestral past who got jealous, who innately mate guarded, who were more possessive of their mates, sent their genes on to the next generations. Those instincts worked for men as failsafes against women's promiscuity when opportunity costs meant perpetuating a man's genetic legacy.

From the female side, religious mandates against premarital sex meant that men could be relatively assured that the child they bore for a husband was his own. This is made all the better when our *Father God* is the one commanding women to remain virgins. In fact, the "*Unblemished virgin bride of Christ*" is how the early church was ideally described. In a religion by men, for men, women prioritizing men's biological imperatives were highly prized. Islam and Judaism also have similar value of virgin women and the patriarchal balance of masculine responsibility and authority. Primarily the *Virginic Ideal* was about men seeking assurances of paternity throughout all the ages prior to the advent of DNA testing — but there was a

*Red Pill* follow-on effect that I can't imagine any of the wise men of antiquity could've appreciated when considering female nature. That is the *Alpha Widow* effect.

Women's promiscuity, demonized as it is, isn't random or capricious. Hypergamy is nothing if not pragmatic, and despite religious or social restraints women's innate mating strategy is always seeking to optimize *Genetic Benefits* with *Long Term Security* in men. Hypergamy never seeks its own level. Hypergamy doesn't care about how that optimization happens, only that it does. From a moralistic perspective this reproductive pragmatism can seem ruthless to men (and women) who would singularly idealize a woman as being central to their own mating strategy. In the new order we have the data to prove that women who have more non-marital sexual partners are<sup>9</sup>:

- Less likely to have stable marriages
- More likely to suffer from depression
- More likely to be infected with a sexually transmitted disease
- Less likely to be "Happy"

That last point is important to note. The data shows there is an inverse relationship between *personal happiness* and the number of lifetime sexual partners a woman has before marriage. The greater the number of non-marital sex partners, the lower the probability of *personal happiness*. Only 37% of women with five non-marital partners report being "very happy". In contrast, over 80% of women who never had a non-marital sex partner were in *stable marriages*. [CDC National Center for Health Statistics]. Granted, with any survey of sexual behavior the data relies on self-reporting, but as an indicator we can see that *no sex before marriage* has a significant effect on women's long term psychological and physiological health. In *Red Pill* perspective this coincides with what's known as the *Alpha Widow* dynamic: the more sexual partners a woman has in her past the likelier she's formed an *Alpha* imprint on one or more of them.

Hypergamy is fundamentally based on doubt, and that hindbrain doubt asks women one question – "*Is he the best I can do?*" – and that doubt is always comparing options (real or imagined). Women tend to *imprint* on the



most dominant male they know or are attracted to. A woman's sexual past is not so much a numbers game as it is an *Alpha* impact game. "*The One that got away*", a woman's real "*Soulmate*" or just the guy that rocked her world sexually, is usually the most Alpha man she's experienced intimately. When a woman misses the opportunity to consolidate on a confirmed, high-value male that man becomes the new standard for what she believes she can attract as a potential mate. Even if a woman's perception of her own SMV isn't realistic her *Id* wants what it believes it can get – and in the new order, gynocentrism tells her only the *best* is what she's entitled to. This qualification process is a constant for women, and it's a complement to men's' *Burden of Performance*. Women's Hypergamous filtering process evolved from their *Existential Fear* of pairing with any man beneath her own (self-perceived) SMV and potentially risking her life on a bad reproductive bet. The worst existential prospect for a woman is to have her mating strategy superseded and controlled by that of a suboptimal man. And in the age of ridiculous, incompetent and potentially abusive men that's virtually *all* of them. This is the root reason why women obsessively seek unilateral control of the reproductive process (to their mating strategy's advantage) whenever they are afforded power.

This then is the basis of the *Alpha Widow*:

*A woman's mental fixation on the man who made the most significant impact on her as the Hypergamous ideal.*

Evolutionarily, a woman's subconscious cannot afford to miss out on an optimal Hypergamous pairing. If a woman's *Existential Fear* is to be forced to reproduce with a lesser man, the next fear is to lose or miss out on the opportunity to consolidate on monogamy with a high-value man. When I talk about how a woman will make rules for *Betas*, but break rules for *Alphas* this is the root of that principle. A man who exceeds a woman's SMV creates a benchmark of her '*personal best*' ideal male to breed with and parentally invest with. This makes a significant impact on her psyche; sometimes in the long term. When a woman *has* had this man – one for whom she has genuine, organic desire for – but she cannot consolidate on him (i.e. lock down in monogamy), this represents a critical loss of the ideal

Hypergamous/Reproductive/Life strategy option. Mentally this is what a woman will strive in some way to recreate with subsequent men in her life – a return to that ideal state. This is why the idea of *settling* on *Mr. Good Enough* for marriage is so abhorrent to women today. They believe they are *entitled* to Hypergamous optimization. It is also why *Divorce Porn* fantasies for married women are so seductive. The *Eat, Pray, Love* narrative targets exactly this, “*Is he the best I can do?*” Hypergamous doubt in women who *settled* on the *wrong* guy.

In the new order it has never been easier for a women to explore their reproductive options with an ever-increasing pool of potential *Alphas* from which to be *widowed* from. Since the Sexual Revolution western cultures have done little else than facilitate women’s mating strategy. In terms of “*sexual liberation*” the goal has always been to ensure provisioning and support in order to give women the impression that they have an indefinite window of time in which to find their optimal *Alpha* man. We see this reflected in the age of first marriages getting increasingly older. In the age of social media women take for granted the lie that they can remain sexually viable if not indefinitely, then at least as long as a man would. This exacerbates the *Alpha Widow* effect; and subsequently women experience higher levels of dissatisfaction and discontent in their marriages, their sex lives, and their impression of men on whole. Antidepressant drug prescription is rampant among women, and while I correlation is not causation, a line can be traced from the levels of clinical depression among women directly to the consequences of the *sexual liberation* women hold today.

I should add here that the *romantic ideal* concept of a **soulmate** began with women pining for their bygone ideal man. That ‘*One*’ is much easier to justify cheating with, or agonizing over, if you mix in the metaphysical to aid in rationalizing it. The popularity of *Fifty Shades of Grey* and *Eat, Pray, Love* find their root in the *Alpha Widow* dynamic. Popular culture tells women they are entitled to that metaphysical soulmate; and the only way they can remain *true to themselves*, the only way to live their best lives — the life they believe God ordained for them — is to pursue the ‘*One that got away*.’ In the new, Gynocentric, social order women rely on religion, the metaphysical and appeals to emotionalism to justify the now-unrestricted motives that prompt them to sexual indiscretions. The old restrictive social

buffers of religion and social stigma that used to prevent the worst consequences of women's sexual strategy have been replaced with *spiritual* rationales to explain women's lack of judgement. Not all women turn into *Alpha Widows*. All women are Hypergamous, but buffers and learned self-control have historically been the checks and balances needed to protect against this *Alpha Widow* dynamic, for the good of both men and women's reproductive interests. The problem is that these buffers are popularly considered sexual repression of women today. Women simply won't police the worst aspects of their mating strategy. **Any** interference, personal, political or social, that would prevent a woman from exercising her Hypergamous sexuality is viewed as misogynist, antiquated, sexist repression.

Statistically women with more sexual partners have a higher incidence of divorce and find it more difficult to form healthy attachments in long-term relationships based on their partner count. Men do not appear to follow these stats or dynamics, why? Because men and women have different evolved mating strategies and priorities. Men, it appears, have a much easier time compartmentalizing the sex act and separating it from the emotional aspect women innately, necessarily, apply to sexual selection. Men's obsession with pornography is a good illustration of this, but it is reflective of the differences in our evolved mating strategies developed in our ancestral past. Men found it necessary to breed quickly and then move out – *ejaculate and evacuate*. However, in a social order where Hypergamy is unbuffered women have more access to more men and have more opportunities to be *imprinted* on by *Alpha* men while in their peak fertility years than in any prior era. This abundance of reproductive opportunities is unprecedented in human history; and a lack of any social stigma or moral reservations are putting women into a position where their Blue Pill, *Mr. Good Enough* husbands turn their denial into hate for the '*Alphas*' who violated and ruined their '*soulmate*' before he came into her life. What they refuse to acknowledge is that, in most cases, his girl eagerly chose to give herself sexually to the man she told her husband was an '*Alpha Jerk*' from her past. *Believing* married men have the hardest time accepting the idea that their wives may be *Alpha Widows* for the man that came before them. They either agonize with the possibility their wives gave a part of themselves to a guy that they'll never experience, or they try to "Pray it all away", so denial or

anger becomes their ego's protection. They throw shade at the men who have the Game to seduce women (who enjoy the seduction as well) because they “*ruin women for great guys like him*”. Thus, they turn it into a moral issue for those men, or it's a personality flaw because it absolves their wives of their modern mating choices.

In the context of *metaphorical truth* it makes good social and evolutionary sense that men and women believe God mandates they behave as if all men are worthless cads and all women will cuckold unwary “fathers”. Historically speaking, organized patriarchal religion got it right. Religiously mandated, socially enforced, monogamy was a balancing force in human civilization. Ideally, the convention of monogamous commitment (marriage) ensured a compromise of mating strategy imperatives:

- Parental investment of both sexes
- Paternity interests of men and a failsafe against cuckolding
- Provisioning and protection for women and children
- Sexual access contingent upon mutual spiritual beliefs
- Relative happiness contingent upon these beliefs
- Psychological and physiological health as a result of temperance

However, these benefits also came with the compromise of the inherent benefits a man or woman might gain through their base sexual strategies. In the *Cardinal Rule of Mating Strategies* for one sex to fulfill their strategy the other must compromise or abandon their own. Until the Sexual Revolution, socially enforced monogamy has been the best compromise between men and women's strategies. Unlimited access to unlimited sexuality carries a lot of downside consequences for incautious men in the long term. However, in the short term, spreading the seed is a more efficient strategy for male reproduction. The compromise is sacrificing the opportunity cost of unlimited sexual access for assurances of paternity with one woman (or fewer women) in the long term. While he bore responsibility for the care of those children, he had the authority to enact the decisions needed to effect that responsibility. In the new order all pretense of compromise is gone. Men are simply expected to abandon any claim to their

sexual imperatives or strategy. And Beta men will shame themselves for even suggesting their imperatives be considered.

Likewise, unfettered Hypergamy for women carries a lot of life-damaging prospects for incautious women. The compromise for women is sacrificing a measure of sexual selection over to men and risking Hypergamous optimization in exchange for assurances of long term protection, provisioning and parental investment so long as she upholds her end of the compromise by only bearing his children and ensuring his paternity. This is was an excellent exchange in prior eras when women's need for long term security was set against her sexual agency that would decay as she got older. This is lost on the women of the past four generations. Gynocentrism would rather convince women (and men) that women's sexual agency is evergreen and entirely a social construct than accept that our biological imperatives drive the sexual marketplace.

It's easy to think of this as just a case of *ignorance is bliss*. If men and women don't know what they're missing out on then of course they'll report greater marital happiness. If a man lacks sexual opportunities and a woman is restricted from sex with anyone but her husband, then sex is always great and her husband is the most *Alpha* man she's ever known. It's also *Pollyanna* thinking in the age of on demand streaming porn and *Go-Girl* female empowerment. If you want to know why so many *believing* married men “*struggle with pornography*” it's because it's an ever-present reminder of the type of sex he'll never experience in marriage — the validational sex he was assured would be satisfying if he repressed his innate impulses and saved himself for. Meanwhile, his wife is still wondering “*Is he really the best I can do?*” while being bombarded with articles like “*How my affair saved my marriage.*”

New order access to information prevents us from keeping our heads in the sand. No more ignorance, no more bliss. One hour in church, the synagogue or daily prayer learning about God's will for intersexual dynamics is no match for the unceasing 24-hour messaging of the digital age. It is inescapable, and we do ourselves no favors as men or women in persisting in the *old order* ignorance that used to be to our benefit. We must adapt. Understanding our sexual natures in their entirety is another *Apple* to fall from the *Tree of Knowledge*. Men and women will have to forge a new way forward together in this knowledge in a new cooperative,

complementary compromise or we will persist in the falsehood that we are self-fulfilling autonomous *things* with no need for anyone outside ourselves. That compromise will mean accepting the realities of our base sexual natures and developing a new social, personal and religious framework for men and women to come back together in. We are better together than we are apart.

Honestly, I don't think we're ready for it. Rebuilding a complementary interdependency between men and women involves destroying the *old order* lies of the *Blank Slate* and the social constructionism that our globalizing Gynocracy relies on to maintain power. Men and women have been effectively divided as a result of this and global fertility rates amply reflect this division. Our sexual natures are what's used to divide us in the false belief that we should have no use for each other beyond sexual gratification. Men are sedated while women are fed ego-aggrandizement and entitlement. Both sexes are deliberately isolated by distrust, frustration and the unachievable ideal of personal independence from the other. This is why, in the new order, gender is distorted and subjective, masculinity is demonized and confusing, and femininity is arbitrarily a point of pride or a badge of victimhood. Our overseers know our natures well, it's time we acknowledge them too and unite as complementary men and women.



## LOVE IS GOD

Human beings' capacity for emotion, and our penchant for lifting our emotions to a level of cosmic significance, is a feature of humanity. For better or worse, emotion has been responsible for more atrocities, and more feats of human grandeur, than rationality or reason has ever prompted in men or women. Logic, rationalism, the scientific process, deductive reasoning and objectivism are relatively new processes to the human condition. In this new *Age of Enlightenment* it's easy to think that all our technology is proof of a long history of practical rational intelligence. The truth is that up until a few hundred years ago it was emotion that drove most of our intellectual curiosity. Art, science, language and philosophy all took shape from our emotional process of interpreting our environment and the motives of those who populated it. Emotion drove us to kill, to love, to build and destroy, and to form our belief sets about family, tribe, nation and, most importantly, our Gods.

Since the paradigm shift of the Sexual Revolution, *emotionalism* has become the founding principle of our globalizing Western culture. We prioritize the emotional process – our feelings – above everything else. We've encouraged the correctness of following our heart to the point that it drives public policy now. For millennia rationalism and objectivism have always warred with emotionalism for preeminence over which human interpretive process is to be the basis of our social order. As feminine-primacy has evolved into Gynocentrism it's clear to see which process took the steering wheel. A common refrain among conservative pundits is that generations of men have become "pussified", *manginas*, and the most effeminate generation in history; men lacking a conventional masculinity and understanding of their roles that prior generations acknowledged as a matter of upbringing. What they fail to see is the rise of *emotionalism* as the preeminent social force in culture and political will in the era that followed the advent of hormonal birth control. In ceding our reproductive authority to women, men also ceded to emotionalism as the basis on which to govern a social order. The *romantic ideal* that pervades our intersexual relations today came into its own as driving force in religion, social consciousness and politics once emotionalism was accepted as the basis for *correct* society.



It was at this point the ideas that men needed to “*Get in touch with their feminine side*” or “*Be vulnerable*”, or “*Express their emotions*” and stop being so macho came into our popular consciousness. These tired tropes are still parroted by women and feminized men generations later.

We live in the age of ***Feels Before Reals*** and our fraying social fabric is a result of having prioritized emotionalism above reason for several decades now. ***Follow your heart*** has been the driving social message too long now. That messaging has been at the core of every *Disney* movie, every Top 40 ballad and virtually all our storytelling for decades. Emotion-makes-right, be true to your heart, buck the stolid traditions and you’ll do the *right* thing, consequences be damned. Emotionalism validates subjective truth. It’s all about *my* truth, rather than *the* (objective) truth. Objectivity, logic and deductive reasoning are the antithesis of emotionalism. On *Star Trek*, *Mr. Spock* was the embodiment of pure, cold (but quizzical) logic. For *Spock* emotions were an impediment to understanding and taking deductive rational action. *Captain Kirk* represented full human emotionality balanced with enough reason to take necessary risks. Men in the new order are emotionally imbalanced. They are encouraged to make emotion their highest priority despite their innate predisposition for reason.

Along with that emotionalism comes a religious fervor that works in favor of a Gynocentric social order. Religion, existential fears, spirituality and even the concept of *god* find their beginnings in the human emotional process. Even scripturally we’re disincentivized to *rely on our own understanding* and trust in God. A feminine-primary social order uses this religious emotionalism to its fullest advantage in the new order. For the greater part, we’re commanded to pray with our hearts, not our heads. Our churches, our religions, have become (or are steadily becoming) easily feminized by a singular focus on female-correct *emotionalism*. Orthodox religions will, of course, just reject this notion, but their orthodoxy only fuels the discontent of *emotionalism*. What remains of orthodoxy is just proof of the *correctness* of the subjective need to *follow one’s heart* and find your own *truth*. Yet, even to the most orthodox believer, *God Is Love*, and love is ultimately a human emotion.

## Love is God

What I'll get into next will be disconcerting for a lot of *believing* readers. Dissecting base emotions like anger, fear, joy, disgust and sadness are difficult enough, but make a science out of Love and people tend to get nihilistic. More than any other emotion, Love is exalted, even *deified*, above all others. There's a very *logical* reason it is so, but observing a process necessarily changes that process. We don't want the pleasant, ego-invested hope of Love dispelled for us. Magical thinking and *metaphorical truth* are both based in the emotional process of interpreting and understanding our environment and existence, so we have a tendency to lift these emotions to various states of significance according to their usefulness to us. For instance, we don't really think of *disgust* as an emotive state worthy of characterizing our gods with it. However, human beings have evolved a very acute revulsion response to certain stimuli — feces, decaying bodies, vomit, putrefaction, incest and dissymmetry. Sorry for the mental imagery, but it illustrates how revulsion has served us well over millennia. We want to stay away from things that might expose us to pathogens, or, in the case of incest, would increase the likelihood of inbreeding. As such, we developed an emotional aversion to these things (and their associations) and created *metaphorical truths* to explain them to ourselves in ways that we can more easily understand and accept. From those *truths* come behaviors, rituals and traditions. We ritualistically bury or burn dead bodies, we avoid lepers and we create social and religious doctrine to prevent sex among family members. All of that is a result of a very practical emotional response that solves some basic problems for us.

*Disgust* isn't going to be a defining attribute of a god. God may '*despise a prideful look*' or He may get angry enough at his creations' behaviors to wipe them all out in an epic flood, but *disgust* pales in comparison to the emotion that affirms all human beings existence at some point in life – Love. Feeling the emotion of Love is something humans will quite literally die for. Wars are started on the pretense of Love. Some of the greatest works of art are inspired by Love. No emotion is more individually subjective and collectively objectified as Love. In its highest appraisal, the emotion of Love

is held as metaphysical and beyond our capacity to fully understand. Love literally **is** God.

*So we have come to know and to believe the love that God has for us. **God is love**, and whoever abides in love abides in God, and God abides in him.*  
– 1 John 4:16

I would argue that in some part polytheistic and henotheistic religions died out as a result of their gods being too specialized in one human emotive state. Gods and goddesses had their particular sphere of influence based on whatever emotional need their worshipers had the most pressing use for. The god of war was good for anger and justified bloodshed. The goddess of love was good for sex and potential fertility. And the god of wine was good for drowning out emotions that we don't enjoy feeling. But Love, above all, is the most individually fulfilling and socially binding emotion humans experience. In healthy humans Love is the first emotion we feel from our parents. Love inspires parental investment, even in children who are not biologically our own. Love promotes social cohesion. Human beings are innately tribalistic. This is an unpopular concept at present, but it is kin-affiliation and kin altruism cemented by the emotive state of Love that drives our tribal instincts. Our first "tribe" is our immediate, biological family; Love is the name we give to the emotional investment we put into our genetic future, and that's pretty damn important in evolutionary terms. It therefore follows that our omniscient, omnipotent, God ***must*** necessarily be associated with the emotion that represents the sum of our existence.

If *God* is the sum of all things, then *He* necessarily **is** *Love*.

Where things get dicey is how we define the qualities of the emotional state of Love. When we qualify *Love* we place conditions on it. Human beings innately make comparisons and qualify things accordingly. It's a survival adaptation. We choose the big juicy apple over the scrawny dried up apple every time because the big one represents the best survival advantage. That's simplistic, but it's basically how we categorize all stimuli

to our benefit, and all within in the context of our experience as living things on this planet. Where the problems start is in how we get to ideas about *meaningful* versus *superficial* relationships. Even the concept of *genuine desire* versus *obligated compliance* is rooted in human comparisons that get transferred on to our beliefs about the divine. God doesn't want *lukewarm* believers – He wants *genuine desire* not unlike we do in our lovers and friends. Desire by choice is always preferable to desire by obligation, or forced necessity.

Comparison and categorizing is part of our innate talent for pattern recognition. Thus, Love becomes *Eros*, *Philia*, *Storge*, *Mania*, *Ludus*, *Pragma*, *Philautia* and the wildly popular idea of *Agape* love. In popular Christianity *Agape* love is the name given to the highest quality of love because it aligns so well with the supposedly unconditional love God has for us all. The problem with this is that the human experience of Love *always* comes with conditions — especially for men. While Love is a high-order principle for all the major religions of the world, only Christianity seems to consider love in unconditional terms. By *grace* we are saved, all have fallen short of God's love, and basically you can never do a damn thing to merit *His* love for you. For most religions (and really Christianity too), God's Love is very much performance based. The love *of* God is central to faith and mostly bottom up – meaning *believers* are to primarily direct love towards God and others; salvation and heaven being the reward for a life dedicated to God. Acts of faith and *works* that are demonstrations of God's love in the material world via His believers are still part of a performance-based devotion, and thus love directed towards God. In New Testament Christianity God expresses His love in the form of sacrifice — *His only begotten Son* — because He so loves the world. To receive God's love is both a gift and positive reinforcement.

Judaism defines love as: *the emotional pleasure a human being experiences when he understands and focuses on the virtues of another human being*. The emotion of love is overwhelmingly dependent on how one views another person. If we choose to focus on a person's virtues, we will love them. If we choose to focus on their deficiencies, we dislike them. Love's focus is outward from the self and directed to God and others.

*And you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with  
all your soul, and with all your might.*  
– Deuteronomy 6:5

Hinduism also believes God is love. The sacred text, ***Kanda Guru Kavasa***:

*“Oh holy Great flame, Grant me with love. You said the spreading  
love is Para Brahma, For the thing which is everywhere is only  
Love, And Love is the only thing which is like a soul within us, Love  
is Kumara, Love is Kanda”, meaning Love is God.*

However, with a few notable exceptions, the majority of the world’s faiths center on humans’ love *for* God being a condition for happiness, purpose (if not always fulfillment), duty/devotion, contentment and ultimately eternal life. For virtually all religions the emotive state of Love expressed towards God is central in the exchange of performance for immortality. As such, Love and its acts of expression are elevated to something more than just an emotive state. This is why even atheists will still set the feeling of love apart from other emotive states that are more easily explained by biological and psychological reasoning. Feeling love, and striving for that emotive state, is critical to our survival as a socially cooperative and interdependent species. It’s therefore unsurprising that this emotive state would be the most important aspect of our *metaphorical truths*, and intrinsic to the gods who either *love their creations* or at the very least have our best interests in mind.

In the Bahá’í faith God created humans because of his love for them. Thus, humans should in turn love God: *Love is the greatest power in the world of existence and the true **source of eternal happiness***. Love is the best of emotions humans can feel; so far, so good. Like other religions Bahá’í also teaches that genuine love is divine, and that love proceeds from both God and human beings. God’s love is intrinsic to his essence, and his love for his creations gives them their material existence, divine grace and eternal life. In other words, we owe our very existence to the emotive state of love God has for us. However, humans’ love is ideally directed towards

both God (first) and other humans. The problem is humans are always universally flawed in some way. Whether it's caused by a *sin nature* or a process of transforming oneself, nobody's ever perfect. From a materialist's perspective this aligns with mankind's perpetual inability to attain omniscient power over himself, his environment and his circumstances as defined by a finite lifespan on this planet. There are a couple of *Red Pill* relevant perspectives on this existentialism. Going into anything deeper isn't really in the scope of this book, however, the two most prominent ideas are the Empiricist's *Man as a rising beast* concept and the metaphysical *Man as a fallen angel* concept. Man is either a wild animal arising from nature and progressing to a higher state (*Godhood?*), or man is a divine creation who fell from a higher state (via self-awareness) and seeks to return to that divine state of union with God. In either case, human beings have a lot of work to do if they want to experience divine love or reach a state of evolutionary *apotheosis*.

## Love is Sacrifice

A founding principle of all major religions is that, to attain the emotive state of Love, some effort and sacrifice are necessary. If all the etheric contentment, blessings and prosperity promised by our gods are to be had, then an effort and/or sacrifice, prompted by genuine desire, must be directed toward pleasing those gods. Whether it's self-preservation, victory on the battlefield, atonement for sin or concentrating on attaining transcendent *Nirvana*, effort and sacrifice of some symbolic merit is always required. Usually this effort involves personal sacrifice and performance on the part of *believers*; and the greater the sacrifice the more significant the Love. When *Abraham* was commanded by the *Hebrew God* to slay his only (and long awaited) son Isaac, this sacrifice was representative of his complete, genuine, willing love and trust in his God. While the various Abrahamic religions read this story in different ways, for a *Red Pill* take, we see *Abraham's* actions as part of his male *Burden of Performance*. For all religions, if Love (and *Spiritual Enlightenment*) are to be achieved, efforts in devotion (worship and sacrifice) are required. If this seems analogous to the *Transactional* nature of how men perceive performance (*works*) in exchange for intimacy from women you're not too far from the mark. The reciprocation dynamic is intrinsic to the human experience. To achieve this state of idealized Love he must perform, he must sacrifice and he must be sincere.

In intersexual terms, men must *become* and women just *are*. In my prior books I've explored how both sexes hold differing concepts (approaches) of love. Men are largely idealists in life. We are the problem solvers and the innovators in solving these problems. We tend to do so with aid of an innate proclivity for deductive reasoning – cause and effect. In his *TED* talks on innate gender differences, *Dr. Stephen Pinker* pointed out that women tend to be interested in people, while men are interested in things. This is evident in our innate interests in various fields of study, hobbies, career choices and genres of fiction we gravitate to as men and women. Men are the idealists; we have an inherent want to effect our will upon our environment, either to solve a problem, create a specific work or achieve a previously undreamed

of goal. Men have a want for what is *possible*. In that idealistic drive and ambition men attain the things that make them attractive to women – dominance, competence and respectability (status). All men have an inborn burden to perform. Men's innate idealism is simultaneously a blessing and a curse. While that idealism can land us on the moon, prompt us to create a masterpiece or cure a disease, that idealism can also make us susceptible to exploitation and seduction because we *want* to believe in what might be possible. This idealistic nature is what informs men's concept of love. Men approach love from idealistic foundations, while, due to their innate hypergamy, women's approach to love is rooted in ***opportunism***. The rebuttal this usually draws is to presume that either sex's life experiences are going to necessarily be different. But women cannot fully appreciate the male experience unless they can actually become men and live a lifetime of men's experiences, their upbringing, their biology, their acculturation and societal conditioning. I am aware that it works both ways. Men cannot fully appreciate women's existential experiences either and for the same reason, however that doesn't excuse either gender from making an effort to better understand the other's experience. In our new order social environment, where the feminine perspective has primacy, it has been women who have been the arbiters of what *should* universally be the socially agreed upon definition of what ***love*** means to both sexes.

Over millennia, the greatest disconnects men and women have historically had with one another can trace their root to the belief that one sex's concept of love is the mutually accepted concept of the other. Men are bewildered that women don't love them for the sake of love, while women don't understand why men can't ***just get it*** that they must meet their Hypergamous criteria *before* a woman will allow herself to be emotionally invested in a man. Even now, popular Western culture still clings to the ignorance of the *romantic ideal* that exacerbates this disconnect. Men believe that love matters for the sake of it, women love opportunistically.

### ***Iron Rule of Tomassi #6***

***Women are utterly incapable of loving a man in the way that a man expects to be loved. In its simplicity this speaks volumes about the condition of Men. It accurately expresses a pervasive nihilism that***



*Men must either confront and accept, or be driven insane in denial for the rest of their lives when they fail to come to terms with the disillusionment.*

*Women are incapable of loving men in a way that men idealize is possible, in a way he thinks women should be capable of.*

However, this hasn't stopped men from trying to define love for themselves. Men endeavor to make women see how they would like their love to be in idealistic terms. History is rife with examples of men, in every culture, venturing to make women understand their idealized notion of love. From ancient love poems, to epic stories of one woman launching a thousand ships, to *Romeo and Juliet*, men have endeavored to educate women on how they **would** be loved, and how they would like **to** love women. Once a man unplugs from his feminine conditioning he becomes more sensitive to the world that's been pulled over his eyes. Hearing common terms in conversation that belie a feminine mindset, listening to songs that drip with male self-sacrifice for women, and understanding why certain themes in popular media resonate with culture is all part of this new sensitivity. It's what we call the *Red Pill Lens* and over time it makes men keenly aware of the differences in storytelling that apply to each gender.

## Love Stories

It would be easy to say I have a better awareness as to which gender is telling a particular story, but rather I have a keener sensitivity to which gender perspective a story is originating from now – and particularly when that story involves specific gender approaches to love. I could single out the stories of *Emily Bronte* and compare them with the formulaic themes of modern romance novels or romantic comedy movies, but that would be expected. Any Women's Studies major could tell you this. What I'm interested in is how the genders interpret each other's idealized concepts of love. This gives us a starting point for understanding how humans extrapolate their concepts to *God's Love*.

*Titanic* (1997) is arguably one of the greatest love stories ever put on film. I can remember adult women of the time who literally were incapable of going to work or doing much of anything else the day after watching this movie. I can remember women I dealt with professionally at the time bursting into tears because they were so wracked with vicarious, imagined, grief for the tragic loss of *Jack* (the embodiment of a man/boy who answered the Hypergamous doubt *Is he the best I can do?*). This is the psychological impact *Titanic* had, and don't get me started on the teenage girls' gnashing of teeth during the time. A lot went on in *Titanic* from a feminine-romanticized perspective. It's definitely an epic fairytale, and one that has all of the formulaic elements of a *classic love* story. Rich beautiful girl, scrappy-poor-but-Alpha-good looking hero who irresistibly draws girl into his reality (Frame). Then the tragic, but sacrificial death of said hero to save her, thus ensuring for her a better life. *Jack* is a martyr for love – not unlike *Jesus* was a martyr for love.

However, it's the last few minutes of *Titanic* that truly summarize the entire story's relevance to women's concept of love. The former beauty, now elderly woman, *Rose* still pines for her *Alpha* she lost so long ago. This scene epitomizes the concept of the *Alpha Widow* — As the *heart* (gemstone) that was given to her by her lost *Alpha* sinks to the bottom of the ocean, we pan across photos of all of her life experiences afforded to her by *Jack's* loving sacrifice; the beauty queen, the mother, the *Amelia Earhart*

(the have it all fantasy) pilot, horseback rider and now finally she can return to her *Alpha* in death after life well-lived.

Released just one year later, *Saving Private Ryan* (1998) debuted in theaters. Also, arguably one of the greatest, heroic and epic stories put to film from an unarguably masculine perspective. Where *Titanic* relies on a clever retelling of classic and tested romantic themes, *Saving Private Ryan* explores distinctly male themes of honor, duty, courage, service, and also sacrifice. The main character, *Captain Miller's* sacrifice is of a decidedly different nature, but the premise is the same — self-sacrifice for the betterment of another individual. As *Captain Miller* (Tom Hanks) dies his last words are “*Earn this.*” Merit this, be worthy of this. Granted, more men than just *Captain Miller* die on *Ryan's* behalf, but he's the protagonist and the one we really care about as his death is personalized for us. In an almost analogous ending to *Titanic* we see the elderly *Ryan* contemplating his life and wondering if he'd indeed “*earned it*” with what he'd made of his life. And in classic *Beta Male* form he seeks that affirmation from a woman, his wife.

“*Tell me I've led a good life. Tell me I'm a good man.*” This plea for existential validation is the final question *Ryan* – in place of men's lived experience – asks his wife while bringing his children and grandchildren before the grave of *Captain Miller*. We can tell there's no connection, no familiarity with *Ryan's* experience shared by his wife. Her response is just this side of a patronizing dismissal of the imagined insecurities of an old man. We presume *Ryan* has led a good life; he's still married, has two generations of children, but nowhere is the have it all fantasy that an elderly *Rose* enjoys in *Titanic*. We don't know if *Ryan* had ‘*earned it*’, if his life's performance was good enough; the pat on the cheek from his oblivious wife doesn't confirm it, but that's the operative difference between *Ryan's* character and *Rose's* — *Rose's* good life was never expected to have been earned.

*I was picked on as a boy and decided at a very young age to fight back by outdoing all my naysayers. All the people that tell you you're not good enough, smart enough or talented enough... So I became the antithesis of their projections and surpassed all my*

*personal goals. It's more than just getting the girl... It's about conquering "your" world!*

In our hunter-gatherer tribal beginnings men's *reward* was based on performance. Imperfect as it is, men's dominance and competence hierarchies are inherently an intertribal meritocracy. Men are expected to perform and sacrifice themselves for Love. To be successful, to get the girl, to live a good life, men must **do**. Whether it's a boy riding wheelies down the street on a bicycle to get that cute girl's attention, or to get a doctorate degree to ensure personal success and a family, or to defend his tribe, people and country, men **must** perform. Women's arousal, attraction, desire and love are rooted in that *conditional* performance. The degree to which that performance meets or exceeds expectations can be subjective, and the ease with which you can perform is also a factor, but perform you must. The difference between men's experience of meriting love via performance and respectability, and women's experience of being the arbitrator of rewarding that performance with love and intimacy, is mirrored in how religion determines God's Love for humanity. Human beings' only frame of reference for experiencing a *metaphysical* love begins within the context of how they experience a *physical* love.

Men's concept of love begins in their innate idealism, but their means to experiencing love is always transactional – thoughts, works, acts, behavior, are the performance needed to achieve a desired state of experiencing emotive love. Ideally, men want a love based on women reciprocating their innate idealism; love of the sake of love, rather than love for the sake of performance. This conflict is often what defines "**authentic love**" for men who never grasp that women's concept of love begins in opportunism that extends from Hypergamy. When I did peer counseling I would hear a similar, agonized refrain from men, young and old alike — "*If she'd just tell me what to do to make her love me I'd do it!*" or "*I know she'll be the **One** if she loves me as much as I love her.*" They unquestioningly believe that their concept of idealistic love is mutually shared by women, and is the universal concept of love. When I've explained this in the past, women have told me they're confused; *How is it that men don't know when a woman doesn't love them?* They also see men's concept of love as stupid, infantile or a desire to

return to their mother's love. Historically, women have had no use for submissive, incompetent men. Expecting a mother's love from a wife or a lover confirms a man's Beta status. When a woman sees a man as a *Momma's Boy* it's an insult to her as much as it is to him. It implies the expectation of *unconditional love* for him irrespective of his performance in meriting it.

This is another disconnect between men and women's conflicting concepts of love. It's not that men seek *unconditional love* (some do), rather they seek a "love" rooted in their own idealistic concept being affirmed for him in a woman. Men's idealized love exists outside their need to perform (for women or men). Thus, the fantasy is to be loved despite his actual status, competency or dominance ranking. This is why the social narratives like *Free Love*, egalitarianism and even *Men Going Their Own Way* are appealing to men: all of these social conventions remove a man's need to compete or perform in order to be loved or respected.

Religion is a dominance hierarchy. Divine love can be merited in some religions or it is a thing freely given by God in others. Islam is by far the most rigid in its divine meritocracy. To be sure, all the Abrahamic religions impose proper performance on their believers to receive the love of God, but in the *old order* of beneficent patriarchy men's responsibility to family, tribe and themselves was a prerequisite for experiencing God's love. Recall the definition of a balanced patriarchy; masculine responsibility paired with the masculine authority to exercise those responsibilities. Today, that authority has been gelded from men, but ignorant moralists only see men as failing in their responsibility instead of the lack of authority making them ineffectual. But both responsibility and authority are God's *Burden of Performance* for men if they wish to experience *His* love. In Islam, *Allah* loves those who follow his directions, act righteously and revere the *Prophet*. In fact, most polygynous, patriarchal religions are by necessity performance-based faiths. While it's not technically a requirement, young Mormon men are compelled to complete a two year missionary commitment before they can earn the respect of other *believers* as men (and be considered for marriage by women). Acts of faith, works and performance are a masculine imperative; men must merit both *heaven* and the *love* of women in marriage.

Free salvation is a feminine imperative. God's love for us is conditional only insofar as we accept it as the free *gift* it is. All have fallen short of the

grace of God and nothing *we* can do will ever earn us an immortal, idealized, emotive love with God. Women just *are*, men must *become*. The schism between Catholicism and the Protestant reformation was a division of performance-based love of salvation through works versus a freely given salvation by grace (thus undercutting the Roman Catholic Church). This is analogous to the opportunistic concept of love innate to women versus the idealistic concept of love innate to men. Salvation via works versus salvation via grace. I should add here that love isn't the only gendered concept that human's deify. The emotion of love is certainly the one that gets the most contemplation, but respect is also something both sexes have differing concepts of as a result of the evolution of the genders. Again, men must become respectable by way of performance. Respectability is earned in a masculine sense. Women just *are*. By women's innate value as the incubators of the next generation they are afforded love and respect by virtue of just being female. The *romantic ideal* has leveraged this difference in respect to women's full advantage since the time of *Courtly Love* and it still defines women's value today. Men will attempt to outdo each other in their declarations of default, unmerited, respect for women – even coming to blows if it serves.

## Sacrifice and Service

Since the time of the early Pickup Artists the *Manosphere* has used the maxim of the *pedestal* when referring to men's penchant for aggrandizing and worshiping women. "*Knock her off the pedestal*" has been a useful, if now clichéd, way of getting a guy to recognize the power and authority he gives to women by sublimating himself to her service. This too is another holdover from bastardized *Chivalry* that's steeped into various religions as the *Feminine Imperative* has assimilated them. The sacrificial side of men meriting God's Love has been paired with the *romantic ideal* for centuries. Men must become less so *He* can become more is something a Gynocentric courtly love ideal has bastardized today. As women are increasingly lifted up to being a conduit between God and man the idea of sacrifice and service gets transferred from God to women. The concept of altruistic self-sacrifice is intrinsic to the male experience. The *no greater love* ideal resonates with men because, in evolutionary terms, men have always been the disposable sex.

*Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.*

– John 15:13

Eggs are expensive and sperm is cheap. Nature always takes more chances with the males of a species than females<sup>1</sup>. That translates into shorter lifespans, lessened immunities (due to testosterone), a greater tolerance for risk, a proclivity for violence, and certainly establishing and maintaining dominance hierarchies to ensure our genes are the ones that make it into future generations. But to ensure this men must sacrifice themselves in part or in whole to guarantee their progeny and their tribe will endure. Self-sacrifice, without complaint, is intrinsic to the male experience – for one to *be a good man* it implies he unquestioningly puts the survival interests of his family, his children, his wife (wives) his tribe (kin altruism) and his country before his own. Ideologically we call it *noble* when a man makes the ultimate sacrifice of laying down his life for '*the cause*', but in

practical terms a man's altruistic death comes down to ensuring the continuance of his genetic lineage. In crisis situations, where an immediate life-or-death reaction is prompted, men will instinctively put themselves between women (and children) and bullets. In active-shooter events (*Aspen, Colorado, James Holmes theater killing, and the Las Vegas mass shooting of 2017*) men will regularly put themselves bodily in front of women, even those they are unfamiliar with. This immediate, instinctual self-sacrifice is the part of men's evolved mental firmware that makes up the ***Protector Dynamic*** I mentioned in the *Crisis Masculinity* chapter. This instinct is the root for other forms of self-sacrifice, so that the greatest act of love a man can perform is his own martyrdom in saving his *fellow* man (or woman). He will cease living so his people can continue living.

I stated in my first book that the definition of true power is not the control we can exert over the lives of others, but rather the extent to which we have control over the direction of our own lives. When we discuss issues of power between men and women the ultimate loss of that control is in the context of our deaths. ***There is no greater powerlessness for men than a lack of control over our own disposability.*** Male self-sacrifice is part of what we are as men, so it follows that *metaphorical truths* about that sacrifice would necessarily become part of the male experience. Thus, men become the disposable sex. It's tragically easy to find examples of this presumption of disposability in our social fabric today. We have an entire month (October) dedicated to *Breast Cancer Awareness*, but little concern or press is given to male prostate cancer death rates. Men die earlier, but women's health issues receive 4 times more funding than men's health worldwide. Men commit suicide at 3.5 to 5 times the rate of women, but virtually no social programs exist to address this epidemic for men. While men are overwhelmingly the perpetrators of violent crime, they are also overwhelmingly the victims of violent crime.

As a man, just my raising awareness of men's disposability makes me suspect of being a *whiner*. In a Gynocentric society, the continuing perception of a patriarchy that no longer exists still means that ***men are never victims***. The popular presumption of *Male Privilege* in society, in money, and in religion has been a very useful social convention for the Feminine Imperative. Innately men are disposable, and in the *old order* the masculine concepts of duty, honor and service centered on the



understanding of that disposability. In the *old order* men had a commensurate authority imbued in them that made the responsibility for sacrifice something noble and uniquely masculine. Sacrifice for men was expected, but disposability without meaning is really hard to sell to men. Whether that sacrifice is abandoning ambitions for the sake of a wife or family, or laying down one's life for the *greater good*, it's much easier to get men to accept service and sacrifice if it means it's *doing the right thing*. What we still think of today as doing the right thing is all based on the conditions for male sacrifice as defined by a social order that has very little relevance in the new order. Love, and in particular an aggrandized ideal of higher spiritual love, made sacrifice something men could get behind. Sacrificing oneself for *true love*, or love for the sake of love, appeals to men's innate idealism. In fact, that idealism is so persuading that sacrifice-for-love programing can override men's evolved mental firmware for self-preservation.

It's therefore unsurprising that Christ's symbolic death on the cross is almost a perfect analogy for the expectation of altruistic sacrifice from human males.

*For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.*  
– John 3:16

By grace or by works the goal of being spared eternal damnation and separation from the unending state of emotive *Love* (where God is Love) requires sacrificing all and becoming symbolically or effectively powerless. To strive to live a Christ-like life (or a strive for a state of perfection in *Love*) men must sacrifice themselves. In various ways *believers* must ***die to themselves***, give up any self-serving purpose, and *live for God*. This is a real tough belief to square with the *Red Pill* concept of *Mental Point of Origin*. Both religion and Gynocentric education have been very effective in raising generations of boys/men whose minds default to women's interests as the *correct* way of thinking. Most *believing* men today can't begin to think of making themselves the first thing that enters into their minds when faced

with decision making. Many *believing* men reject *Red Pill* awareness outright based on this alone. It sounds too much like narcissism, selfishness and “living for oneself” rather than living and thinking for God – or it seems counterintuitive to the idea that they must consider others before themselves.

However, it is Blue Pill social conditioning that reinforces the ideal of sacrifice of self in a religious context – usually under the pretense of someone else’s connection with *God*. In the new order that connection to *God* is via women and a *Kosher* pretense of female-correctness. In the past, this desire for the emotive state of love, belonging and atonement for sin (regret) was exploited by religion. Irrespective of the faith, men (and women) have always set themselves up as the brokers of *God’s Love*. The power dynamic of being a intermediary between a god’s love, forgiveness and approval of us is something humans figured out long ago. Men’s innate idealism, our nature for deductive problem solving and a need for *purpose* in life makes this power dynamic effective. Like *Private Ryan* asked, *Tell me I’m a good man, tell me I earned this?* The human experience is to be discontent, but we are always striving for a contentment that never exists for very long. A primary tenet of Buddhism (and other Eastern religions) is that life is suffering, and the cause of that suffering is desire. Remove desire and contentment is achieved. The problem is that human discontent is what made us the apex species on this planet. Any sniff at contentment (however it’s defined) is soon replaced by the next adaptive challenge, desire for a new state of being, or just simple boredom. Even the quest for *Nirvana* implies discontent and a desire to find “*enlightenment*”. Evolution demands discontentment in pretty much every living thing. As a result, *contentment* for humans is always going to be a meta-physical state. We can choose to deal with discontent either creatively or destructively, but achieving a true state of ideal contentment is itself something we will always desire and be discontented by.

Christianity doesn’t have a trademark on, *do unto others as you’d have them do unto you*. The prosocial idea of mutual love paired with self-love is part of many faiths. From an Evo-Bio perspective promoting an ideal of empathy makes good cooperative sense for social animals when they’re interdependent on each other for survival. But to get to the *God Tier* metaphysical love we believe will content us, we must first think of others before we think of ourselves.

*This is my commandment, that ye **love one another**, even as I  
have **loved** you.  
– John 15:12*

*“Your task is not to seek for love, but merely to seek and find all the  
barriers within yourself that you have built against it.”  
– Rumi*

Our personal value, if not our social value, then becomes about our serviceability to *Love* rather than the efficacy of our decisions. Our discontent becomes about the failures in ourselves for not making others more important than ourselves. Forgiveness is difficult for humans. Revenge is a natural default. We evolved to prioritize our negative experiences, and associative emotions, in our memories as a survival instinct. We learn far more from painful memories of bad (or near death) experiences than we do from successes or enjoyable experiences. When we fail, when we have a close call with disaster, we replay that event in our minds more readily so we don't repeat that experience. You only touch a hot stove once as a kid, but that painful instance necessarily stays with us. This negative reinforcement dynamic is part of our *Instinctual* processing of stimuli. It's root-level hindbrain stuff, but it cascades to our *Emotional* and (hopefully) *Rational* interpretive processes. *Metaphorical truth* and its derivative behaviors are then what we pass on to future generations (via language) based on these experiences. *All snakes are poisonous* so don't touch a snake, fear the snake and kill the snake whenever possible if you want to continue living and reproducing. Now apply this dynamic to human interactions and forgiveness, even loving one's enemies, becomes a radical idea because it's counterintuitive – potentially life-threatening – to our evolved learning from negative reinforcement.

Separating the lofty, deified ideal of *Love* from gods or religion is sacrilege. This is especially true in the age of Gynocentrism and the *romantic ideal* since the emotional interpretive process is what drives and validates our social narratives. Today, *follow your heart* replaces *love God with all your heart*, but the unending discontent in perpetuating the emotional state of love is at the root of both. So, dissecting love, and

analyzing it in evo-psych or evo-bio terms removes the magic from an emotion we *really* like to feel. Emotions are not magic, but it's served us well in the past to treat them as if they are magic, or in some cases evidence of higher cosmic truths. Of the three cognitive, interpretive processes (*Instinct*, *Emotion* and *Reason*) it is the Emotional process that people are most familiar with, and yet it's also the most glorified when it comes to subjectively defining reality and truth. People invest a lot of themselves in their emotions. The reason for this is because, for a very long time, we've been taught to deify (sometimes literally) the importance of emotion to the human experience. We want to impart our emotions with a metaphysical quality to the point that understanding those feelings is something we expect our omniscient gods to have a relation with. This is the mythic grandeur with which we regard emotion; but on a visceral level, the opposite end of that understanding, emotion is something very understandable and very '*knowable*'.

We interpret stimuli via the Emotional process, but we also express our emotional state through art, self-expression, acts of worship and personal means. This is the dual nature of emotion: it is interpretive, but those interpretations are subjective to an individual. These interpretations and expressions become part of our personality and identity. A person can invest themselves so much (ego-investment) into personal beliefs that they become a component part of *who* they are. Thus, an attack on the belief is literally an attack on the ego. It's important to point out that those investments are integrally linked to the Emotional process. Emotion is not just an important filter through which we interpret the world, but its effects often shape us as individuals. So, because of this subjective, ego-investment dynamic it's hard not to step on a few toes or challenge the emotionally-inspired belief sets by considering emotion in an objective way rather than a subjective way. Needless to say this objectivity about emotion in the age of *feels before reals* is a really tough sell. People will regularly fight you to maintain the emotionalism that makes them who they are.

As with most other aspects of *Red Pill* awareness, parsing out the nuts and bolts of how and why emotions work, how they evolved, and the important survival functions they serve often has a way of dispelling the *magic* we apply to emotions. From a biological perspective we can prompt certain emotions (or buffer them) by creating the stimuli that evokes

them. We can chemically induce an emotional response. We can alter moods with drugs and we can chemically compare the endorphins released into our bloodstream when we experience the emotional effects of love, lust and infatuation. There are many studies comparing love to addiction, and the effects of a breakup being comparable to withdrawal symptoms from heroin. Today's antidepressant drugs (SSRIs) have the effect of removing a person's capacity to care about or *feel* emotions. Again, emotions are not *magic*, but they help us understand our circumstances, our world and the people who populate it. Emotion has prompted virtually all of mankind's greatest art, music, literature and so many more cultural effects it's hard to think that emotion doesn't define us as a species. Emotion has started wars, prompted self-sacrifice, moves us to mercy, ensures that our children are nurtured and sees that we care and cooperate with each other. Emotion is a blessing and a curse as environment and circumstance demand, but for all of that the Emotional process is a result of our evolved biology. Emotion is firmly rooted in our evolved capacity to experience and interpret our environment and circumstances. **Emotion is rooted in the physical.** While it inspires us to acts that may seem heroic, divine or diabolic the fact remains that emotion is very much dependent on our evolved capacity to *physically* experience it.

Emotion has been elevated to such a mythic degree of importance in our present times that it supersedes almost all other considerations in life. We're largely taught and conditioned to prioritize the importance of our emotional states above both the Instinctual and Rational interpretive processes, so to reduce emotion to a physical dynamic runs counter to what we *feel* it should mean to us. Unless we're dealing with a clinical, physical, depression we rarely consider that emotion is a biological interpretive process. We want to apply metaphysical meaning to emotion rather than see it as the evolved tool it is to human beings.

Both Instinct and Reason influence and modify the Emotional process, and like both, Emotion is interpretive and functional. If we look at base emotions we can make inferences as to what their latent purposes might be. Take for example oxytocin – also known as the *Love Hormone*. The effects of oxytocin inspires feelings of trust and caring, but the environmental prompts that trigger this hormone have a practical 'real world' function. We can speculate that the instinctual prompts that trigger an oxytocin release

lead to the emotional processing of the feelings of trust/caring which then prompts physical behavior (nurturing a child, pair bonding, etc.) Hunger is another example. Our physical state of hunger prompts feelings of anger ('*Hangry*') or discontent which then compels us to action. In our evolutionary past this anger prompt would've been beneficial in that it motivated us to seek and kill food. These are just a couple of the many different basic prompts for the Emotional process, but emotion is more complex and nuanced. The Emotional process is multi-layered, so when you combine various emotional interpretive processes with emotional responses you get various new iterations of emotion which then build into more complex emotions. While **Instinct** is the fastest of these processes, emotion can comparatively be more time intensive (*Rationality being the slowest process*). Base emotions are relatively quick interpretations (though slower than instinct), but the more complex, compound emotions take time to interpret, build and then reinterpret. These are the emotions we have to *sort our feelings* about. Because of this compositing process humans have a tendency to fixate on the emotion itself as being of primary importance; often forgetting or dismissing entirely the stimuli that originally prompted it. Furthermore, we forget or dismiss the latent purpose of that initial emotional interpretation that caused that composite cascade of emotions.

Deontological judgments are shaped by affective processes, whereas utilitarian judgments are guided by cognitive processes. What this means is ideology is driven by our Emotional interpretive process, while practical assessments in life are generally sorted out by our Rational interpretive process. As much as we'd like to romanticize our connection with what we think is moral on some metaphysical plane there is a simple biological function that underlies what we *feel* is right or wrong. Variation in the oxytocin receptor gene (OXTR) is associated with differences in moral judgment<sup>2</sup>. Oxytocin has been called the "*Love Hormone*" by every pop-psychologist to ever read an article about it on *Psychology Today*, but more pertinent is its role in modulating activation in brain regions known to play a critical role in moral judgment. While the neural mechanisms responsible for the correlation remain largely unknown, research suggests that variation in *OXTR* is most likely to influence moral judgment by modulating the

influence of oxytocin within neural pathways that have previously been identified as preferentially supporting deontological moral judgment.

An understanding of this emotional compositing is necessary to understand why we tend to imbue emotions with such importance and godlike power. While base emotions are linked to the '*fast-twitch*' Instinctual process, the more complex emotions – the ones we subconsciously craft over more time – tend to be the ones we build belief sets around. This is very important to *Red Pill* awareness because it explains the motivations for, and foundations of, feminine-primary belief sets of both men and women, as well as the feminine-primary social order that is a result of those belief sets.

## Gender Differences

Despite the protestations of egalitarians, men and women are fundamentally more different than we are alike. Biologically, neurologically, hormonally and psychologically our gender-specific differences are significant. This isn't a revelation to my *Red Pill* aware readers, but it's a radical statement for generations emotionally invested in the idea of blank-slate parity between the sexes they've been conditioned to believe in. An ego-investment is a component part of the personality of the individual so invested. To attack the investment, the belief, the ideology, the educated-but-misinformed opinion, is to attack the person. That belief set, like the emotions that compounded to develop it, is subjective to the individual experiencing the emotions that led to it. So, to say that *Love* is just an evolved chemical reaction in our minds triggering an emotive state is akin to saying *God is dead* to people invested in love as something metaphysical.

A maxim of the manosphere, for as long as I've been a part of it, is that women put "feels before facts". *Women are ruled by emotion and perception* has always been a staple in *Red Pill* communities. In several essays I've outlined women's innate communication style being context based – women focus on how the communication makes them feel; the information conveyed is secondary. For men this is reversed; men prioritize the content (the information) of the communication and the context is secondary. I've written a lot about how each sex evolved into their communication priorities, but down to the biological level, per our sex, the answers can be found in how our brains differ. Multivariate studies in brain imaging contrast these differences, but also reveal the uncanny *complementarity* between men and women's brains. Studies show that women tend to prioritize the Emotional interpretive process before the Rational interpretive process and vice versa for men. That is *not* to say women are entirely incapable of reason, nor does it imply that men are emotionally stunted. What I'm suggesting is that our innate, biological predispositions prioritize our interpretive processes to emotion in women and rationality in men. Women can be taught to prioritize reason over



emotion and, as I'll illustrate next, men most definitely can be conditioned to prioritize emotion above their innate proclivity for deductive reason.

These interpretive prioritizations function primarily as a result of neurological gendered differences in men and women. Women process negative emotions differently than men. Men largely lack the brain architecture (wiring) to process emotion in the same manner and with the same degree of prioritization as women do. This is simply how we're built, but before any woman pops off about their 'superior' emotional capacity, bear in mind, women's brains are not wired for the rational and spatial tasks men's brains are more suited to. Out of the womb, a boy is predisposed to throw an object with greater force and more accuracy than a girl. And that's just one easy illustration of the mental firmware men are born with.

Today the Emotional process that women innately prefer is the socially '**correct**' way for all, egalitarian, blank-slate equals to prioritize their interpretations of the world and each other. The presumption of equalism is little more than a cover story for feminine primacy. For several generations the pretense of gender equality has been the vehicle for female social primacy. At first it was subtle and inoffensive, but today this social engineering effort is out in the open. With more and more new order empirical evidence mounting that proves the sexes are far less "*equal*" in nature than prior egalitarian doctrines would allow anyone to accept, we see an intensifying effort to retain the social narrative on the part of equalist. Only now it's focused on the innate '*wrongness*' of masculinity by pathologizing anything conventionally masculine. This intensive effort is only made legitimate because prior feminized generations based their belief sets on the inherent '**correctness**' of prioritizing the Emotional process – a process that is fundamentally, biologically linked to women's preferences in interpreting the world around them.

We look at men as if they're stunted and 'wrong' for communicating with other men in a way that prioritizes information before how that communication made them feel. We still today implore men to get in touch with their feminine sides, but pity men for lacking the hardware to emote '**correctly**' like women. We don't teach boys emotional control because in our emotional-prioritizing social order anything that looks like control seems like masculine repression of emotional expression. Instead we create new, more intense, ways of discouraging men from ever embracing or

“*getting in touch*” with their masculine sides. To do so would invite male authority back into their belief set. We discard masculine discipline for emotional pretense. We teach boys at younger and younger ages to fear and despise their innate masculine selves. We create programs to cure masculinity *as if it were a health crisis*. This effort will only intensify as gender differences become more and more unignorable and the social engineering of the last 60 years becomes more obvious with the availability of new order data. The basis of that *cure* is the fundamental assumption that interpreting our world through the filter of Emotion should supersede or entirely disqualify the **Rational** interpretive process.

As you might guess, men’s innate predisposition is to interpret our world through Reason. Today we live in a world where feelings trump both instinct and reason. This is why the current generation makes the Emotional process and their feelings more important than any other consideration – they are the cumulative result of having prioritized women’s emotional preferences above all else, while simultaneously engineering consecutive generations of feminized men to facilitate it for the last seven decades. For millennia now we’ve elevated our Emotional process of interpreting our reality to mythical importance. So saturated is this importance in our personal and cultural being that to even question it seems sacrilegious. We are literally born into a dependence on emotions for our own survival. That is part of our earliest development, but the conditioning that gives rise to the primacy of emotionalism is layered onto us for the rest of our lives.

In a Gynocentric social order *Emotionalism* is the religion that we’ve fashioned from our Emotional interpretive process.

*God* is no longer love in this religion, rather, **Love is God**. As *Dalrock* alluded to in his own works, our new order’s globalizing syncretic religion will only be legitimized through an ideal of *romantic love*. Love, as subjectively defined by a female-correct emotionalism, will legitimize what we’re allowed to believe about our God. As the primacy of female experience assimilates our *old order* religions, those religions are refashioned in women’s emotional framework. The God of the Patriarchy is dead; replaced by a new god, *Divine Love* – a god made in the image of

women's Emotional interpretive process, and worshiped by purposeless men who've been taught that the path to love, manhood and *contentment* is through their serviceability to women. **Men will never regain masculine authority when their gods are defined by women.**

## **Rationalism vs. The Rational Process**

As a result of pushing the Emotional process as the *correct* way of interpreting our world the Rational process necessarily gets demonized today. It feels wrong to a social order predicated on the Emotional process, so the truths that the Rational process reveals seem cruel, biased or vindictive when they refute the magical interpretations of the Emotional process. The importance of Emotion has been elevated above an interpretive process to where it's now entered a metaphysical realm. This is where the Emotional process becomes *Emotionalism*. In the light of this, the Rational interpretive process gets overshadowed and sublimated in importance. But the Rational process is what exposes emotionalism for what it is: Emotion is an evolved, biological interpretive process that serves our species well, but the feelings it generates are physical responses to environmental stimuli — not evidence of some higher consciousness or mythic existential importance that goes beyond anything in the physical realm.

The Rational process throws a cold bucket of unflattering truth on a lofty emotionalism that's come into its own in a time when women's emotionality defines our social conventions. Because emotionalism has been a basis of our social order for millennia now, the Rational process had to be debased in importance.

*Trust in the LORD with all your heart and do not lean on your own understanding.*

– *Proverbs 3:5*

This scripture is an illustration of the conflict between emotionalism and the rationalism that popular social consciousness would buffer the Rational interpretive process with. The Rational process is based in our collective and subjective intelligence. Healthy men and women both have the mental hardware to use the Rational process, some do it well, but where we differ is in our gendered mental firmware. When we collectively prefer one process to the other, this is where we decide which gender's process will define our social order. In order for emotionalism to supersede rationality, and ensure

its preeminence, appeals to the emotional before the rational have to be popularized. The *right* way to think, the *right* on which to base all decisions, should start with the *heart* and later (if at all) the *head*.

If we could depend on an unbiased, unadulterated form of reason the Rational process would be a superior methodology. But reason, rationalism and objectivity are dependent on intelligence and accurate information, and that takes time. In some ways the Rational process is sensitive to both instinct and emotion; in other's that reasoning is painfully, sometimes fatally, slow. Reason requires learning, patience and insight. The world happens fast and vacillating in the Rational process might easily kill an individual. Fortunately we have instinct and emotion to carry us through. The Rational process requires time because it requires learning, contemplation, theorizing and any number of high-order thinking processes to be optimally effective. Even then, that effectiveness depends on reasoning's accuracy. For the past three or four hundred years we've increasingly had the luxury to develop our Rational process, but for all the advancements it's given us, when it comes to intersexual dynamics emotion is still the priority.

*"An emotional response to a situation is the single greatest barrier to power, a mistake that will cost you a lot more than any temporary satisfaction you might gain by expressing your feelings."*

*– Robert Greene*

Throughout our globalizing social order we have placed such importance on emotion at the expense of reason that we'll risk personal safety in our '*right*' to express it. No doubt most men are familiar with feminized "*repressing your emotions*" tropes, but it's interesting to consider that even with this self-control, and even with our innate mechanisms to process emotion differently than women, men are still accused of failing to be '*in touch with their emotions*'. Cry more, be more *vulnerable*, masculinity is just a *mask* men wear, etc. The message is, if only men could experience emotions *correctly*, as women do, then they'd find contentment, happiness and *love*. On first glance *Robert Greene's* quote here appears to be wisdom (I think it is) – self-control and mastery of one's emotional state

is a virtue. Yet in our emotional-primary social order we'll hear women complain that men are less *emotionally available*. Men could be *perfected* only if they'd accept female emotionalism as their *Mental Point of Origin*. This conflict illustrates again that whatever is expedient to the female imperative is what is to be considered 'correct' at that moment.

Never is it factored in that men are literally not *wired* for the emotional prioritization that women innately default to. To do so would require admitting that the *Blank Slate* ideology that underpins Gynocentrism (and much more) is fatally in error. Rather, we get social conventions and narratives that make men's deficit in correct emotion the consequences of the *Patriarchy* and/or social constructionism. Thus, when *Love* literally is God, and women's experience of emotion is the metric men should aspire to, men are always going to be the imperfect, stunted and inept gender in experiencing *God's Love*. And in a Gynocentric social order men defer to women's emotionalism as a means to knowing God through women. Granted, this has been a generational shift over the course of decades, but the *Feels before Reals* prioritization we've applied to all aspects of a globalizing society are the direct result of this shift. Because of this monopoly on *correct* emotion we'll soon see how women will apply their "*being lightyears closer to God*" in a new order globalized religion based on *Love*.

Empiric rationality is the foundation of what humanity has made of itself. Setting aside emotionality and considering challenges from the Rational interpretive process is fundamental to understanding the Emotional and Instinctive processes, and their advantages and weaknesses. For the record, my belief is that all of these interpretive processes in union are necessary elements in the human experience, but my focus on these processes is to lay a foundation for a better understanding of them. It's easy to get caught up in the demonization of the instinctual and the rational processes when the emotional process is lifted to such divine proportions that it defines what's good or evil for our collective experiences. There is a *Manosphere* idiom, "*No man has ever reasoned a woman into bed.*" Women don't follow the Rational process when it comes to interrelating with men. Appeals to women's reason is always anti-seductive. When it comes to Hypergamy it's all Instinctual and Emotional, and usually in that order. A man might be able to use his rational facilities to better understand women's

evolved instinctual and emotional responses, and what prompts them, but reason itself isn't the key to that interrelation.

We can very easily separate *Love* from God. From a rational perspective, love as an evolutionary adaptation, and in its various states, serves many vital purposes of inter-social and interpersonal cohesion that benefit us as a species. Distilling the emotion of love to physically emotive states removes a lot of the magic love holds for us that inspires us to great deeds; but it's a necessary part of understanding how that metaphysical ideal of love can be exploited for very physical purposes.





## A ONE-WORLD RELIGION

A new worldwide homogenous religion will come about via women's influence spreading throughout all major contemporary religions. It will be called “**Love**”. Its ambiguous tenets will be based on “*tolerance*” and inclusion of all faiths and walks of life. It will be a communitarian, syncretic belief-set founded on the need for a unifying of ideology in a globalized civilization. It will be an entirely feminine-primary, female-correct ‘*religion*’ that emphasizes communitarian acceptance and belonging – so long as the individual aligns with a gynocentric norm. The only doctrine or stricture of this “*religion*” will be a judgementalism in accepting it as the global norm. Anything challenging that norm will be called “**Hate**”; the antithesis to belonging in this new world-tribe’s ideological framework. Its punishment of *cancelling* ostracization from that tribe will be as swift as it is emotionally satisfying. In fact, the good feels will be an incentive to erase *infidels* from the **Love** tribe.

The Christo-feminists assimilating the modern Western church have already fashioned a *Christ-like* figure, but he's been thoroughly feminized and represents the ideals of a sympathetic female-correct experience in a Gynocentric framework. **He** “*forgives all sin*” without requiring insight, remorse, repentance or change. In *Red Pill* terms this *Fem-Christ* is the divine version of an *Emotional Tampon*. Jesus is put in the **Friend Zone**. He’s there when a gal needs Him to dry her tears after her night with the *Alpha* male lover and tells her “*then neither do I condemn you.*” Others may not judge you because **It** never judges you. He (*It*) “*speaks*” to them giving extra-Biblical “*guidance*” and comforts their innate need for security, but without the discomfort of accountability or rebuke. *Fem-Christ* becomes the great spiritual *life coach* in this age of emotionalism. In an era when men are presumed to bear 100% responsibility with 0% authority, this equation gets reversed for women – 100% authority with 0% responsibility, and this is reflected as canon in our new fem-religion. Today, the secular “*You go girl!*” social reinforcement that entitles women to that faultless (sinless) authority has made its way into *old order* religion via the *Kosher* dynamic. That absolution of responsibility is made much easier when *old order* patriarchal religion is reinterpreted to serve the Feminine Imperative. *Fem-*

*Christ* rebukes men for their shirking masculine responsibilities to women and their hesitancy to risk their futures in marriage, while ***It*** bestows the elusive *manhood* title that only elite men are deserving of. Even in Islam, arguably the last patriarchal holdout of *old order* religion, the onus of masculine responsibility and the ***Burden of Performance*** is used to qualify Muslim men's dedication to *Allah* in terms of his wife's (wives) approval.

## Happy wife, Happy God

As our globalizing world is defined by Gynocentrism we begin to see the priorities of families, tribes, religions and nations align rigidly with the Feminine Imperative. In a quasi-religious way *Emotionalism* takes priority above rational pragmatism. Any unflattering truth derived from critical thinking, any realization resulting in *bad feels* is suspect or “*sinful*” in this new religion. The innate communitarianism and egalitarian ideals that typifies women’s psyches becomes religious, social and government policy. Everywhere women are afforded social and political power we see their first allegiance is to the *Sisterhood*, not to the body public and not to the commonwealth. Only the emotionally relevant issues that affect the *Sisterhood* take precedent. When women come into the formerly *Male Space* of the capitalist business model women’s first priority is not *the bottom line* of profit and growth. Rather, the workplace becomes a *struggle* in fundamentally transforming that meritocratic model (based on male dominance hierarchies) into a more comfortable communitarian model that caters to women’s evolved needs for provisioning, protection and parental investment. From the time of the Sexual Revolution until the rise of social media (2010 and beyond) most female-initiated sociopolitical change has focused almost exclusively on the three ‘P’s of the *Beta Need* side of the Hypergamous equation – Protection, Provisioning and Parental Investment. Every initiative, every legislation, since this time that affects a Gynocentric social order can be traced to the obsessive, evolved need for women to ensure their long-term security as the *vulnerable sex*. Elective abortion, no-fault divorce, child support laws and social programs, female-primary economic dispensations, the *Duluth* model of feminism, Title IX, and many other feminine-centric social and political shifts all find their motive in prioritizing the female experience as the globally defining social paradigm.

For over a decade now the *Red Pill* has pointed out that women will never vote against their own disempowerment while actively disadvantaging the most basic of men’s imperatives. However, it is important to understand that women’s sociopolitical priorities are always motivated by the basic, evolved gender-specific need to optimize Hypergamy, and/or to create a

social order that functions to expressly facilitate optimizing women's mating (and ultimately life) strategy. Every social institution in a Gynocentric world, from the *UN Women's Council* to the *Body Positivity Movement*, down to trite jingoisms like "*Mansplaining*" are all rooted in an obsessive need to remake a chaotic, uncertain world more secure for the most *vulnerable* sex.

A feminine control over spirituality and religion is no exception to this compulsive need for security and advantaging of womankind. Indeed, remaking *god* into women's liking has been a primary goal of Gynocentrism for the past 60 years. I hesitate to call this priority a *goal*. A goal implies a centralization of authority. In fact it's more like the logical end-state of a social order that focuses solely on the female experience as the correct, socially preeminent experience. To that end, the *old order* religions must necessarily be reinterpreted and repurposed in a way that resonates with the female experience. To reimagine *god* as female, embodying the female experience, and establish a new religion of the *Goddess* too abruptly would have been met with a fierce resistance from the orthodoxy of old religions. In the 1970s a religion of militant Feminism, too much, too soon, would've been dismissed as a silly *New Age* mythos – a cult of disaffected lesbian feminists (like *Wicca*) doing live action roleplaying (LARPing) of shamanistic rituals they believe are *powerful* expressions of the *divine feminine*. Entrenched moralism and traditionalist *old order* thinking would've defused female empowerment as a moral force, so Gynocentrism had to play the long game with the religions it had to work with. While Eastern religions were by nature more accommodating to female-primary egalitarianism (*Buddhism* and *Krishnaism*), the patriarchal *Abrahamic* faiths would require a long-term program of assimilation and restructuring of doctrine. Fortunately that assimilation was made easier by women's socioeconomic *Fempowerment*.

Long term in this case is a bit over 50 years so far, which is remarkably short-term considering how long these religions have been practiced. While the social, economic and political fabric of globalizing society was being remade in women's image, so too was *old order* religion being assimilated. The ideal of *romantic love* was elevated to a moral force because it provided women with the thumbscrews they needed to exercise power-by-proxy through men in those religions. Some religions were (are) easier to

assimilate because the *romantic ideal* was already baked into them centuries prior. The menfolk's masculine duty defaulted to servitude, sacrifice and forgiveness as articles of faith. It was an easy step to condition generations of *believing* men to accept the *old order* doctrines of masculine responsibility and sacrifice while simultaneously removing any claim to the authority (*God-given* or otherwise) that made exercising that responsibility possible. Idealized egalitarianism slowly supplanted patriarchal male *headship* in families as marriage became an *unconscionable contract* for men. Meanwhile, the stigma of single-motherhood became a badge of honor for three generations of women. Secular sensibilities shift to feminist ideologies and religion responds in kind by making ***Fempowerment*** narratives religiously *Kosher* as a means of being “*relevant*” to the growing control of wealth (later earning) by women. And the increasingly impotent male *leaders* in these churches cannot argue with the numbers. Prosperity and growth of a church, even in the Hustle Economy, is always a clear sign of *God's* pleasure. Thus, abdicating authority to women and catering to contemporary female sensibilities *must* be *God's* plan. It just made good business sense to make those sensibilities *Kosher*.

Whether through side channels like *Women's Ministry* speaking, or directly promoting women to church leadership, men abdicated more and more authority to women in their respective religions by inch or by mile. The religious mechanism that made individual men 100% responsible with 0% authority could now be applied to religions on whole. The perception of *old order* religion being a misogynistic Patriarchal means of maintaining male oppressive power over *historically victimized* women is still a valuable tool for Gynocentrism in this new order. That clichéd perception of *evil patriarchy* only legitimizes the push for men's abdication of authority, while emphasizing their duty to responsibility for women, family and church. The message became a constant droning of “*Men must do better!*” As a result, generations of men either abandoned religion to women, or they become one of the dwindling numbers of men in churches still locked in an endless tail-chasing of trying to live up to the restitution expectations of women for the *sins of their fathers*.

All of this has been slow, but steady, going for Gynocentrism in the global age. Yet with the rise of the internet, the new access to communication and information, and the worldwide dissemination of

Western Gynocentrism, this process of assimilating religion has exploded exponentially. This *New Age of Enlightenment*, for better or worse, has been just the vehicle Gynocentrism needed to ramp this process up to its full potential. In several essays and on several podcasts I've outlined the new realities of a *Global Sexual Marketplace*. Since 2005 men and women almost exclusively meet and vet one another for intimate approval online. Just 20 years ago the most common way for couples to meet was at school, through friends and family, or at church. Today, even the most religious people *find* each other via dating apps, online matchmaking or at the very least use social media (*Instagram*) to decide whether that person is someone hot enough, or lives an interesting life enough, for them to want to get to know them. With access to (literally) an entire world of potential *soulmates* the old *Local Sexual Marketplaces* where couples used to meet are now a quaint nicety of pre-internet generations or societies that haven't caught up to the new order yet. In a Gynocentric social order where women's mating strategy, and mate selection priority, has now become the defining normative experience, the intersexual mandates of *old order* religions are superseded by the now-*Kosher* sensibilities of women raised on social media. These female-correct sensibilities are now, or soon will be, driving the discourse according to women's interests in *old order* religions assimilated (or being assimilated) by the Feminine Imperative. As for the remaining orthodox holdouts; those faiths will eventually be subsumed in one or two more generations as their children and grandchildren partake of the latest information *apple* that's fallen from the *tree of knowledge*. Arguments over the *one true faith* or *God's universal truths* are only as potent as the generations that acknowledge them. *Core faiths* have been altered by this same process countless times throughout history. ***The Truth*** is superseded by ***our subjective personal truths*** in the religion of *Emotionalism*.

## Who Cares About Religion Anyway?

According to 2018 and 2019 *Pew Research* surveys, just 65% of American adults described themselves as *Christians*, down 12 percent from the decade prior. The religiously *unaffiliated* share of the population – those describing a religious identity as atheist, agnostic or “nothing in particular” – was 26%, up from 17% in 2009. Both Protestants and Catholics have taken hits to their faiths. 43% of US adults responded as identifying with a Protestant denomination, down from 51% in 2009. Just 20% are Catholic, down from 23% in 2009. In the same time, ‘religiously unaffiliated’ populations have seen their numbers swell. Self-described atheists account for 4% of US Adults, agnostics make up 5% of US adults and 17% of Americans now describe their religion as “*nothing in particular*,” up 12% from 2009. Members of non-Christian religions also have grown somewhat as a share of the adult population, but overall religious interest and participation in religion has been on a steady downturn since the early 90s. According to the *General Social Survey (1973-2018)* the religiously unaffiliated (also known as “*nones*”) accounted for 6% of US adults in 1991. By 2010 the unaffiliated had tripled to 18%, and by 2018 *nones* accounted for 23% of adults in the US. To explain this most analysts point to the sociopolitical changes that occurred between 1989 and 1992 (fall of communism). While their points are valid, the spike in divorces and precipitous decline in marriage rates between the 70s and the 90s also illustrate a shift in gender norms during this period. State-by-state the adoption of no-fault divorce laws were so widespread it spawned new industries in its wake – industries that have been streamlined in the new order. And just as divorce rates leveled off, the decline in marriage rates that began in the 1980s became more significant. All of these dramatic social shifts began and developed immediately after the advent of unilaterally female-controlled hormonal contraception (the *Pill*) and the Sexual Revolution that followed.

Stable families make for stable religions. Despite all protest of the *orthodox*, it is family and family creation that molds religious identity for people – thus, making *Red Pill* awareness intimately connected with religion in the new order. Needless to say, the gender power shift that occurred in a

post-Sexual Revolution world has produced some very unstable families. As mentioned in the *Marriage* chapter, divorce is *always* on the table in marriage today. In fact, divorce is glamorized and incentivized for women; but divorced individuals, single parents, children of divorce or single-parent households are all more likely to detach from religion over time. And when 42% of children are (electively) born out of wedlock it's hardly surprising to see how this affects *old order* religions. In the age of the *New Enlightenment* we can also combine this 20<sup>th</sup> century detachment with 21<sup>st</sup> century online isolationism. Thus, we get the *Lost Boys* generation who eagerly snapped up the *spiritual-but-not-religious*, 'Christian-ish' aphorisms of *Dr. Jordan Peterson* in 2017. It's not that the desire for religion, or spirituality, or metaphorical truth has diminished from the human psyche – it's that today's *Lost Boys* are just as rudderless spiritually as they are in life in general. Enter *Dr. Peterson's* Christian *Kosher* humanism.



## The Gospel of Saint Peterson

Along with blogger/writer *Vox Day*, I was one of the first men in the ‘sphere to draw a critical eye to what *Dr. Peterson* was preaching during his ascent to e-celebrity. This was more a practical *Red Pill* assessment on my part, but his adherents didn’t take kindly to our criticism. Amongst the more religious ones I was basically accused of being a killjoy.

*“Jordan’s work is inspiring men to go back to church, and young men to man up and clean up their act, how can that be a bad thing?”*

In and of itself it’s not a bad thing, but what I found more interesting was the desire amongst the *Lost Boys* generation to have a *Father Figure* give them permission to go back to church – or consider going for the first time. In my generation the youthful spirit of rebellion was directed against the “*establishment*”. That establishment took the form of a staid, controlling religious conservatism and the social formalities of doing things the “right” way. It’s why *Punk Rock* and *Heavy Metal* were so popular then, but the same regimen, structure and direction that conservatism promoted (and we rebelled against) is exactly what today’s *Lost Boys* crave to fulfill their lacking sense of purpose. Today, men are shamed or demonized for any organized effort to understand conventional masculinity. That’s by design. Questioning female nature or any effort to find a better sense of masculine purpose in a globalizing culture that characterizes men as ridiculous, abusive or incompetent is *misogynistic*. Men gathering together to find purpose is the greatest threat to the preeminence of Gynocentrism. Confused, angry and self-loathing men perpetuate that power base. But for all of *Jordan Peterson’s* revival of spiritual interests, he’s never been all that specific about the *metaphysical* aspects of our human need for *spirituality*. Credit to *Peterson*, the good doctor is always on point about the practicality of belief as it relates to the human condition, but to my knowledge he’s never admitted to a belief in the supernatural – the physical resurrection of Christ for instance. The *spiritual* revival is always couched in secular humanism or the practicality of *magical thinking* in *Jungian* archetypes —

and both are based in *old order* thinking. In fact, at every opportunity *Peterson* venerates *Carl Jung* as a kind of unsung messianic guide for humanity. Whether he acknowledges *Jung's* esoteric or occult interests is anyone's guess.

However, the *Peterson* gospel is still the same message approved by a forming, syncretic, interfaith religion — albeit in a wrapper that makes it appealing to purposeless *Lost Boys* — it doesn't matter *what* you believe, it's *that* you believe.

This secularism is the practical dissection of human beings' need for belief, and ostensibly using it for human betterment. It's not actual metaphysics; it's a tacit acknowledgment of *metaphorical truth* with a wink and a nod to its practices and rituals (make your bed every morning) that most people in the *New Enlightenment* simply have no time for. The mundane becomes profound. The unspoken assumption is that *belief* is an integral aspect of an evolved human psyche that, if left unnourished, will lead to nihilism, despondency and *meaninglessness*. Belief becomes integral to a hopefulness that contributes to human health, more than actual metaphysics. Belief contributes to seeking contentment in an operative state of perpetual discontent.

This is why people have a tough time reconciling the raw empiricism of *Red Pill* praxeology — and, to a large degree, the way *Evolutionary Psychology* complements it — with a learned sense of moral (or ethical) justice they believe *should* be essential to human interactions. Human beings have an inborn capacity for revulsion to ideas that reveal realistic, unavoidable nihilism existing in the fundamental nature of the world.

We seem to have some feral-level psychological refusal of what we think would be a hopeless situation. The Japanese have a concept for this called “*Ikigai*”; loosely translated it is “*a reason for being*”. The term refers to having a “meaningful direction or purpose in life, constituting the sense of one's life being made worthwhile, with actions taken towards achieving one's *Ikigai* resulting in satisfaction and a sense of meaning to life.” It wouldn't surprise me if in the future we find that humans (and possibly other higher order animals) have an evolved neural ‘firmware’ directly linked to this rejection of the hopeless situation. Obviously a neural wiring that promotes *Ikigai* would be a very valuable evolutionary survival asset

for a species. A *Never Say Die* psychological failsafe in our firmware would promote a more durable species.

Paradoxically, just the suggestion of an evolved, biological root for rejecting nihilism confirms the validity of that hopeless condition. In other words, the same evo-psych root that grants us a capacity to desire justice or provides with us a sense of morality (however defined) is the same root that forces us to obstinately reject the reality of our situations. The psyche that rejects empirically valid concepts like Alpha - Beta, Hypergamy, the Sexual Marketplace, or a plethora of other difficult *Red Pill* ideas is the same psyche that wants to reject the hopelessness they may or may not represent. Bear this in mind when you come across a new concept in *Red Pill* awareness or Game. The reality we find ourselves in can seem cruel when you approach it from a binary, right or wrong, absolutist standpoint. It may satisfy a need to feel self-righteous, but it's never a good starting point for real understanding that may benefit you later. This is what detractors of *evo-psych* struggle with; factoring in a human element into environmental and biological determinants.

Hopelessness isn't conducive to individual health, much less a functioning society. In our new order the hopeful, pro-belief, message becomes a secular version of *Pascal's Wager*: it's healthier for humans to believe in *something* than constantly dealing with the nihilistic stress of believing in *nothing* at all. Secularism is necessary in a globalized social order, but it's a necessity that excludes *old order* beliefs because the old, localized beliefs (in God, tribe, ideology) are too limiting. So belief in the importance of *belief* becomes the de facto religion until future generations decide what version of *spiritual-but-not-religious* should be approved. From an emotional perspective this makes rational sense; *spirituality* is fundamentally an emotional experience for human beings (which points to why women are more religious than men). We interpret religion, spirituality, moral dilemmas and *magical thinking* through the *Emotional* interpretive process. We'd rather *play* the game than have it explained to us that we are *playing* a game. We enjoy being active participants in an infinite game in which we feign ignorance of participating in. The best games are the ones that are so immersive we lose our *selves* in them.

## A Want to Believe

Observing a process changes that process. That's the *observer effect* in a nutshell. It ruins the *magic* for us when new order data explains the process and function of how human's biology predisposes us to feel *Love* or jealousy, or awe. It removes the divinity of emotion. It reduces emotion to squirts of hormones and endorphins that alter our moods. It's like leisurely enjoying the ride in *It's a Small World* at *Disneyland* then having the boat abruptly stop, the music dies, the lights come on and the overhead speakers direct passengers to proceed to the nearest exit. You see all the machinery behind the cute animatronic children that had been so entertaining just minutes before. It's a real *buzz kill* even if you knew going in that it was a pleasant momentary fiction. This rude awakening is kind of where we're at with respect to belief as a globalizing society today. There is an indelible instinct in human beings to look for magic, spirituality or awe-inspiring experiences in life. It's why men have so readily applied mysticism to women and made them objects of worship over the course of history. It's why women are suckers for *Chick Crack*. It's why so many people in and outside the online *personal development sphere* have been trying to legitimize psychotropic drugs (*Ayahuasca*) as some quasi-religious or mind expanding means to insight or *enlightenment*. Take mushrooms and convert to Christianity. Nothing is shocking anymore. Nothing fills us with a sense of awe anymore.

Our frontiers to explore are exhausted, so we look for virtual or chemical means to feel the exhilaration of sensual experiences that evolution wired into us so we could survive and reproduce. In such circumstances a feminine-centric religion of *Emotionalism* is really the *only* logical outcome of this human need for *magical thinking*. It could scarcely be anything else; there's certainly no appetite for the same rationalism, objectivism and critical thinking that's led to the death of so much *metaphorical truth*. Our entertainment today is rife with new order simulations of the sensual experiences that made us feel alive in our ancestral past. We can experience the simulated thrill of life-or-death combat from the comfort of our couch with a video game console. We can even pretend at the camaraderie of

soldiers with our virtual *friends*. We can wantonly experience virtual sexuality with unlimited variety, all free of the personal investment or personal risks sex necessitated of us in our evolutionary past. We can form worldwide virtual *tribes* with people who share our ideological views and collectively rage over the indignation of other *tribes* who oppose *Us*. We watch scary movies to stimulate the fear of the beast lurking in the dark ready to devour us; and now we can safely keep (non-venomous) snakes and tarantulas as pets.

Yes, I know, some people seek out, or are forced into, the real *thrills* of a lived experience; but today we're only covering old trails already blazed by our predecessors. It's not that the experience of *rustic living* or revisiting the old ways doesn't still have its appeal, it's that its charm has become another novelty of experience; one escape amongst an endless search for escapes that stimulate the senses our *old order* thinking used to rely on for survival. It's a meme that asks, "*Would you live in this rustic cabin in a remote forest isolated from the internet / civilization for 1 month for \$10,000?*" and every one of your virtual friends replies with how they'd do it for free. There's an escapist appeal in romanticizing an idyllic return to a simpler way of life.

More recently this interest in *Shamanism* and *earthy humanism* in our popular fiction, and experimenting with *world-spirituality*, is a testament to this return to *Primalism* as a novel religious experience. There's an *old order* appeal to the earliest, most simplistic, of spiritualities that seems new or more legitimate to a social order jaded by *Big Box* religions. It starts with the tribal *spiritual-but-not-religious* return to elementalism that tribal humans came up with — earth spirits, storm spirits, sun and sky spirits, which, of course, align with climate change concerns and a "*return*" to a harmonious, idealistic, egalitarian communalism that never existed. Under Gynocentrism that primal spirituality invariably includes the divinity of the *Earth Mother* archetype. It locks in with the covert power of the feminine mystique. The *force of nature*, the *Witch*, the *Seeress*, the wise *Oracle Matriarch* awaiting to guide souls in the afterlife, the magic female whose evolved physical vulnerability is offset by mystical superpowers. All these tropes find their ways into the legitimization of the new order's religion via popular culture. There's just something about *native* spirituality that seems universally relatable to our need for *magical thinking*.

This then locks in nicely with today's generational religion of *Emotionalism*; with adherents looking for new global *church*. As men ceded authority over family and reproduction to women (for the dubious promise of sex without a *Burden of Performance*) in the social realm, so too did they waive authority in directing spirituality for the social order. Any attempt to reestablish that masculine spiritual authority is met with epithets of *misogyny*, *ridicule*, *sexual harassment* or *Patriarchal oppression*. The patriarchal *Abrahamic* faiths are either an anachronism of male tyranny or they are a necessary institution women must assume leadership of in order to wean a generation of believers off of the masculine defined religion they still find solace in. This process of this Gynocentric assimilation of religion began right alongside the transfer of social and political power to women following the Sexual Revolution. In this age we see the culmination of this effort play out on our new order media, across all *old order* institutions, and we take for granted the human significance of how rapidly it's happening. The monopoly of *truth* that *old order* orthodoxy presumes it still has makes them blind to the threat this poses to the sovereignty of their beliefs. It's the fatalistic side of the *Orthodox Paradox*: God's truth stands whether or not anyone on earth still recognizes it much less a church, synagogue or mosque exists. But when the last soul on earth to acknowledge that *truth* from within the human experiential context dies, does it still endure?

Human's innate (survival adaptation?) predilection for *magical thinking* leads us to an indelible truth: In the absence of *metaphorical truth*, God, or the tribally defining aspects of religious/spiritual regimens, people will devise and organize ways to experience *magical thinking* according to limitations of their circumstances. God is never dead so long as *hope* is an inborn survival adaptation in human being's mental firmware. But that *god* can take many, often convenient, forms per the necessity of people's circumstances. This is what we see today in a globalizing uni-culture founded on Westernizing secularism. Society abhors a vacuum, and the new order *Emotionalism* of the past 50+ years is presently filling that spiritual vacuum. A supposedly post-religion new order society still grasps for the emotional high of *magical thinking*, but there's nothing spiritually novel to explore. For the past 20 years our storytelling has become fearful and antiseptic. No writer dare challenge the new orthodoxy of secular emotionalism by writing a new story based on old archetypes for fear of

offending the sensibilities of the wrong people. It's much safer to retell classic, long-beloved stories with secular emotionalist narratives forced into them and hope that new order special effects will carry the story to profitability. These retellings fail miserably because they corrupt the *metaphorical* human truths that the old stories illustrated so well.

There is a parallel to this failing in today's efforts to force-fit secular emotionalism into *old order* religions. These faiths are the classic and beloved stories that speak to human experience. For better or worse, they are representative of the way human beings *are*, and hopeful of what could be, according to that *need to believe*. The Gynocentric/Secularist assimilation of *old order* faiths is similarly reshaped to hold an emotionalism that ruins the *truth* these faiths were founded on. Assimilated religions just become lousy remakes of classic movies. Both are contrivances. They are vehicles for an *Emotionalist* message no one would care about if its purveyors had to create some new story to spread their narrative.

But religious *instinct* persists, even in the disenchantment of the new order. Contemporary social and political movements pretend at the aspects of *old order* religious beliefs and rituals. Human tribalism defines these *movements* as it ever has, but now salvation is offered in dedication and self-sacrifice to the *values* of that (subjective) tribal ideology. Religion used to have a monopoly on salvation, but in this *spiritual-but-not-religious* age ideological emotionalism has assumed ownership of that reward. You're now a *Good Human* and an accepted member of the *World Tribe* if you adopt the prevailing tenets of Gynocentric emotionalism as your core values. Tear down the statues of the *old order*, burn its books, destroy its art and rid the world of its systemic *evil* and you'll be rewarded with social *salvation*. Plus, you'll *feel* good doing it too. Being on the *right side of history* is as good a reward as immortality in the religion of *Emotionalism*. Take a knee in obeisance (not reverence?). Chant the mantras along with the mob. "*Protests*" become *ritual congregations* and resistance speeches become holy liturgies. Carry your placards emblazoned with the easily digestible jingoisms (sacred imagery) of *Emotionalism* in the *procession* down main street, and honor the martyrs who died at the hands of the unenlightened infidels of the *old order* still clinging to their wavering power.

In December of 2013, at Christmas mass, feminist activist *Josephine Witt* stormed the altar of the Catholic cathedral in Cologne, Germany to

*“protest women exclusion from the church.”* Across Witt’s bared breasts was written ***“I am God.”***

February 2019, *Christian Progressive* feminist and Lutheran Pastor, *Nadia Bolz-Weber* unveils a statuette of melted down *Purity Rings* molded to resemble a woman’s vulva to protest *Evangelical purity culture*. At the unveiling ceremony she presented the sculpture to 70s-era feminist icon *Gloria Steinem* as a token of respect and gratitude. *Bolz-Weber*, who’s made a case for *ethically sourced pornography*, prides herself on the tattooed, butch-lesbian look, wearing sleeveless vestments and a reverend’s collar in her numerous *relevant* Christian interviews. She is just one of the more visible numbers of growing ordained female pastors “reforming” their respective religions to become more appealing to a Gynocentric social order. Sexuality, abortion rights and doctrine-*Kosher* communitarianism are the primary focus of this new wave of feminine-primary religion.

October 2017, Reverend *Shannon Johnson Kershner*, leader of the second largest Presbyterian church (5,500 members) expresses that, *“Jesus is not the only way to heaven”* in a Chicago Sun-Times podcast:

*“God's not a Christian. I mean, we are ... For me, the Christian tradition is the way to understand God and my relationship with the world and other humans and it's for the way for me to move into that relationship but I'm not about to say what God can and cannot do in other ways and with other spiritual experiences,...”*

*Kershner* went on to declare her desire to “reform” the church *“from the inside out”*

*“...we should get “beyond this idol of maleness that we’ve constructed both for the divine as well as for clergy.”*

Asked why she thought God should be considered female she states,

*“I wanted to make sure that little girls knew that God could call them to be pastors, too.”*



These are a few recent examples of the doctrinal shifts taking place in the feminine assimilation of *old order* Christianity. There are many more examples of these shifts in other religions. Set aside your *No True Scotsman Christian* dismissals of these women (and countless others) for a moment and see the underlying effort here. This is where the *Orthodox Paradox* tends to blind *believers*. Rather than falling back on ego-invested sovereign belief, look at the progression of how *old order* religion is assimilated by the Feminine Imperative. In *The Goddess Movement* I asked, what does a religion by women, for women would look like? In the coming new order era we will be faced with a global syncretic religion, by women, for the express interests of a social order defined by the female experience. That new religion will grow from the Gynocentric bastardization of *old order* religions. To get to this globalized uni-religion there needs to be a transitioning process that makes this and previous generations comfortable in the switch-over. It's always been a law of power to preach change, but never to move too fast or too radically in that transformation. It's the frog slowly boiling in the pot metaphor.

The end result will undoubtedly be a “*religion*” premised on the innate communitarianism of women. Egalitarian, inclusive, *tolerant*, at least temporarily *Interfaith* (i.e., the *Beyoncé Worship Service*) and eminently socialist, but more than anything the religion of the new order will resonate with an emotionalism that's been generationally installed in our global consciousness. By comparison, *old order* religions of today have become little more than *lifestyle brands* amongst hundreds of others sold online in the *Hustle Economy*. These commercial franchises play a losing game of sports-team tribalism, but with an increasingly *Kosher* feminized undercurrent of secular equalism in their belief-sets. And equalism is a new game *old order* religions are forced to play. At some point the pretense of *old order* strictures of doctrine become obstacles to the commercial viability of these faiths in a globalizing world-tribe that values *Love* and *Equality* free from *Judgement* and accountability. *Forgiveness* still plays prominently for women on their *Journey of Self-Discovery*, just as *old order* masculine ideals of responsibility to the Feminine Imperative are still useful. Defanged of any actionable authority, men either set their masculine identities according to a ‘*manhood*’ that's confused and withheld from them, or they simply abandon *faith* altogether. Either way, directly or

indirectly, men are forced into the secular-religious doctrines of Gynocentrism.

Romantic love and the *romantic ideal* are the basis of this new word religion. *Love* becomes both the measurement of virtue of intent (*Love Wins*) and a covertly powerful means of triumphing over *Patriarchy*. In an age of emotionalism *Love* as an ideal literally becomes *God*. God is not love, *Love* is God. And like the Pharisees and Clergy of old, women now become the conduit through which the *Love-God's* intent is interpreted. The *Holy Spirit* is replaced by the Feminine Imperative. The *Male Space* of religion is assimilated and appropriated just like every other *Male Space* has been over the past 60 years. The new world religion is set in the image of a bastardized, romanticized, *Chivalry*: men must serve the Feminine Imperative via Blue Pill conditioning to prioritize emotions before reason. *Feels before Reals* becomes an article of faith in the new religion. The inherent *correctness* of the female experience, and men's endless striving to live it approvingly ("Tell me I'm a good man?"), becomes the new orthodoxy. Religion has always filled in the blanks for the evolved nature of male disposability, utility, altruism and sacrifice. A feminine-primary, syncretic religion will be no different.

## The Sisterhood of Suffering

Nothing unifies a people quite like a shared sense of suffering, repression or victimhood. Even more so when a tribal identity is founded on long-held precepts of persecution. A sense of collective identity endures long after the actual injustices have been redressed in subsequent generations, but collective suffering undeniably provides a source of solidarity that legitimizes means and ends once a marginalized people assume real power. Of course, the real trick is for a tribe to covertly exercise power while still presenting all outward appearances of being marginalized. Real or imagined, when you can make your “*struggle*” a multigenerational effort that, “*despite recent advancements*” is never fully realized, you develop an enduring source of power. A people’s historic *oppressors* become their multigenerational apologists and enablers. In the interests of “*doing the right thing*” retribution and restitution become part of the oppressor’s tribal identity in a desire to set the record straight, while ensuring the *victims*’ covert power remains constant.

Suffering unites tribes. Jews, Christians, Muslims, ethnic minorities, regional affiliations, hell, even football and baseball fans; victimhood, persecution and the struggle for “equality” or “freedom” is an archetypal theme for human beings. A constant, shared fight for relevancy against *injustice* (tyranny) is endemic of tribal solidarity and cohesion. I’m sure my observation of this victim’s power dynamic sounds ominous and ethnocentric. And while there are definitely ethnographic parallels, my focus isn’t on race, but rather intersexual dynamics. The tribe of woman, *team woman*, the Sisterhood Über Alles is a much broader illustration of this generational suffering power dynamic. Only in this case we are observing one sex of an entire species, worldwide, rather than relatively localized tribes of both sexes. The Feminine Imperative has effectively used women’s innate vulnerability as its quasi-religious, moralistic source of power.

**Feminism has never been about *equality***; it has only ever been about retribution and restitution for a curated perception of multigenerational female indenturement, if not outright slavery at the hands of an entire world’s membership of the opposite sex. Like all oppressed people, the

cover-story for the *struggle* is always about striving for equality. Equality of respect becomes equality of opportunity, becomes equality of outcome, becomes disadvantaging perceived oppressors of equality — who fiendishly think of only themselves rather than the greater good of the presumed whole. True *equality* is a lie to a species which evolved in an unequal chaotic world; a species that is itself the result of the survival benefits it enjoyed from mastering that unequal world. We are the apex species on this planet *because* of inequality. *Empowerment* is the true goal of any tribe. This has been the true aim (even stated goal) of feminism since the *Seneca Falls Convention* in 1848. The greatest problem with female *suffering* vs. ideals of *equality* is that the future survival of our species depends on the complementarity of evolved gender roles.

The gestalt of the Feminine Imperative (for lack of a better term) understood that for Gynocentrism to achieve real power in a rapidly globalizing society the tribe of the *Sisterhood* had to find an efficient meta-scale solidarity amongst women the world over. That solidarity is based on the same victimhood narrative that united out-group women with the in-group women when patrilocal tribal men integrated their new *War Brides* into their own tribes. The *Sisterhood Über Alles* is a world-tribe of women and their male “*allies*”. Women, who evolved a predisposition to a communitarianism that united them in the vulnerable female experience of our ancestral past. In a state of global Gynocentrism, shared victimhood unites and provides a tribal identity for womankind. And as always, low value men learn to adapt their mating strategies to accommodate this female tribal identity in order to solve their reproductive problem. That adaptation includes adopting the religion of women.

The male experience and the *Evil Patriarchy* are at best an obstacle, at worst the common enemy of a Gynocentric consolidation of social and political power. However, men are still a needed commodity for female-centric religion. Just as men once held the authority to enforce their reproductive imperatives on women, now women unilaterally control human reproduction according to their own mating imperatives and insecurities — all in a social framework of their own communitarian religion of *Emotionalism*. The *Sisterhood* is the continuation of the suffrage narrative on a worldwide scale. By design, it is a quest for an equality that can never be realized — nor would womankind ever want it to be. To admit to even a

semblance of gender parity would require women to assume responsibility for the less-than-ideal conditions that the exercise of covert power creates. It is our evolved, natural state to presume men should be responsible for the conditions of women. In our lizard-brains we instinctively presume women *must* be provided for and protected by men (*male protector dynamic*). This instinctual presumption is the basis of covert power for women. Men are simultaneously responsible for the repression of women, and the satisfaction and advancement of women's interests, if they want to be considered *Real Men*. This masculine *Catch 22* is the kernel of power in a religion by women, for women.

Women's sexual oppression/repression by men has been womankind's tribal struggle with men for millennia. Prior to hormonal birth control giving women a unilateral influence on human reproduction, the religiously enshrined doctrines of mating strategy tradeoffs were a more or less a balanced compromise between the sexes. Forsaking all others, ensuring paternity, punishing cuckoldry/adultery, prohibiting premarital sex, mandating protection, provisioning and parental investment as masculine responsibilities while providing men with the authority to enforce those responsibilities; all of this and more were the basis of the mating strategy compromises of the intersexual social contract in the *old order*. In the new order women are, by choice or by necessity, required to ensure their own security via means of proscribed gender power. To achieve the former balance of mating strategy imperatives in a social order that only favors their sex, women must mandate men to cooperate and comply with the interests of women's mating strategy. There is simply no other way to achieve these interests in a condition where men have little or no incentives to do so. Through multigenerational social engineering (Blue Pill conditioning) and/or legislation men are held responsible for propping up the interests of Gynocentrism while being punished or demonized for expressing aspects of their masculine nature that doesn't align with those interests. Moralizing of these punishments for men used to be effective in the *old order*; today men simply abandon any responsibility to moral imperatives on their way out the door of a feminized church. There's no incentive to consider those imperatives from a moral basis that places women as the intermediary between themselves and *God*.

The *Sisterhood's* suffering narrative exists within other tribal forms of suffering. Today, this is why political, religious, national and ethnic identity of women is always superseded by a *Sisterhood* identity. Jewish women are always worse off than Jewish men. Black women are always worse off than Black men. As *Hillary Clinton* once intoned, “*Women are the primary victims of war.*” There is no social ill or tribal struggle that isn’t made worse by virtue of being female. Victimhood works for women because it plays well with the communitarianism innate to women’s psyches. No matter the tribal affiliation women are always on “*team woman*” — it is the *Sisterhood Über Alles*: womankind over all else. Their “*struggle*” is the most historically enduring narrative of humanity; stretching back to our hunter-gatherer beginnings. Men have *always* dominated women. Men’s reproductive imperatives have *always* superseded women’s. Until the advent of the *romantic ideal* women’s imperatives, prerogative, reproductive choices were mythologized and accepted by *Beta* men via the norms of socially enforced monogamy. If monogamy was to be the standard, then women would at least get to choose their *Beta / Alpha* by following their emotional states.

The religion of women is predicated on the solidarity of suffering. All tribal suffering is unifying of a people’s identity, but women’s suffering is based on sex. Women’s liberation is a huge part of the attraction to the *Goddess Movement*. Furthermore, women’s innate collectivism makes that solidarity more significant. It makes it self-perpetuating across millennia of female generations. All women suffer in a “*man’s world*” and patriarchal religion is their favored target of injustice.

You can’t escape the reality of the times now. You can’t pray away female nature or feminism, nor gynocentrism, or the new order dating scene that is happening right here right now that has become globalized. We live in a very dangerous age for men. Living in the *Matrix* of a Blue Pill conditioned perspective of intersexual dynamics is even more of a liability today than it was in times past, because we live in an era that encourages men going all-in in their life’s investment in that conditioning. What we’re experiencing in the globalizing social environment of today is a sea change in intersexual dynamics. The underlying fundamentals haven’t changed; our evolved natures and the latent purposes that are driven by them haven’t shifted. But the social dynamics and sexual acculturation that serve as

checks and balances on them has drastically shifted, and in a very short time. While you could make an argument for an idealized *free love* era that took place right after the Sexual Revolution, now we find ourselves in a time that is so calculating in its design on intersexual and social dynamics that it makes the Hippies of the late 60s seem romantically naive.

One persistent debate I read in the *Manosphere* is the contention that human society, achievement, stability, etc., is the result of post-agrarian monogamy. Usually this debate crops up between the more traditionalist faction of the sphere and the more brutally pragmatic of *Red Pill* aware men. I understand the premise from the traditional perspective; there is every evidence that the conventional family structure has been the lynchpin of social progress. I agree with this assessment, but from an evolutionary perspective human beings are not innately monogamous. Our conventional monogamy and family structure, and the resulting progress is really in spite of ourselves. The evidence is there in our genomic records — another *Apple* to fall in the *New Order* information age. Our cultural successes were due to controlling the feral aspects of both men and women's natural sexual strategies via social conventions, religion and personal conviction. The result of this control was an *old order* social contract based on monogamous pretenses. That said, there is no denying that monogamous societies make for the most stable societies — or at least they have up to this point in history. Monogamy reduces reproductive stress on Beta men — at least until recently — allowing them to focus on productivity rather than agonizing over the *reproductive problem*. One reason myths of *Soulmates* have been so prevalent in the past generations is their utility as a social reinforcement for monogamy. The social convention of idealistic love being a mutually accepted concept between the sexes is also a social reinforcement for monogamy. These conventions of the *One* hold men in a *romanticized ideal* state of monogamy. Even the worst Beta still had a hope to reproduce if the mythology was such that, “*There's someone for everyone.*”

Again, all of this idealization of monogamy is really in spite of ourselves. Left to our own means, and our unfettered sexual strategies, men will be ruthlessly polygynous and women will resort to ruthless Hypergamy. Which is where we are heading in the coming decades of the new order. Since the time of the Sexual Revolution we have seen a systematic degradation of this monogamous social order in favor of a female-primary

social order. This social order is predicated on women's complete control over the reproductive fate of society. Whereas before there were social checks and balances in conventional monogamy, these have been replaced with the unrestrained, unquestioned imperatives of women's sexual strategy – Hypergamy. In just 5 short decades men have ceded any claim to not only our own sexual strategy and interests, but to any right to know paternity. Along with that, men have abdicated any claim to moral authority that might compromise a Gynocentric stranglehold on religion.

*“There is no such thing as moral phenomena, but only a moral interpretation of phenomena.”*

*— Friedrich Nietzsche*

A lot of well-meaning *Red Pill* aware men long for the *old order*, the old books, the noble aspects of men to have a reinvigorated worth today. As we make *Red Pill* awareness applicable in a broader perspective in men's lives we get to an impasse over what a ‘*legitimate*’ use of that new-but-old knowledge *ought* to be. It's important that we not allow ourselves to fall into the trap of delineating what is appropriate use of the *Red Pill* advantage we have. This isn't an endorsement for or against ethics in the *Red Pill*, but it is to emphasize that objectivity should come before any pretense of what may or may not be in or off limits in *Red Pill* awareness. On one end of the spectrum we get men who've accepted *Red Pill* awareness and the truths it presents as a guiding influence to varying degrees. It's a mistake to think the *Red Pill* moralists are always an ‘*Old Married Guy*’ who wants to justify his decision to ‘*do the right thing*’ (no matter how disastrous his personal outcome may be). There are an increasing number of younger idealists who believe the *Red Pill* aware man has a civic duty to use that awareness in an ethical way that promotes the reinstitution of *old order* ideals. That may be a noble cause, but ultimately it becomes a straitjacket for *Red Pill* objectivity in an age where *old order* ideals of masculine responsibility are easily exploited by Gynocentrism.

For the *Red Pill Moralist*, proper application of the *Red Pill* is to use that knowledge to vet women for marriage suitability and a prospective family according to *old order* thinking. With full knowledge of the inherent



downsides and liability risks of modern marriage, the moralist takes it as his masculine duty now for the future to still sign-on to the *unconscionable contract*. Needless to say this masculine social-sacrificial position seems more like men running back to the plantation of marriage for unresolved Blue Pill rationales, but in a post-*Red Pill* awareness the belief is that a strong, dominant *Red Pill* aware **Frame** control can make the difference to offset the overwhelming risks. The core notion is that reestablishing the conventional family is a man's moral duty, and warrants the almost certain prospect of a man's own detriment. The moralists have a tendency to disdain or moralize any other **application** (*Game*) of *Red Pill* awareness that would facilitate a self-serving or hedonistic purpose. Usually this comes after having lived their own lives hedonistically, but also because they were "*awakened while married*" or just after a traumatizing divorce. This mirrors a Trad-Con position of encouraging men to "**Man-Up**" and volunteer for their own fleecing and disdaining the trappings of anything that doesn't serve women's imperatives for their own lives – but again, this is couched as a kind of self-imposed noble duty of masculinity. What few *old order* moralists grasp is their own voluntary participation in the Gynocentric social order. Romanticized aspirations of *old order* virtuous masculine duty are readily exploited to serve the *Sisterhood*.

The flip-side of the moralist position might be the self-serving use of intersexual dynamics solely for individual pleasure or gain. This is characterized by the PUA, Game-is-all, guy whose only purpose ends with himself. To the moralist, this use of *Red Pill* awareness is furthering the destruction of an *old order* ideal that seems to be a solution to societal decay. If you *sit poolside while the world burns* or you're *enjoying the decline*, ultimately the world still burns and you'll find yourself at the bottom when the decline ends.

The last hurdle most men still refuse to get over is that they want women to meet them half way because, despite their *Red Pill* awareness, they still believe in a well-conditioned egalitarian equalist ideal. Even the most intelligent men still think that women use the same operating system that men do. They don't, and that's why these otherwise great men fail with regard to their approach to women. They believe women have the functional capacity to understand men's motives as if they were *any rational being's* motives, and agree and comply with them. They simply do not; but

unlearning the programming that women *should* have the capacity to reach some mutually acceptable bargain between men and women's sexual imperatives is something intelligent men can't seem to fathom.

## Where do we go from here?

On my blog and on my YouTube shows I'm asked, "Rollo, when do you think the pendulum will swing back towards Patriarchy or conventional masculinity?" The answer is simple: we will *never* go back to the way things were because there is no pendulum. There is no backswing. The only way is forward from here. An old joke I coined long ago is "Trad-Cons don't want the *Red Pill*, they want a time machine." It is a grave mistake to think that there will be some generational social incentive that inspires us to return to a romanticized *old order* gender balance. Something like a religious *revival* for a global social order that's gone astray, there's a hope that the righteousness of our investments in a true *faith* will eventually be recognized, even validated by a mass return to the *old order* religions.

As I mentioned in the introduction of this book, there's an archetypal theme in the parable of the *Prodigal Son* that is faith-affirming. The wayward son takes his *Father's* inheritance to live in hedonism – "*Hookers & Blow*" – until his self-serving lifestyle of pleasure and indulgence destroys him. Thus, he returns to his *Father's* home in shame and self-loathing, concluding that it's better to suck it up and live with the family pigs than be destitute in a world he should've known better than to think he could master. His *Father* sees him coming home and commands that the fatted calf is served up for a welcome-home party. The Prodigal Son returneth. He's learned the error of his ways and the *family* welcomes him home with a celebration. The parable of the Prodigal Son is faith-affirming because it teaches three lessons: 1. Men should never turn from the *true faith* if they want to live the best life. 2. The faith is never proven as *true* so much as when believers fall away and then return to it. 3. Necessity can always be turned into a virtue when faith accommodates necessity. When the son finally returns, all the usual moralist suck ups are ready to see him as the *Prodigal Son* archetype. ***See? We were right all along. Our faith is validated and confirmed!*** But all the same problems that brought him to question that faith are still right where he left them. Only now there's no one left to point out the inconsistencies. No one's left to identify the Blue Pill conditioning that's prompted so many men to leave the churches. No one's

left to call *bullshit!* Only the *grave robbers* are left; the same guys who've always been apologists for never understanding the Blue Pill or their compromised masculinity because their *faith* and existence depends on it.

Without God hedonism is not rebellion, it's just a con job.

There is a real want for some kind of revival of the *old order* in the same vein as the Prodigal Son. The idea is that sooner or later the whole world will see the error of their ways and return to the *family*. A cosmic miracle of *Karma* will balance the state of mankind and in so returning to the light our old faith will be affirmed – even if we never see the day it's fulfilled. There is a meta-social scale *hopefulness* in the Blank Slate. Combined with the *Kosher* secular emotionalism of today, the Blank Slate is akin to a religion for the globalizing masses. It's founded on a belief that for every action there must be an equal and opposite reaction. If men were the dominant force on the earth for so long, then women must also be dominant to balance the scales for a time, right? Then the “*pendulum*” must take a backswing and men will *Man Up!* assume their proper responsibility, and restore order to the galaxy. What's good for the goose is good for the gander, right?

***Wrong.***

This presumption is kind of ironic since most of the New Order religion of Gynocentrism relies almost wholesale on the cosmic-karmic *equality* proposition. It makes no difference who/what you pray/meditate to. It's really all the same and it all comes out in the wash. What else could we expect from an interfaith all-inclusive syncretic religion founded on the useful delusion of “*equality*” and a feminine-primary egalitarian utopia? Of course, the possibility exists that a meteor may smash into the earth or a global environmental disaster, or limited world war, might inspire a new dependence on the old ways, but even in the aftermath of catastrophe you won't see some lasting appreciation for the sacrifices men made to ensure our collective survival. Remember, to be a man *is* to sacrifice without complaint and without expectations of recognition. There's a popular meme circulating on social media now. It goes,...

***“Hard times create strong men, strong men create good times, good times create weak men, and weak men create hard times.”***

The “weak men” of this era are like no other generation that came before them. We mistakenly presume some karmic balance will bring us all back to the *good times* once the *hard times* toughen men up enough. Secularly, socially, technologically, spiritually, we’re in uncharted territory now. An inversion has taken place where the ability to maintain one’s composure under stress is taken as a sign of poor mental health. In this context, people with a healthy grasp of emotion seem to be the most neurotic, because they’re not *expressing* their emotions or processing them in the female-correct way. Sanity is pathologized, so pathology can be sanitized. In an age of religious emotionalism those who control their emotions are the ‘sinners’. Moving forward towards a healthier ideal requires a globalizing population to accept that *Emotionalism* is a tool of their own exploitation. Men are conditioned from the earliest ages to defer to the feminine experience as the globally defining experience. Eventually masculine authority over self, family, spirituality and tribe will have to be forcibly reinstated for men. By definition, true authority cannot be *given* back to men, they must take it, by force if necessary. However disturbing that sentiment might be for women acculturated in Gynocentrism, the evolved natures of men and women will always default to a preference for beneficent masculine dominance. You can take the man out of the tribe, but you cannot take the tribe out of the man.

Men and women are evolved complements to the other. We are better together than we are apart. We are more durable, more thriving, as complements and individuals when we accept this and work within the evolved (or designed) frameworks that made us men and women. Only by discarding the fallacies of the *old order* while embracing the lasting truths that are confirmed of it by the new order can we chart a path forward. We’re not going back. The Blank Slate is *old order* thinking that is crushed on a daily basis in the new information society; yet Gynocentrism and failed social constructionism have clung to the teat of the Blank Slate for so long its adherents scarcely understand the concept. **Men and women are different.** We are more different than we are alike; more different than *old*

*order* thinkers can ever admit or accept because in doing so *believers* in this *One-World Religion* would be confronted with empirical truths that shatter the foundation of their beliefs – and their hold on power. Destroying the comforting lies of the Blank Slate forces us to accept new order empiricism and create a more beneficial belief system within the framework of the Rational interpretive process.

This is the **real** unplugging from the Matrix. *Red Pill* awareness is a tearing-away from the *old order* conditioning and its edifices that comfort, but ultimately debilitate us. Intersexual dynamics is one aspect of this. It's the easiest for us to understand because our reproductive problem, our continued existences in the next generation, is dependent on us understanding it. But that disconnection from false or inaccurate information we used to build our identities, our religions and our societies upon doesn't mean we throw out all the good with the bad. We just need to take what the *old order* got right and sift it from what it deliberately or mistakenly got wrong and use it to develop a healthier, more accurate set of standards, values and beliefs. In some ways that may mean a return to conventional understandings of the nature of men and women that *old religion* got correct; in other ways it may mean accepting the empirical truth that the new order presents to us and adjusting our values and expectations of human nature accordingly. For both the New Order *Emotionalists* and the Old Order *Traditionalists* this *unplugging* and realignment in balancing the human need for belief with pragmatic empiricism may be a bridge too far. Both have too much invested in their respective beliefs, but rest assured that new *Apples* from the *Tree of Knowledge* will eventually force these *Believers* to disconnect from the *Matrix* either by force or by choice.



## AFTERWORD



## How to Understand God

*“My son, to win in combat you must let go of your conscious self.”*

The aspirant looked perplexed. He'd at last ascended the heights of the forbidden mountain to seek out the *Master of Martial Arts Wisdom*. He'd crossed dangerous rivers and fought wild men and beasts to come before the master.

*“But Master, why?”*

The master sat cross-legged before him.

*“Because motor memories are stored as implicit memory, no declarative memory. Trying to use your conscious brain for motor tasks is basically accessing the wrong database.”*

The aspirant's brow furrowed in confusion.

*“Can you rephrase that as Mystical Wisdom?”*

The master thought a moment.

*“Dwell within your inner... you know... in-ness.”*

*“Thank you, wise master.”*

That last bit was paraphrased from a little comic meme I retweeted a long time ago. I thought it was relevant humor because it outlines pretty much this entire book. *Old order* wisdom, *metaphorical* truth, empirically understood and objectively explained by new order data, but only learnable

and digestible as folklore, legend, *woo woo magical thinking* and *belief*. I'm certainly not above considering that the only way humans may be able to learn rational objective truths is via emotional *metaphorical* experiences. If we arrive at objective truth in the end, maybe I can understand the thrill of the *magic* it took to really wrap our heads around it.

Would you rather be *happy*, or would you rather be *right*?

Preferably both, right? Unfortunately, that balance is extremely rare. Happiness is almost universally an easier sell than truth. This is the origin of the “*Truthful Anger*” fallacy. Around 2015 the *instructors* working for *Real Social Dynamics* (RSD) started getting a lot of questions about the material in my book, *The Rational Male* from *students* attending their seminars. At some point they had no choice but to address topics in my books, but to do so would mean acknowledging the validity of the concepts – concepts that challenged the *positivity grift* they were rapidly converting over to during this time. Their solution then was to acknowledge the *truth* in my work, but tacitly disqualify it by fostering the idea that it came from a place of *anger*. They cautioned against internalizing it at the risk of becoming *angry* or *bitter* against women — both warnings commonly used in mainstream gynocentric language. It was misconstrued as “*truthful anger*”; poignantly true, but best not to dwell on it if a guy wants to be *happy*. In other words, it's better to be *happy* and relatively ignorant rather than be *right* and relatively educated (and potentially jaded). Ignorance is bliss, and truth is burdensome.

To be educated takes a constant effort. Most people in modern society simply do not have the time, inclination or motivation to be in any way knowledgeable about more than a peripheral understanding of the world around them. Until the *New Enlightenment* of this age, even the most disaffected by the truth were still more ignorant of the totality of their circumstances. They could still be *happier* than we are today. The ironic part is we live in an era when communication of information has never been more easily accessible to us. For the most part we can attribute this to laziness, but I'm of the opinion that **human beings cannot handle too much truth all at one time**. Human beings have an amazing capacity to

multi-task, but in our evolutionary past, a real trained focus on multiple sources of stimuli was problematic for us. Too much constant stimuli leads to sensory overload and a breakdown in functionality, which then proves fatal if we're distracted from reacting to a lethal threat. Thus, we evolved psychological mechanisms to push less (though still) important information to the peripheries of our conscious awareness to afford us a mental focus on information of most importance.

That's a layman's understanding of cognition. An entire world goes on around us that we are only peripherally aware of, and in some sense only *exists* in our peripheral consciousness. We push less pressing information and conditional awarenesses to the peripheries and concentrate on more pressing information until such time (if ever) that we choose to address those issues. Men and women prioritize what's *important* differently, but we use similar mechanics. Sometimes we call this insight, but it's really the focused effort of applying our consciousness to conditions, thoughts and self-acknowledgements that we have pushed to our peripheral awareness. Now, add to this that we're expected to be at least somewhat well-informed due to the access of information the new order affords us. Our ego-investments in politics, religion, social dynamics, gender relations etc., all depend on a belief that we're actually well-informed; at least enough to know what we're talking about and draw our own conclusions. We would *have* to be, right? It's expected of us as intelligent human beings. The truth is that unless we are immediately benefitted by educating ourselves about a subject (i.e. as short term a profit as easily manageable), for the vast majority of modern society today education is a hobby at best. We live in a fast-food, fast-information society. We can't be bothered to, or in some cases really afford to, develop comprehensive critical thinking skills; and particularly when they might challenge our *values* or ego-investments. This is why the *Matrix* exists, it's easier not to think about things that are counter to our social conditioning. We lack comprehensive truth, but we're happier for it.

However, we really want to be right. And to be right we have to believe that we have these critical thinking skills. In fact our personalities and wellbeing depend upon the correctness of our beliefs. This is an age of ego. Ego-investments are beliefs we associate with, and internalize, so strongly that they literally become elements of our personalities. So to challenge that

belief is to literally attack the personality of the person with that ego-investment. It would make no difference how empirical your evidence to the contrary of that belief might be. You attack the belief and you attack the *person*. Religion, racism, political affiliation, gender dynamics, social dynamics, world view, all find their roots in individual ego-investments in those beliefs. We don't build a belief set on the results of multiple peer-reviewed, independently funded meta-analyses of research papers – we create them based on emotion, lived experience and what extrinsic sources *feel* for us.

Needless to say, this has a polarizing effect on lazy people who'd rather not put effort into educating themselves in ways that might challenge their core ego-investments. Thus, we see factionalizing of people into various camps where those ego-investments are reinforced despite any contravening evidence. So our innate tribalism fires up. Our red team is better than your blue team irrespective of any factor that might be contrary to *our truth*. So long as my team wins and your team loses my ego-investments remain valid and I don't need to change anything about myself based on objective *truth* that would make me *unhappy*. It becomes a clash of whose ego-investments get validated. Any value the *others'* might have had are never acknowledged. And we certainly don't want any truth forced upon us that we don't come to on our own. *We* want to be right.

## Why I Believe in God

It's weird to even write this today, but this is the part you probably purchased this book to read, so I'll accommodate you. Explaining a belief in the metaphysical will always put the one explaining into a defensive posture. This is a mistake. Too many people make their case for God starting from a religious context. It always starts out from this complete image of God, all aligning with a lifetime of religious investments in that image. People who don't believe in the concept of *a* god, don't share that imagery. You have to start the consideration of the concept of god by first setting aside all pretense of *Abrahamic*, Eastern or *spiritual-but-not-religious* religiosity. Most *believers* are unable or unwilling to take this first step because of the ego-investments I just mentioned. The other aspect of this debate is that, with rare exception, when we make a case for or against the concept of God we pit the human *Emotional* process versus the *Rational* process. Emotion is immediate and (physically) satisfying, while the Rational requires time to learn and process, and can be uncomfortable – *Happiness* vs. being *Right*.

There's always an unspoken hostility implied when you make a metaphysical assertion in the presence of someone who doesn't share your *exact* beliefs or simply doesn't believe at all. You cannot prove a metaphysical argument with physical evidence in the same way can't you prove a physical argument with metaphysical "*evidence*". So generally, making a case for God is an effort in emotion or figurative theory – and it's been my experience that, with very rare exception, most people argue from emotion. Faith is something you *feel* not something you *know*. By definition, faith is a surety of something improbable, implausible or even impossible according to measurable, physical, realities of this *reason*-based world. If you *know* something is probable, plausible or possible you exit the realm of *emotion*-based faith and enter the realm of *reason*-based surety (or relative surety). When you know *how* something is possible the surety of it ceases to be faith. The *magic* of uncertainty is gone, the emotional response is (at least) deadened and we replace *metaphorical truth* for empirical truth – with all the liabilities the truth attaches to it. It's very hard to write epic poems or tales of the *Hero's Journey* based in empirical truth. Humans pass on our

aggregate knowledge to subsequent generations via storytelling, and the best stories always have some element of emotionally satisfying *mystery* in them. Observing a process changes that process. Metaphorical truth (like the comic I paraphrased above) is far more emotionally satisfying than well-informed empirical truth. In some ways we learn valuable lessons better from part of that *magic* process. The *magical* thinking that is integral to the health of our psyches also facilitates learning which is integral to reason. Again, *Emotion* vs. *Reason*, but do they have to be at odds with the other, or can they be complements? When either is exploited and leveraged against the other, to the exception of the other, that's when real problems start for people, personally and socially. What's more important, *imagination* or *knowledge*? We cannot escape *Instinct*, *Emotion* and *Reason*. They are integral to our existence as humans, and it is far healthier to accept them, and operate within them than it is to struggle against them or exploit them in others.

As I explained in the *Orthodox Paradox*, if the way *you* understand God is *your* ultimate authority, well, who can really argue with that? It becomes *Empiricism* vs. *Belief*, you talk past one another, and you go home exasperated. You have to start the consideration from a neutral standpoint, and both atheists and believers can't even imagine meeting the other halfway because to do so is a repudiation of the correctness of their beliefs and the ideals that spring from them.

*Lord* knows, I've tried it from both sides of the debate. My father was a die-hard atheist and skeptic. I doubt he was ever aware of celebrity atheists like *Sam Harris* (we're the same age), but *Dawkins* and *Hitchens* were a given. I remember taking a comparative religions class in community college and having some interesting discussions with my old man. The concept of consciousness was always a tough one. "*If a tree falls in the woods and no one (or thing) is there to hear it, does it make a sound?*" I had this debate with my father once, and once was all I needed. Empiricist that he was, my dad figured that anyone thinking a falling tree *wouldn't* make a sound was a moron. I learned two lessons from this lengthy dead-end debate. First, an atheist can be just as emotionally invested in an empirical premise as any *believer* is in a *faith* premise. This is a spooky similarity, but hardly surprising when you consider they both come from the same human *machine*. Secondly, you cannot argue a belief in God from a religious

starting point. To most *Believers* this sounds just as insane as a *tree falling in the woods* debate did to my dad, but hear me out. Religion, spirituality, superstition, even just an openness to the possibility of the *metaphysical* is too subjective and personal to hold any water with the absolute *Empiricist*. To suggest an openness to anything beyond what is materially measurable kills the discussion.

I used to have well-meaning religious friends tell me they would pray for my father to accept Christ. As if the power of prayer would somehow create a cogent argument that would convince him (or any atheist) to realize that their ego-investments in rejecting the metaphysical were wrong and they'd have no other recourse but to accept it. I always appreciated the sentiment, but barring divine intervention, no amount of appealing to the *Almighty* was going to make my dad accept Christ, convert to Islam or start reading the Torah with any genuine *faith*. It's not that he didn't believe in their religion, he simply didn't believe in the possibility of a God. Period.

Most *Believers* are so invested in the validity of their belief that they can't really think in scaled-up terms when they are tasked with making a case for God. Almost universally they default to their Holy authority – you can't argue with God – as the basis of their correctness. They usually start off with a few zingers and appeals to what sounds reasonable, but once what they've exhausted what they thought would win a debate they resort to appeals of personal belief. I've seen well-meaning, intelligent, Christian scholars start with some good material only to run out of gas midway and leave the debate with assurances that they'd pray for the atheists they were debating at the end. *Stephen Woodford*, on his *YouTube* channel *Rationality Rules*, had a great term for this – ***Jesus Smuggling***. As I said, *Empiricists* can be just as emotional and fervent as *Believers*. The quickest way to work them into a lather is to start an honest debate about the possibility that God exists from an ostensibly objective start and then *smuggle* Jesus (or other prophet) into the dialogue. If you want a good laugh, watch how bent an atheist gets when he thinks he's *got* an ingenuous rational opponent on the logical ropes only to have him appeal to Biblical scripture in the end. It's cruelly entertaining. Almost like a supervillain teleporting out of his certain defeat to fight another day. Drat! Foiled again!

The point is, my dad didn't reject a particular religion, he simply didn't believe in *any* God. This is what got lost on my Christian friends praying for

him to accept the *Lord*; it's not that he didn't believe in Jesus or Mohammed or whoever, he just didn't believe in the possibility that a God could exist at all. You just don't get to a defining spiritual belief without the basis of believing in the possibility that a God could exist. This fundamental belief is so intrinsic to *believers'* concept of reality that they blow right by it when they defend their beliefs. You can't get an atheist to come to religion without at least moving them to agnosticism first. *Believers* just can't fathom this, so they resort to emotional appeals. Not because rationalism wouldn't help, but they'd simply never think to opt for it. *Magic* should work better than rationalism.

Back in the mid 80s I was riding with my dad in the car and thumbing through my copy of *Deities and Demigods*, a game supplement for the ever-popular *Dungeons & Dragons*® roleplaying game. I stopped at the *Cthulhu Mythos* (from *H.P. Lovecraft*) and my 15 year old imagination took over. “*Can you imagine worshiping that?*” I foolishly asked my father, pointing to some multi-limbed, tentacled monster-god. My dad glanced over and said, “*I can't imagine **worshiping** anything.*” I didn't realize it then, but this casual exchange taught me a profound lesson – *worship* is an act of abasement of the ego. Worship is the physical confirmation of *emotion-based* faith in the *metaphysical*. When we think of *worship* we conjure images of singing, raising hands, speaking in tongues, chanting, kneeling (the human equivalent of a dog revealing its belly in submission to an Alpha), weeping, etc. In truth worship can take many forms, but the concept is simple: worship is a physical confirmation of the emotional superseding the rational, in spite of the rational, because of a faith in the metaphysical.

Dad could never drop his ego; at least not for something metaphysical. Like most atheists, his ego was firmly invested in the *Rational* process. I should say that it's just this investment that makes the emotionalism of worship seem like insanity in *believers*. *Believers* are just as ego-invested in the *Emotional* process as Empiricists are in the *Rational* process. I've heard hundreds of *believers* say we all **worship** something. What exactly that is may vary, but there's usually something a person will put his ego on pause for, permanently or temporarily, to indulge his/her *emotionalism*, sensualism or some escapism we use in order to *not deal with too much reality*. Virtually all *believers* **love** this concept; we all must **worship something**. If that something isn't *God* then it's something we've made our god. Drugs,



porn, alcohol, video games, even a guy's favorite *OnlyFans* cam girl, are all easy targets because they're immediately obvious and physical in nature. If your source of *idolatry* is something as identifiable as a substance addiction you're actually fortunate. Kick the addiction and you can *get right with God*. That's easy compared to making something as ephemeral as *pride* or psychological *damage* your *God*. When you mix psychoanalysis with magical thinking, and sprinkle in *idolatry*, that, my friend, is a potent mind-job. The pretense that we *all must worship something* is a logical fallacy. It presumes the point. However, our escapisms, our obsessions, our Blue Pill conditioned ideals and ego-investments can certainly assume metaphysical importance when we conflate *belief* with our very physical human mechanics and circumstances. Dad would never dream of prostrating himself before any "god", but he would definitely make sacrifices and appeasements for his *beliefs*. And our *values* – our set of best-practices – are all derived from *belief*.

Honestly, I don't think I need to defend my spiritual beliefs, nor do I have any problem reconciling them with what I advocate in my books or on my blog, but at the risk of *Jesus Smuggling* accusations, let me begin by stating I am a Christian; but not in the sense that I subscribe to the popular definition of most Protestant/Evangelical denominations. I am a *Christ-Follower* and my belief is rooted in both the *faith* and *concept* of a physical and metaphysical God. I know that sounds *Kosher* and *Relevant* in today's *Christianese* jingoism, however, following the words, sentiments and metaphysical direction of Jesus is the best way I can describe it. I believe in the divinity and physical resurrection of Jesus who is the *Christ*, as per the *Abrahamic* telling.

Firstly, and more importantly, I *believe* that **a God**, in fact, exists and that communicating with **a God** is possible. For a god to be *God* to be an omniscient *being/force/will* it would necessarily have to be possible. God would have to be, and exceed, the human potential and experience to be God. I believe that humans are a creation of that God, and I also accept that **evolution** is the mechanism used to achieve the ends of God's creative endeavors in the physical. In the new order, humans have learned to tailor genetics to our liking (for better or worse); why is it beyond the pale to *believe* that a *being/force/will* greater than ourselves might also have that capability — or, in fact, be the *author/designer* of the very complex coding

used as a medium for creation? I won't bore you with lame attempts at creationism or *intelligent design* arguments. I've listened to enough "*a watch implies a watchmaker*" debates between atheist and Christian apologists getting brutalized for their lack of understanding *William Paley* to know the flawed premises. I'm also quite aware of the *Blind Watchmaker* premise proposed by *Richard Dawkins* so spare me those long email responses about that too. Honestly, my *faith* in God is rooted in the mechanics of creation more than the *whodunit* questions about creation. As more *Apples* from the *Tree of Knowledge* reveal the *hows* of creation, and the more mankind masters these *hows*, the more I'm confident we'll see a *God's* signature in every arena of our existences. In the arena of creation, the *Medium* literally is *Message*. As we move further into this *New Enlightenment* we are increasingly deconstructing and mastering the fundamentals of creation. As we do, we worry about new issues of the ethics implied in exercising our *will* over evolution and directing *our* creation that will fundamentally alter the "*nature*" of every living thing on the planet, sentient or otherwise. We call this "playing God" without a hint of agnostic irony. If it's within mankind's capacity to *play god*, why is it such a stretch to think a *God* (that exists outside our physical limitations to experience it) might also *play* God?

I accept that to be human is to be imperfect. In fact I *believe* that discontent, imperfection and '*sin*' are all necessary operative states that define us as humans. In my book, imperfection is a good thing. Discontent *is* the human state – without it we stagnate. We vacillate and vegetate. We become obsolete, androgynous and complacent; this is not life's way for all living things. The less adaptable an organism is to chaotic environmental changes makes it extinct. Life is ***not* always about varying states of suffering**, but it is always about discontent and adaptation to it. We can deal with discontent creatively or destructively. It can be a great source of strength or self-destruction, but discontent is life's operative state. The greatest *sins* I can imagine all begin with sedating ourselves (or others) with the illusion of contentment. The rot of all principle begins with a single compromise – and that compromise comes from a misguided belief that contentment is desirable or sustainable. Discontent is a net benefit to all living things.

Now then, let's get to this part:

***Why wouldn't an omniscient God make Its presence known to all humanity in a big fiery message across the sky?***

That would spoil all the fun now wouldn't it? Would you be *content* if that happened? You could very easily *Google* the cheat codes to your favorite video game, play on *God Mode* and win every time, but would the game be at all interesting? You could be like *Cypher* and try to plug yourself back into the *Matrix*, but you know how the game works now. You're aware, and that ruins the experience. Observing a process changes it – and the process, in this case, **is** existence. If human beings were made just to be automatons and had no choice but to act in pre-coded ways, would the emotional state of *love* they expressed for their creator be valid? There has to be doubt for there to be faith. We live in a physical world that has rules, the rock I stand on has to be solid enough to support my weight, as well as crush me if it rolls down a hill on top of me.

## The Operative State

*“What senses do we lack that we cannot see or hear another world all around us?” — Dune, Frank Herbert*

My personal belief is that God exists in an *Aristotleean* sense, in that anything that can exist in the physical must first begin as a concept, an idea. And that in order for that idea to come into being a *will* or *consciousness* must be present to conceive it and/or consider it in the physical. Full disclosure: questions of *consciousness* fascinate me. The recent debates about consciousness (sentience) and its importance to understanding the integrity of physical (existential) phenomenon is beyond the scope of this book, but aspects of it are actually how I came to a belief in a *God* a long time ago. For a chair to exist physically, I must first exist before the universal idea of a chair can be conceived and realized. Now blow this up to a cosmic scale and God makes a bit more sense. All of that, of course, relies on existentialism, but even the abstract idea of existentialism still needs a will to conceive it and a consciousness to experience it.

Now, before you throw this book away for *sophistry* allow me a caveat here. Recall in the beginning of this book how I mentioned that every understanding humans have about the nature of God, the universe and everything is entirely dependent upon our experience of physical existence on planet earth. My bonehead terminology for this is our *Operative State*; human critters are limited in the scope of our understanding the *metaphysical* (beyond the physical) in the context of how we operate in and interpret the physical world. Oxygen, gravity, heat, cold, day, night, pleasure, pain, instinct, emotion, reason, etc., in fact, every physical dynamic humans experience and interpret through our five physical senses – which are the evolutionary machinery adapted to sense and interpret the physical – are particular to the conditions present and necessary to support life and *consciousness* on **this** planet.

For sake of example, let's suppose that earth-like conditions existed on Mars, enough so to support human-like life. In all likelihood humans will

visit Mars in the near future, but living on Mars would be a much different existential experience for lifeforms that evolved their understanding of reality, and developed their *ideas*, according to the *Operative State* of planet Earth. Mars is just half the diameter of Earth, so our Martians would have half the sandbox in which to play in. Mars is also less dense than Earth; about 15% of Earth's volume and 11% of *our* planet's mass. That means Mars has about 40% of Earth's gravity. This alone would make for some very different looking humans, but how would this affect the evolution of our senses? A solar day on Mars is slightly longer than an Earth day: 24 hours, 39 minutes. A Martian year is equal to 1.8 Earth years. Mars also has "seasons", but they're twice as long as seasons on Earth because the orbital period is longer. How would these differences alter the sentient consciousnesses of beings on this planet? How would they mark time? What stories would they tell themselves because of it? Mars also has two moons, *Phobos* and *Deimos* (fear and dread), but they'd have Martian names since it's unlikely Greek-specific mythology would have began on Mars. In fact "*Mars*" would have an entirely different name. I'm just changing a few aspects of existence according to the *Operative State* of Mars in a context that animals that evolved on Earth can understand. Sentient, conscious, intelligent creatures that evolved on Mars would experience reality and the physical in radically different ways because their *Operative State* would direct their existence in ways humans could never conceive because we lack the context and evolved faculties to experience it.

Intelligence, imagination, ingenuity, and the capacity to aggregate it and pass it on (genetically and culturally) to subsequent generations have made us the apex species on this planet – remember, human babies have *Big Heads*. Evolutionarily speaking, humans aren't the most durable of critters. We have our physical strengths to be sure, but sustainable aggregate intelligence makes us a truly powerful species. For sentient, conscious, self-aware lifeforms we are *fearfully and wonderfully made*. If there is a limitation to our perceptions, a hindrance to our ability to experience a physical form of energy, if we can **conceive the possibility** of experiencing it we can eventually figure out some way to do so. We definitely have a gift for thinking in abstracts, but it's the *conception* part of that equation that throws people off of the possibility of the *metaphysical* – the beyond the physical. If you were to travel back in time to the late 1700s and attempt to

explain the infrared light spectrum to a resident of that time they'd think you were insane. The people of that era had little to no concept of things we took for granted in the 20<sup>th</sup> century because they lacked the faculties and inventions to perceive things *beyond the physical*. The chemical element Helium was accidentally discovered in 1868 by a French astronomer, *Jules Janssen*, who happened to be studying the chromosphere of the Sun during a total eclipse in India that year. At the time it was believed that Helium only existed on the Sun or was part of the chemical makeup of our star. It wouldn't be until 1881 that Helium – a colorless, odorless, tasteless, non-toxic, monatomic, inert gas – would finally be *sensed* and measured by mankind. Now the layperson can enjoy Helium filled balloons at a birthday party and make their voices sound like cartoon characters by inhaling an element no one had any clue existed prior to 1868.

The idea is this, our capacity to imagine what is possible is limited or enhanced by our *Operative State*. If I blow a dog whistle to train my greyhounds I don't hear anything, but my dogs do. A dog's nose has 300 million olfactory receptors (humans have about 6 million). The part of a dog's brain that is devoted to analyzing smells is about 40 times greater than ours. Dogs also have something called *neophilia*, which means they are attracted to new and interesting odors. Dogs evolved a sense of smell exponentially more sensitive than even the most advanced man-made instruments – powerful enough to detect substances at concentrations of one part per trillion. I think it's fair to say that dogs experience this world through their noses. However, dogs did not evolve color vision to the extent humans did. While dogs don't see in greyscale (black & white) they have dichromatic vision. They only possess two types of rods and cones in their eyes, yellows and blues to be specific. Humans have more cones, allowing us to see more colors and see them brighter than dogs. A dog's *Operative State* is primarily experienced through his nose. I imagine if dogs had a canine language it would include words and distinctive concepts for smells no human would ever conceive. They exist in a physical world that is metaphysical to us. Sure, we share a lot of the same physical world, but our *Operative States*, our perceptual existences, begin in very different experiences.

So, what sense do we lack that we cannot experience another world all around us? Our senses evolved to detect energy forms and stimuli that were necessary to our survival and convert them into impulses our brains could interpret as information, sort it out and use effectively. Light, sound, smell, taste, touch are all the machines we use to build our *Operative State* of living as conscious lifeforms in the environment that is Earth. But what other **physical** energies exist that we simply lack the faculties to imagine? How many more Heliums exist that we can't theoretically conceive of because we haven't had that *Apple* drop from the tree yet? We can come to concepts theoretically and then prove them empirically. We do this **all the time**, but are we not then supposing something is *metaphysical* (beyond the physical) and then dragging that concept into the *physical*?

What we used to reserve for the realm of *belief* we now take for granted as a part of our daily lives. Even prophecy goes from being *magical* in nature to being matter of fact. The early *Believers* who read parts of *Revelations* in the Bible could scarcely imagine how these future events could ever take place. But any sufficiently advanced technology seems like *magic* to those whose *Operative States* doesn't allow them to have any concept of it. Those early *believers* took it on *faith* that sooner or later their *metaphorical* truth would become an *empirical* truth.

And here we are.

A species whose evolved *Operative State* relies on hope, belief and *magical thinking* for its sustained mental health and imagination that boosts it to the next level of empiricism and knowledge that often defeats that *magic*. As *Rational* a male as I am, I'm not so arrogant as to deny that imagining the possibility of things beyond the physical might actually exist, or someday come to exist in the physical. Hell, they might even be commonplace someday. Whatever we do going forward in the *New Enlightenment*, our survival as a species is going to be determined by understanding and acknowledging our *Operative State* as humans *beings*. In some ways that means abandoning *old order* thinking in favor of new order empiricism that boosts us to the next level. In other ways it means holding to the timeless, useful truths, *metaphorical* and empirical, that ground us in

that *Operative State*. That means letting go of cumbersome *beliefs* while reexamining and reaffirming the ones that build us into something more – and in understanding that process we begin to understand God.

**There is a balance.**





## RESOURCES

## Heirs of a Blank Slate

**1** Schmitt, D.P. (2015). The evolution of culturally-variable sex differences. In *Weekes-Shackelford, V.A., & Shackelford, T.K. (Eds.), The evolution of sexuality* (pp. 221-256). New York: Springer.

Schwartz, S.H., & Rubel-Lifschitz, T. (2009). Cross-national variation in the size of sex differences in values: Effects of gender equality. *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology*, 97, 171-185.

**2** The Wall Street Journal®, “China Takes Steps Against Scientist Who Engineered Gene-Edited Babies.” Preetika Rana, January 21, 2019, <https://www.wsj.com/articles/chinese-scientist-accused-of-violating-laws-in-engineering-gene-editing-babies-11548073252>

**3** Interesting Engineering, “CRISPR Might Have Made China’s ‘Designer Babies’ Smarter.” John Loeffler, February 22, 2019, <https://interestingengineering.com/crispr-might-have-made-chinas-designer-babies-smarter>

**4** Eureka Alert! AAAS, “Do unmarried women face shortages of partners in the US marriage market?” Press Release, September 5, 2019, [https://www.eurekaalert.org/pub\\_releases/2019-09/w-duw090419.php](https://www.eurekaalert.org/pub_releases/2019-09/w-duw090419.php)

**5** National Vital Statistics Report, Volume 68, Number 13, *Births: Final Data for 2018*. Joyce A. Martin, M.P.H., Brady E. Hamilton, Ph.D., Michelle J.K. Osterman, M.H.S., and Anne K. Driscoll, Ph.D., *Division of Vital Statistics*. [https://www.cdc.gov/nchs/data/nvsr/nvsr68/nvsr68\\_13-508.pdf](https://www.cdc.gov/nchs/data/nvsr/nvsr68/nvsr68_13-508.pdf)

**6** The Washington Post® “The share of Americans not having sex has reached and all-time high – Young men driving the decline in sex.” Christopher Ingraham, March 29, 2019, <https://www.washingtonpost.com/business/2019/03/29/share-americans-not-having-sex-has-reached-record-high/>

## **Crisis Masculinity**

**1** The Guardian®, Neuroscience, “Male and female brains wired differently, scans reveal.” Ian Sample, December 2, 2013, <https://www.theguardian.com/science/2013/dec/02/men-women-brains-wired-differently>.

**2** Neurology®, “The Autism ‘Epidemic’, Ethical, legal, and social issues in a developmental spectrum disorder.” William D. Graf, Geoffrey Miller, Leon G. Epstein, Isabelle Rapin, April 4, 2017, <https://n.neurology.org/content/88/14/1371>

## **The Romantic Ideal**

1 *The Origin and Meaning of Courtly Love, A Critical Study of European Scholarship.* Roger Boase, 1977©

2 *The Allegory of Love: A Study In Medieval Tradition* (Canto Classics). C.S. Lewis, paperback – November 18, 2013©

## **The Kosher Principle**

**1** Star-K, “What is Kosher? Kosher in Depth.” 2017, <https://www.star-k.org/articles/articles/getting-certified/what-kosher/1358/kosher-in-depth/>

**2** Stryper on The Wally George Show, 1984, *YouTube*®, <https://youtu.be/c7kAHMVNduM>

**3** Barna, “Books Americans are Reading”, Research Releases in Culture and Media, June 13, 2013, <https://www.barna.com/research/the-books-americans-are-reading>

## Gods Like Men

**1** Metaphorical Truth Bomb - A New Way to Understand Religion, *Rationality Rules, YouTube®*, Stephen Woodfords, Bret Weinstein, March 30, 2020, <https://youtu.be/hdoTsOk-QQw>

**2** Pew Research Center, Religion and Public Life. “The Gender Gap in Religion Around the World – Women are generally more religious than men, particularly among Christians.” Demographic study, March 22, 2016, <https://www.pewforum.org/2016/03/22/the-gender-gap-in-religion-around-the-world/>

**3** BBC News®, “Women becoming nuns hits 25-year high”, April 23, 2015. <https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-32417296>

## The Goddess Movement

**1** PNAS, “Sex differences in the structural connectome of the human brain.” Research article. Madhura Ingahalikar, Alex Smith, Drew Parker, Theodore D. Satterthwaite, Mark A. Elliott, Kosha Ruparel, Hakon Hakonarson, Raquel E. Gur, Ruben C. Gur, and Ragini Verma. January 14, 2014, <https://www.pnas.org/content/111/2/823.abstract>

**2** Dalrock, “Lightyears closer to God”, *Dalrock*, March 8, 2013, <https://dalrock.wordpress.com/2013/03/08/light-years-closer-to-god/>

**3** Pulpit & Pen, “Episcopalians Begin to Remove Masculine Pronouns for God”, Featured Article, July 6, 2018, <https://pulpitandpen.org/2018/07/06/episcopalians-begin-to-remove-masculine-pronouns-for-god/>

**4** San Francisco Chronicle®, “Grace Cathedral Beyoncé Mass draws faithful crowd of 900”, Tony Bravo, April 25, 2018, <https://www.sfchronicle.com/news/article/Grace-Cathedral-s-Beyonce-Mass-draws-faithful-12865544.php>

**5** The Times UK®, “Proof at last: men and women are born to be different”, Tom Whipple, March 25, 2019, <https://www.thetimes.co.uk/edition/news/proof-at-last-women-and-men-are-born-to-be-different-33k2lvtn5>

**6** *When God was a Woman*, Merlin Stone, Knopf Doubleday Publishing Group, May 9, 2012©.

**7** Lifesite News, “Franciscan group defends image of Virgin Mary with Pachamama: We show Jesus next to a donkey.” Martin M. Barillas, December 24, 2019, <https://www.lifesitenews.com/news/franciscan-group-defends-image-of-virgin-mary-with-pachamama-we-show-jesus-next-to-a-donkey>

**8** Pew Research Center, Religion and Public Life. “Views about abortion”, Religious Landscape Study, 2019, <https://www.pewforum.org/religious-landscape-study/views-about-abortion/>



## Marriage

**1** UN Women, “Progress of the world’s women 2019-2020, Families in a changing world”, Digital Library, March 2019, <https://www.unwomen.org/en/digital-library/progress-of-the-worlds-women>

**2** United States Congress, Joint Economic Committee, “US Marriage Rates Hit New Recorded Lows”, *National Center for Health Statistics*, April 29, 2020, <https://www.jec.senate.gov/public/index.cfm/republicans/2020/4/marriage-rate-blog-test>

Pew Research Center, Social and Demographic Trends, “Barely Half of U.S. Adults Are Married – A Record Low.” D’ Vera Cohn, Jefferey S. Passel, Wendy Wang, Gretchen Livingston, December 14, 2011, <https://www.pewsocialtrends.org/2011/12/14/barely-half-of-u-s-adults-are-married-a-record-low/>

**3** Morgan Stanley®, “Rise of the SHEconomy”, Research, September 23, 2019, <https://www.morganstanley.com/ideas/womens-impact-on-the-economy>

**4** BBC® Worklife, “Why promoted women are more likely to divorce”, Maddy Savage, January 22, 2020, <https://www.bbc.com/worklife/article/20200121-why-promoted-women-are-more-likely-to-divorce>

**5** Stevenson, B., & Wolfers, J. (2006). “Bargaining in the Shadow of the Law: Divorce Laws and Family Distress.” *The Quarterly Journal of Economics*, 121 (1), 267-288. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1093/qje/121.1.267>

## Sex

- 1** “Why Is Muscularity Sexy? Tests of the Fitness Indicator Hypothesis”, David A. Frederick and Martie G. Haselton, University of California, Los Angeles. August 1, 2007, <https://journals.sagepub.com/doi/abs/10.1177/0146167207303022>
- 2** The Economist®, “The link between polygamy and war - Plural marriage, bred of inequality, begets violence” Cairo, Lahore and Wau, December 19, 2017, <https://www.economist.com/christmas-specials/2017/12/19/the-link-between-polygamy-and-war>
- 3** *Promiscuity: An Evolutionary History of Sperm Competition*, Tim Birkhead, Harvard University Press February 15, 2002©
- 4** Pacific Standard, “8,000 years ago 17 women reproduced for every 1 man”, Francie Dies, June 14, 2017, <https://psmag.com/environment/17-to-1-reproductive-success>
- 5** PHYS-ORG, “Human eggs prefer some men's sperm over others, research shows” Stockholm University, June 9, 2020, <https://phys.org/news/2020-06-human-eggs-men-sperm.html>
- 6** Conquer Series, “Why 68% of Christian Men Watch Porn” Jeremy, 2014, <https://conquerseries.com/why-68-percent-of-christian-men-watch-porn/>
- 7** Discover Magazine®, “1 in 200 Men are Direct Descendants of Genghis Khan” Gene Expression, Razib Khan, August 5, 2010, <https://www.discovermagazine.com/the-sciences/1-in-200-men-direct-descendants-of-genghis-khan>
- 8** Scientific American® “Women as Sex Objects”, Christie Nicholson, February 17, 2009, <https://www.scientificamerican.com/podcast/episode/women-as-sex-objects-09-02-17/>
- 9** The Atlantic®, “Fewer Sex Partners Means a Happier Marriage” Olga Khazan, October 22, 2018, <https://www.theatlantic.com/health/archive/2018/10/sexual-partners-and-marital-happiness/573493/>

## **Love is God**

- 1** “Why Is Muscularity Sexy? Tests of the Fitness Indicator Hypothesis”, David A. Frederick and Martie G. Haselton, University of California, Los Angeles. August 1, 2007, <https://journals.sagepub.com/doi/abs/10.1177/0146167207303022>
- 2** The Economist®, “The link between polygamy and war - Plural marriage, bred of inequality, begets violence” Cairo, Lahore and Wau, December 19, 2017, <https://www.economist.com/christmas-specials/2017/12/19/the-link-between-polygamy-and-war>



## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

**Dalrock:** Without your dedication to your work this book would not have been possible. It's really that simple. The value your essays and observations have had in this sphere over the years is so great I doubt those who come after us will ever fully appreciate them. So I acknowledge them now. Your blog and the community it spawned was the golden era of debate for the Red Pill and Religion. I value our friendship more than you know.

**Rule Zero:** Richard Cooper, Rian Stone, Troy Francis, Carl and Jon MLD, thank you for having my back when there were a lot of knives hanging out of it. It's an honor to call you brothers and friends. Your support and collaboration kept me going during some pretty grim events that occurred while writing this book. Thank you for building something better with me.

**Craig (AbuAmerican) and Rabbi Kaba:** Ask a Jew, ask a Muslim. You guys were an invaluable wealth of knowledge during this endeavor. Thank you for your input and feedback on your respective religions over the years, it really helped to solidify the core concepts in this book.

**Pat Campbell:** Thank you for sharing your wisdom and giving me the opportunity to interact with people I would never have had the opportunity to meet otherwise. It was because of you I kept going with this project when I thought I'd run out of gas. You are truly a *great soul* and I'm honored to be your friend. I'm glad we did what we did, I'm better for it.

**Sam Botta:** Thank you for all the support, insight and dedication you've put into this work and all my endeavors. You have been the voice of The Rational Male and the best *evangelist* I could hope to have. I am the Messenger.

**Carolyn May Miller** (September 2, 1939 - December 3, 2020): During the 3 years writing and compiling of this book I supported my mother as best I could both at her home and in assisted living. 'Momma Tomassi' passed

away just weeks before this book was to publish. Due to the Covid-19 pandemic I spent most of 2020 talking to her from behind a screen, sitting outside her window. I was prevented from being with her in her last days. She was a constant source of love and support for me throughout my life. In her own silly ways she made me think about things differently. She taught me things without actually *teaching* them. I love you mom.

And to all my dedicated readers, listeners and viewers, thank you! Most of all it's been you guys who've been helping me with the constant support, ideas, insight and debate. The emails, the Twitter banter, the news stories, YouTube comments and *The Rational Male* commentariat, it's your input and constant influence that makes any of this possible.

Now do me a solid and pass this book along to someone who needs it. All of my books are meant to be shared and discussed. The only way to test the strength of an idea is in the crucible of open debate. That requires interaction on your part. Share this with a friend.



## ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Sometimes called the *Godfather of the Red Pill*, **Rollo Tomassi** has been a permanent fixture in the online men's consortium of the *Manosphere* for almost 20 years.

He is the author of the internationally best selling book series, *The Rational Male*. Rollo is also the essayist/blogger/owner of The Rational Male blog, ([therationalmale.com](http://therationalmale.com)) a weekly panelist/host of the *Rule Zero* livestream and the host of his own YouTube channel, *The Rational Male*.

Rollo lives with his wife of 25 years in Reno, Nevada, along with two (or more) greyhounds.







**ALSO BY ROLLO TOMASSI**

The Rational Male

The Rational Male – Preventive Medicine

The Rational Male – Positive Masculinity